

誅仙

第一集



Chapter 151 - Hypertoxic

Qing Yun Hill, TongTian Peak.

The tea fragrance curled upwards, continuously from the spotlessly white tea cup with greenish black tip and green cover, the tea which had just been steeped was steaming with traces of white steam, dispersing into the room.

This was the one of the secluded room in the rear rooms of the Crystal Hall, the current day most powerful and prestigious three masters, were gathered in this room, calmly sipping tea and discussing.

The Qing Yun disciples who had served the tea, had quietly retreated, leaving only Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong Master and Yun YiLan the three of them.

Reverend DaoXuan was the first to speak, smiled and said, "This tea is a specialty from a place near Qing Yun Hill, although it is nothing rare but it is also considered an fragrant quality produce, both has tried it, what do you all think?"

Yun YiLan put down his cup, nodded and said, "The fragrance remains in the throat, like flowing ceaselessly from the mouth into the stomach, it is indeed a good tea."

Reverend DaoXuan laughed and said, "If Yun senior brother likes it, in the future after this evil beast calamity is over, just bring some of it back to FenXiang Valley."

Yun YiLan smiled, nodded and said, "That will be the best, Reverend, you can't go back on your words when the time comes."

The two of them smiled at each other, PuHong Master instead chanted beside them, Reverend DaoXuan looked over at him and said, "What is it Master?"

PuHong Master sighed and said, "Actually I also know that when facing such calamity, we have to maintain a calm state of mind so that we can deal with it with composure. However the Buddha is compassionate, once I think of the common people right now are in such dire straits, I cannot help but feel anxious, I have forget myself, both please do not mind."

Yun YiLan's face slightly changed, a glint also flashed past Reverend DaoXuan's eyes but his face too turned solemn soon after.

Looking at PuHong Master, Reverend DaoXuan slowly said, "Master is right, since we claim ourselves to be the Good Faction, naturally we should take up the responsibility of the common people, excuse me for my impropriety."

PuHong Master placed his palms together and shook his head, quietly said, "You're too kind Reverend, I did not mean to blame Reverend just now."

Yun YiLan's face expression by now had returned to normal, smiled and said, "Alright, alright, look at both of your genteel behaviour, isn't it more unbearable, we better not say anymore superfluous words, quickly get to the main topic."

Reverend DaoXuan and PuHong Master laughed, Reverend DaoXuan nodded and said, "Yun senior brother is right. In fact I invited both here today for

discussion, is for this evil beast calamity, there seems to be strange changes."

Yun YiLan and PuHong Master were surprised, Yun YiLan said, "What changes, Reverend please say?"

Reverend DaoXuan looking solemn, said, "A few days ago I sent Xiao YiCai, Lin JingYu and other capable disciples to investigate on the evil beasts situation, in the end they only just came back yesterday night but reported a very unusual thing."

Master PuHong saw Reverend DaoXuan's solemn face with some puzzlement, could not help but ask, "What happened?"

Reverend DaoXuan paused and said, "According to YiCai, those demon beasts that came from the south and attack Central Plains, has always headed straight here, massacring along the way. But recently for some reasons, suddenly a large number of beasts stopped and started to head southwest, and the number of beasts that continue to move to our north direction, seems like there are only forty percent of the original numbers."

Yun YiLan pondered a moment, said, "The southwest direction, isn't there where the Evil Sect has always been running wild?"

Reverend DaoXuan nodded and said, "That's right, now that the Evil sect is separated into three factions, Wan Du Clan, Ghost King sect and HeHuan Sect fighting interminably, even though we do not know where their headquarters are but from the clues, the three headquarters are all at southwest, therefore that is where the evil sect's power has always concentrated in. And this time the evil beasts suddenly headed towards that direction in a large group, I wonder what had exactly happened?"

PuHong Master frowned, said, "Could it be that the demon beasts and the evil sect already have some conflicts and has some losses, therefore they are heading there in forces to give support?"

Reverend DaoXuan, his expression heavy, said, "It is not clear at the moment but if it is so, it would be the best, both the demon beasts and the evil sect are scourge, if they fight with each other, it is to the benefit of the common people."

Yun YiLan suddenly shook his head, said, "Both sect heads, I think it is not as simple as it seemed."

Reverend DaoXuan glanced at him and said, "Oh, Yun valley master please enlighten."

Yun YiLan said, "You and I are well aware that the people of evil sect have been selfish, to say that they are fighting with the demon beast for the sake of the common people, I think this is impossible..."

Seeing both Reverend DaoXuan and PuHong Master also nodding slightly, Yun YiLan smiled, then said, "On the contrary, from my understanding of the evil sect, now that they know the mighty force of the demon beast, not to mention being their foe, even if the demon beasts inadvertently hurt them, I'm afraid they would rather bear it quietly and retreat, better to let us the Good Faction handle these savage demon beasts."

Reverend DaoXuan nodded and said, "Yes, Yun valley master is right but a large number of demon beasts did head to southwest, in Yun valley master's opinion, why is this so?"

Yun YiLan was silent for a moment, in a deep voice said, "From the past

behaviours of the demon beasts heading into the Central Plains, they do not have any specific objectives and have only been killing along the road, all the way north. So this time they changed direction suddenly, there must be something odd, it must be one of the demon beast near southwest suffered some big disadvantage and that evildoer called Beast Deity mobilize a large number of beasts to the southwest. But in the southwest, other than Central Plains Evil sect, there are no other powerful figure, therefore I guessed, most probably within the Evil sect, some unusual change has happened?"

PuHong Master's white brows frowned, said, "Unusual change, what does valley master means?"

Yun YiLan [he he] laughed, said, "This, is not something I can know."

PuHong Master smiled, shook his head, "After speaking for half a day, Yun patron, aren't you speaking in vain?"

All of a sudden, all three of them laughed but after a moment, Reverend DaoXuan after contemplating, said, "Actually it seems to me that not all Yun senior brother says doesn't matter, no matter what, now that a large number of demon beasts headed to the southwest, the pressure before us has also reduced much, at least we can save some time. Now that the world is looking towards us with hope, we have to take some action to let the world see."

Yun YiLan glanced at Reverend DaoXuan, said, "Oh, is it that Reverend want us to take advantage of the weakened demon beasts force and give a good fight?"

Reverend DaoXuan with a grim expression said, "Yes, one less demon, the world will have less of a misery, such responsibility is naturally our Good Faction."

PuHong Master quietly chanted, a mocking expression quietly flashed past Yun YiLan's eyes and then turned awe-inspiring, said, "Reverend is extremely right and so we will follow Reverend's arrangement, my FenXiang Valley is willing to be the vanguard."

Reverend DaoXuan smiled and said, "With Yun valley master this sincerity, why should we worry the demon beasts being unbeaten! However over at the southwest, I have pondered for a long long time, I feel there is something mysterious about this, although we can not rashly intervene but if we ignore it, it seems inappropriate."

PuHong Master nodded, said, "Yes, I am thinking the same thing, after all the demon beasts calamity has plunged the world into misery, what had exactly happened in the southwest, we should at least know what's going on."

Yun YiLan said, "Since so, why don't we send some higher skilled disciples, secretly follow over to get some information."

Reverend DaoXuan nodded his head and said, "Alright, let's decide it that way then."

At this moment, Yun YiLan seemed to recall something, suddenly said to Reverend DaoXuan, "Oh right, there is one more thing, that still need to seek a favour from Reverend."

Reverend DaoXuan said, "Yun valley master is too polite, what is it, you can speak your mind!"

Yun YiLan smiled and said, "I heard that your honourable sect Small Bamboo Valley disciple, Lu XueQi, has been punished to face the wall and reflect on herself at Small Bamboo Valley Full-Moon platform, after I knew about it, my heart really felt disturbed, and..." He smiled and said, "That useless disciple of mine has been coming to see me every few days and pleading with me, said that he does not bear to see Miss Lu being punished because of our request. Moreover, now that the demon beasts are causing misery to the world, it is a time where talented people are needed and Miss Lu is an outstanding disciple of Qing Yun, why don't Reverend on my behalf, temporarily exempt Miss Lu from her punishment."

Reverend DaoXuan sighed and said, "It is all because of my lax discipline that this turns out into a joke in front of Yun valley master."

Yun YiLan smiled and said, "Reverend you are too polite, it is only my foolish disciple wishful delusion only, and the matters between the junior generations, it is better if we simply don't meddle, we have less things to worry." After speaking, he laughed out loud.

Reverend DaoXuan contemplated for a moment, said, "Since Yun valley master personally pleaded for her, I definitely have to give this face. Why not like this! Today I will let XueQi come back, at the same time pick a few disciples to go with her to southwest to investigate, considered it as redeeming her mistakes!"

Yun YiLan's lips showed a hint of smile, said, "Ah! What a coincidence, I just wanted to say that I want to let my useless disciple, Li Xun, to go to southwest to gain experience!"

Reverend DaoXuan looked at him, lightly said, "Then let them go together!"

Yun YiLan laughed loudly, cupped his hands together, said, "Then I first thank Reverend on behalf of my useless disciple."

Reverend DaoXuan turned around, picked up the teacup from the table, slowly drank a mouthful, his eyes changed into an unpredictable look, slowly said, "Valley master is too polite."

Southwest Venomous Serpent Valley.

This huge valley was surrounded by dense ancient forests, most of the year, when it was dawn and evening, a miasma-similar would emit from the forests, those were actually the valley's numerous poisonous snakes' breaths.

Nobody knew the reason for the abundant number of poisonous serpents in this valley, their number had reached to a point where they were everywhere in the trees and on the ground. Only that Wan Du Clan residence within the valley, because of the secret spell of Wan Du Clan, forced these snakes to stay away.

.

And these mountain-full of snakes also turned into a natural barrier for Wan Du Clan and an inexhaustible treasure of poison.

At the moment, it was one of the days' dawn, above the dense forest of the valley, a faint colourful miasma could be seen rising indistinctly, it looked at the morning mist in the early morning but if an ignorant person walked near it, a moment later his face seven apertures would bleed and he would die from the toxic, finally buried with the snake's kiss.

In the usual days, other than these snakes guarding the valley, Wan Du Clan

had always had disciples patrolling the place, guarding against intruders, however for the past few days for some reasons, there was no disciples, seemed like the internal conflicts in Wan Du Clan had already turned white-hot.

[Pa], a gentle sound, a small stone rolled over, outside the valley from that only, at the same time already dilapidated, overgrown with weeds ancient path, jumped twice and rolled into the grasses beside and disappeared.

And then, following a light footstep sounds, three tall, big but strange beasts appeared on the road, they were all savage wolf heads but their bodies were of a panther, looking extremely strange.

These three monsters looked to be careful, their noses constantly twitching, as if sniffing something in the air, slowly approaching the Venomous Serpent Valley. And the valley was quiet, like completely caught off guard against the arrival of these three uninvited guests.

Suddenly, one of the monsters' wolf head startled, like it had discovered something and followed by a low roar, the other two monsters immediately stopped and looked towards the most sturdy tall monster standing in the middle.

The wolf-head-monster's eyes flashed with menacing glare, its nose sniffing constantly but it did not walk into the valley, instead slowly walked towards an area of dense patch of grasses beside the path, a faint smell of blood, slowly emanating from the grasses.

The monster with a low roar, stepped into the grass, looking from the outside, the monster's body kept moving, as if rummaging in the grass to find something.

After a while, a stir of movement from the grasses, that sturdy monster jumped out and back to the path, and in its mouth, it was biting a strange thing.

It looked like a long whip, like some kind of monster's tail, the top of its fur had begun to rot, its colour dull, the smell of blood constantly emanating.

The other two monsters at the same time growled, apparently surprised and angry, their eyes flashing with menace.

The monster placed the thing on the path, suddenly lifted its head up and gave a long howl, like a wolf's howl, sharp and mournful, straight up the sky.

A moment later, that monster again held the thing in its mouth, disregarding the other two, ran swiftly towards the back, leaving the valley.

And the other two monsters after roaring a few times, suddenly dashed into the valley, the ancient path was twisted and narrow, stretched ahead, brambles grown thickly on both sides of the forest, faint colourful miasma drifted among it.

The beasts dashed straight ahead, looking at them gashing their teeth, if there was someone in front of them right now, most likely they would be torn to pieces.

The colourful miasma gently floated, slowly gathering in the forest, the two beasts roared again and again, not even a glance and directly rushed into it. Initially nothing happened but for some reasons, their roars gradually became softer, running slower and slower, in the next moment their bodies started to shake.

Realizing something was wrong, the two beasts stopped and with difficulty turned their heads around, wanted to leave this forest but before they could walk out a few steps, they collapsed, blood flowed out of the seven apertures on their faces, looked like they would not survive.

In the middle of the forest, distantly [si si si si] hair-raising sounds were heard approaching, within a short while, numerous snake heads appeared from the branches of the trees, hissing sounds accompanied, big and small snakes slithered over.

And while these snakes were happily vying for their food, suddenly, many stopped their actions, raised their heads in alert and then moved towards the entrance valley.

On that desolate ancient path, a faint low drum sounds could be heard from afar, the entire earth slowly began to tremble, strange sounds like thousands of troops moving, came from the far distance.

In the early morning of the valley, suddenly it plunged into a deadly silence.

[Hu!]

Letting out a long breath fiercely, the first disciple of God of Poison, FanXiong, fiercely swung his hand, throwing aside a Wan Du Clan disciple's corpse whose skull had been smashed by him. The body flew through the air, with a [pong] sound, slammed onto the offering table in the mourning hall and dropped down.

Like a devilish sneer in the world of spirits, or maybe it was intended to make an offering to the God of Poison, this Evil sect clan leader who killed people like flies, at the mourning hall where the God of Poison coffin laid, right now had turned into a river of blood, thousands of disciples' corpses lying everywhere.

The thick smell of human blood, floated in the air.

Right now, the three disciples of God of Poison, FanXiong, Cheng WuYa and Duan RuSan's men had already been fighting for several days, other than a few higher skilled leaders leading, half of the ordinary disciples were dead or injured, and these days of fighting had already caused these three who vying for power, their eyes to turn red, almost turning berserk.

And on the offering table in the mourning hall, the box which contained the clan seal, was still lying there quietly, coldly watching it all.

Seemed like they were tired from killing, the battles inside and outside the hall gradually subsided but the swords drawn bow bent tense atmosphere instead turned even more tensed.

Lao san, Duan RuShan, clustered around by four strange-looking elders, his eyes glaring, looking at FanXiong and Cheng WuYa in front of him, sneered, "I say two senior brothers, still refusing to stop? now apart from those old men beside you, who else do you still have?"

FanXiong and Cheng WuYa looked at each other, both saw a trace of despair in each other red eyes, ever since from the night of the seventh day, the strange sounds from the mourning hall, the three factions who were already on standby immediately rushed into the mourning hall in force, for fear that they might be one step too late and the official deal would be taken by someone else.

And in that chaotic situation, countless people burst into the hall, naturally each thought the other party had already premeditated to undermine their agreement and came to rob the seal, within two or three words the fight had already started.

And so far, the results of the three factions battle, finally started to become clear, Lao San Duan RuShan who had always been the one with poorer skills, with the solid strength in his hands, slowly suppressed FanXiong and Cheng WuYa.

Now, other than those standing behind them, Bai DuZhi, Blood-sucking Demon, Elder Duanmu etc less than ten people, they had no more chips in their hands.

And Duan RuShan not only had [Poison Clan Four Elders] as bodyguards, in light and dark, he had at least hundred over men, among them many were elites, the solid power of Wan Du Clan, sixty percent was actually all on Duan RuShan's hands, even more than what he had before the battle, it was really beyond their expectations.

Watching helplessly as the situation had been decided, FanXiong and Cheng WuYa's eyes were full of reluctant but in the end they had nothing to say, looking at his two senior brothers' expressions, Duan RuShan could not help laughing out loud, above him he always had two overbearing senior brothers and below, that Qin WuYan whom his teacher God of Poison doted more than anything, only he was ignored, for so many years, finally he had his day, how could he not be ecstatic.

Duan RuShan swaggered with arrogance forward, the Poison Clan Four

protectors around him, FanXiong and Cheng WuYa watched him walked to the offering table, standing before the box, one clenching his fist, another gritting his teeth, obviously full of resentment.

But to Duan RuShan, their anger at the moment undoubtedly were the victor's favorite, he even felt that with such a moment where he ruled over all of the people, he did not live in vain.

Duan RuShan laughed, his attitude conceited, proudly reached out his hand and grabbed the green box in his hand.

FanXiong and Cheng WuYa made low growls at the same time, stepped forward one step but four elders immediately turned towards them, at the same time Duan RuShan's men with a [hu la] sound rushed over, surrounded them, both of their eyes looked like fire was about to spew out, watched that box from a distance.

Duan RuShan laughed even more conceitedly, proudly twisted opened the lock, opened the box, inside the box, golden silk lined the bottom, a dark brown small seal sat in the middle, a lifelike snake engraved on top of the seal, although he did not flip it over but everyone there including Duan RuShan knew, underneath the seal, four words were engraved

God of Poison Seal.

Duan RuShan arrogantly looked around, pausing longer on FanXiong and Cheng WuYa's faces, soaking in the delight of a victor, Duan RuShan smiled, although the smile looked weird and savage because of the blood on his face, he picked up the seal, turned it over. He wanted to take a good, good look at this symbol representing the highest power and authority of the Wan Du Clan.

At that moment, other than FanXiong and Cheng WuYa's angry pants, there was no sound in the hall, watching, the birth of the new generation of Wan Du Clan clan leader.

Suddenly, when the crowd was holding their breaths, Duan RuShan uttered a piercing roar, the box and that important seal fell to the ground. Everyone was shocked, looked towards him and all gasped with astonishment.

Duan RuShan who was just being insufferably arrogant, right now his entire body was quivering, his face devoid of colour, especially his two hands, in a blink turned into an extremely strange colour of dark black.

The next moment, a low insect wing flapping sound emitted from his hands, a strange flying insect flew up from his fingers.

Not one present was not a veteran of Wan Du Clan, the insect flew extremely fast but almost all could see it clearly, Bai DuZhi was the first to exclaim, "Seven-tailed centipede, seven-tailed centipede!"

This cry, like a soul-stirring roar, shocked everyone, all of them looked at Duan RuShan, the shaking in his body had turned worse, an elder beside him intended to pull him but his fingers had only slightly touched his clothes, suddenly his body shook, with a scream flew back out, the next instant his right hand had turned black.

Standing in the distance, Blood-Sucking Demon's pupils contracted, roughly said, "[Rotting Flesh Liverwort]..."

The elder who was poisoned cried out in surprise, an elder next to him without hesitation, grasped beside him a broken leg of some chair, struck down his right hand, with his high skills, that chair leg, like a solid sword tip, chopped off that poisoned elder's right arm and then immediately threw that chair leg away, as if a second late and his own hand would also suffer the same fate.

The chair leg flew in the air and everyone scrambled to avoid it.

Right now Duan RuShan's face was full of black energy, everyone clearly saw that the two hands which had turned completely black, with a pop sound, the skin ruptured, even the blood that flowed out was already black.

In the next moment, the hair-raising [puff, puff, puff] sounds unceasingly, Duan RuShan who was poisoned with the most toxic venom in the world, his skin and flesh burst opened, black blood spewed out, he fell slumped to the ground, after struggling for a moment, never moved again.

FanXiong stared blankly at this junior brother, who was just a moment ago extremely savage and right now dead, suddenly turned back and shouted, "Qin WuYan, you this treacherous beast, get out!"

Everyone suddenly realized with a start, [Rotting Flesh Liverwort] was highly toxic, one of the world most hypertoxic thing, even in Wan Du Clan, only God of Poison himself could handle it, FanXiong, Cheng WuYa, Duan RuShan with their limited skills could not use this item.

.

And the seven-tailed centipede was an absolutely rare poisonous thing and had always kept close to God of Poison, now that the two most hypertoxic things appeared at the same time, and in the God of Poison Seal small box, without asking, it must be Qin WuYan who had fooled everyone, secretly placed

the poison.

All of a sudden, people in the mourning hall were on the alert, looked around them, fearing Qin WuYan might suddenly appeared beside them. Duan RuShan's death was too horrifying, not one was not terrified.

At that moment, nobody dared to even breathe loudly, only where Duan RuShan's corpse was, drops of black blood slowly fell, when it hit the ground, it made a slight hissing sound, burning a small dent, in a blink, around the body were small holes, showing that the toxicity of the poison.

"He he, what is it, two senior brothers, various honoured elders, we have only not meet a few days, it is rare that everyone missed me so much!" A calm voice, suddenly from outside the hall travelled in, everyone was shocked and looked out, Qin WuYan had changed, removed the hemp garment mourning clothes, put on his usual clothes, smiling and unhurriedly walked in. And those sharp-eyed people had already saw, on his shoulder, a tiny strange insect was there, it was the seven-tailed centipede.

FanXiong bitterly said, "You put the poison?"

Qin WuYan at the moment ignored everyone, swaggered forward, came to Duan RuShan's corpse, in full view of everyone, stretched his hand and picked up that hypertoxic seal.

FanXiong and Cheng WuYa's eyes shrank, Cheng WuYa sneered, said, "Good! Little junior brother, the three of us really have underestimated you."

Qin WuYan smiled and said, "Two senior brothers must be joking, actually

with three senior brothers' strength, it is no effort at all to take junior brother's life, junior brother also do not dare to resist. However teacher had instructed before he left, said that the Ghost King sect, HeHuan Sect are like a tiger eyeing its prey, three senior brothers are also not capable, said I must take on the clan leader position, to prevent the hundred years of Wan Du Clan be destroyed in one day. Junior brother me have been brought up by teacher, I am in debt to teacher and do not dare to disobey, therefore had to resort to tricks and made three senior brothers suffered."

FanXiong angrily said, "Pei, so you assume that you have won, I tell you, the first person lao zi want to kill is you!" After speaking, he turned to Cheng WuYa, "Lao Er, this fellow is too vicious, let's join forces to kill him first then we will share the world."

Cheng WuYa immediately said, "Good, let's go!"

Among the clamour, both of them looked to about to charge and behind them, Bai DuZhi, Blood-Sucking Demon also about to follow, Qin WuYan indifferently said, "Elders, you have seen now, these senior brothers of mine really cannot hold their patience, all of you are coming over to kill me, not to mention just with Seven-tailed centipede and Rotting Flesh Liverwort whether can you all defeat me. Even if you all join forces to kill me, following these two useless things, do you all think your lives would be better in the future, can you all win against Ghost King sect and HeHuan Sect, can you all escape the besiegement of the Good Faction?"

Bai DuZi and Blood-sucking Demon, Elder Duanmu paused stunned, that two hypertoxic poisons on Duan RuShan, only the person who received Wan Du Clan Poison Sutra could use it, although they were in the clan for so many years but they still could not reach that stage, in their hearts in fact they were already in fear of this young Qin WuYan, Now that they heard his words, they hesitated and did not dare to go forward.

And many following Duan RuShan, firstly would not follow FanXiong and Cheng WuYan and right now looked at each other, lost at what to do. Qin WuYan looked at the crowd, smiled and said, "Everyone, I guarantee, as long as I take over the clan, I will definitely not bear grudges, how everyone was previously in the clan, I would definitely treat you the same."

Under FanXiong and Cheng WuYa's glares, the people looked at each other for a long time and then Bai DuZhi was the first to back away, followed by Blood-sucking Demon, Elder Duanmu and the four elders etc also started to walk to the side, leaving only Qin WuYan, FanXiong and Cheng WuYa the three brothers standing there.

FanXiong's face revealed despair, knew the situation was hopeless, Cheng WuYa looked ashen. Qin WuYan still maintained a faint smile but in his heart he was still feeling indignation, right now he was not angry at his two senior brother but at Cang Song Taoist. He had already set his plan and let the three brothers killed themselves but not in such a large-scale fight, as long as his three senior brothers were removed, he would easily take over the clan position.

Unexpectedly with Cang Song Taoist's meddling, triggering a big battle with the three factions, destroying the clan's main strength. Qin WuYan right now was angry, agonized and regretful, really wished to cut Cang Song Taoist into half however he could only think, Taoist Cang Song had disappeared, Qin WuYan could only quietly bore it down.

But in any case, Qin WuYan had control of the situation, with a victory smile, he looked at the two brothers, leisurely said, "Two senior brothers, are you still not going to seek forgiveness before teacher's spirit tablet...."

Chapter 152 - Insane

Majestic Fox Mountain, Ghost King Sect Headquarters location.

"Zhi zhi, zhi zhi!" Xiao Hui's familiar cries rang out in the dim and deep tunnel, from the shadows Ghost Li's figure emerged, on his shoulder, Xiao Hui drank a few mouthfuls from the big bag of wine it was holding and then cleverly tied up the bag's opening, letting it hung down. There was a long rope on the wine bag, just like a cover tied onto the monkey, not afraid of it slipping down.

Ghost Li's face was expressionless and walked ahead, the direction he was looking at was where BiYao's ice stone room was, Xiao Hui seemed a little drowsy, crouching on his shoulders and yawned. The surroundings of the Majestic Fox Mountain were desolate and did not have much wild fruits, most of the time it could only go to Ghost King sect wine cellar to steal some wine and drink, it had not been seen for a few days and looked like it had gained some weight.

Ghost Li unhurriedly walked, on his way in he encountered only a few Ghost King sect ordinary disciples, he frowned slightly, these days many of the Ghost King sect disciples were being gathered and several days ago, led by Ghost King personally, left the mountain. As for where, he was unsure, and the strange thing was, this seemed like a very important matter, he this vice leader did not know, and those that followed Ghost King for many years, YouJi, Mr Ghost, including Taoist CangSong who had just joined Ghost King sect, as well as many of the elite Ghost King sect members that he knew, were all left at Majestic Fox Mountain.

Ghost King mysteriously brought a number of many disciples but their strength were actually not even half of Ghost King sect, where exactly were they going? Ghost Li felt bewildered. However, Mr. Ghost, YouJi etc all remained silent, Ghost Li naturally would not ask much and utmost concern was not where Ghost King was going or how important this matter was, to him, BiYao was always the first.

And now, he was also soon approaching that icy stone chamber.

There was nobody at the door, YouJi was also not there, usually that mysterious woman was most often seen at the cold stone chamber but this period the mood in Ghost King sect was somehow not right, her frequency also reduced.

Ghost Li stood at the door for a while, composed herself and then opened the door and walked in. After entering, he saw a white and slim figure standing next to BiYao, Ghost Li was startled, at first thought it was YouJi but after he got over his initial shock, YouJi had always dressed in black, this was not her. And as expected, when that lady heard the stone door moving and turned around, her face was not covered with veil.

It was Xiao Bai.

Ghost Li was surprised, ever since the great shaman's Soul Return Lure failed and he left Majestic Fox Mountain broken-hearted and once again returned, he had not seen Xiao Bai again. Although he could tell that Ghost King and Xiao Bai were old acquaintances but he did not feel it was necessary to enquire.

Xiao Bai saw Ghost Li, her expression also revealed a slight surprise and then a faint smile, said, "It is you."

Ghost Li, after all knew Xiao Bai for some time and Xiao Bai had also advised him on saving BiYao's matter, his heart was still somewhat grateful, nodded his head, said, "Hello." At this time Xiao Hui who was crouching on Ghost Li's shoulders also excitedly called out [zhi zhi] twice to Xiao Bai.

Xiao Bai smiled to Xiao Hui and then looked at the Ghost Li, said, "You are here to see BiYao?"

Ghost Li slowly walked up, BiYao's beautiful and quiet face again appeared in front of him, his voice gradually turned deep and low, said, "Yes."

Xiao Bai quietly watched this man sat down beside BiYao, then looked at the body lying on the cold stone platform, motionless. She gently sighed, shook her head and quietly retreated out, in the stone chamber, only Ghost Li was left with BiYao.

After an unknown amount of time passed, the heavy stone door again opened, Ghost Li slowly came out from room, looked slightly haggard. He walked a few steps then suddenly stopped, in the tunnel not far from the stone chamber, the nine-tailed celestial fox white figure was still patiently standing there.

Xiao Bai saw his appearance, sighed and said, "You must be very upset at BiYao's state, it is really hard on you."

Ghost Li shook his head, said, "I'm fine."

Xiao Bai walked to his side, patted his shoulder, whispered, "Don't be discouraged, there will always be hope."

Ghost Li's body shook, turned around to see her, his mouth slightly opened but Xiao Bai saw his expression and spoke first, "Don't ask me, I also don't know what to do now."

Ghost Li's face in an instant fell, silently turned around and was about to stride off when suddenly a [weng] sounded in his mind, felt the earth spinning, instantly a chill washed over his body, an icy cold energy suddenly leapt up from his energy channels. This shock was not something trivial, right now the cold energy acting up in his body was the Sinister Orb evil energy which he was extremely familiar with but in the past, especially after he had trained and improved greatly with the third volume of TianShu True Way, this ice-cold energy was gradually suppressed and did not misbehave, for some reasons today it suddenly burst out.

In no time, under Xiao Bai's astonished stare, Ghost Li turned pale, looked as if he was enveloped in a layer of frost and from his body, a strange black-green light emanated three chi out, in it mixed with a savage blood-thirsty smell.

Xiao Bai's face turned pale, was about to reach out and help Ghost Li but her hand touched that black-green light, she immediately felt a wave of the Sinister Orb evil power charging at her, Xiao Bai frowned and took three steps back, which then managed to avoid this demon power. Xiao Hui who was at Ghost Li's shoulder also felt something wrong, had long jumped off Ghost Li's body and landed behind Xiao Bai, with its three eyes wide opened, staring at its owner.

Ghost Li's face showed that he was in pain, suddenly his sleeve moved, a stream of cold air flashed past, the Soul-devouring stick slipped out but it did not land on the ground, floated before him and slowly rotated, as if using strange and cold eyes, watching this man who had possessed it for many years.

The glimmering dark-green light glowed continuously, the air filled with a strange atmosphere, Xiao Bai was pale, her brow wrinkled but this evil power was emitted from his body, if she was to help Ghost Li, remove this sudden evil power but the source was actually in Ghost Li himself, how could she make the move? For a moment, Xiao Bai was at a loss.

Ghost Li's face was turning paler and paler, when it seemed that he almost could not breathe, suddenly, a warm pure Yang red light shot burst from his chest, immediately reduced quite an amount of that Yin cold evil power, Ghost Li moved and struggled to sit down, the golden and dark-green lights on his face at the same time flashed, with the two great Good Faction true ways urging, 'Inferno Mirror' pure Yang fire increased in strength and gradually suppressed this cold Yin energy, however when Ghost Li had fully recovered, it was already an hour past.

Right now Ghost Li, his body drenched, when he opened his eyes, what he saw was Xiao Bai's concerned eyes.

Ghost Li gave a bitter laugh but did not say anything, slowly stood up. Xiao Bai looked at him, quietly said, "Was it the Sinister Orb?"

Ghost Li picked up the Soul-devouring stick which had at sometime fell on the ground, looked at it deeply and then once again, kept it in his sleeve.

Xiao Bai's eyes twitched, suddenly stepped forward, said, "Don't think that if you keep quiet nobody will know, now that Sinister Orb savage evil power has already started to repel onto yourself. These ten years the blood and energy channels in your body, because of the long term contact with this savage thing has turned cold and poisoned with savagness, now that you can luckily avoided a death, it is because you are lucky, to get one of the rare few magical weapons that can resist this savage object. But ... " She looked slightly melancholy, even her voice turned sorrowful, "but, how many times are you confident to escape,

the next time, can you escape it?"

Ghost Li had been standing there, there was also no expression on his gaunt face, quietly listening to Xiao Bai, after a long while, he softly said, "I am not confident, but, what can I do?"

Xiao Bai bit her lips, angrily said, "Don't play the fool with me, how would you not know? Now you only need to discard this evil object immediately and then take the Inferno Mirror to a place of pure yang, with the earth fire stimulate Inferno Mirror pure Yang into your body, this is the only way for you to survive!"

Ghost Li looked at Xiao Bai for a while, suddenly laughed, that laugh, seemed inconceivably innocent, as if in the distant ten years ago, that simple young man.

Then, he slowly turned around, using the wall to support himself and walked away, Xiao Hui immediately ran to its master, scurried up to his shoulder in a few movements.

Xiao Bai stared blankly at that determined yet fragile back, suddenly loudly shouted, "You wanted to die right, in your heart you just simply want to die, right?"

Ghost Li's body paused but did not look back, did not speak, a moment later, he continued to move forward.

Xiao Bai's voice, came loudly behind him, "You want to die, dream on! How many debts that you are still owing to people have not paid off and you want to

just die off like that, impossible! You don't want to listen to me right, good, you are great, then I will go myself, I will find 'Eight Immortal Inferno Formation' incantation, let you save yourself. You remember this, BiYao is still lying in the cold stone chamber, before she wakes up, even if you want to die, it is also not up to you!..."

"It is not up to you, not up to you, not up to you..." In the long quiet tunnel, the echoes faintly reverberated, Ghost Li with his face bleak, his body slowly straightened but in the end he still never turn back to look.

X

x

x

Lush forests, quiet valley, dawn in the Venomous Serpent Valley was actually tranquil but at this moment, the earth slowly shook, the smell of blood turning stronger, the countless snakes that had gathered at the border of the valley suddenly disappeared, as if somehow they sensed something, those reptiles all went into hiding.

A black smoke, appeared a distance from the valley, swiftly approached, a thick and suffocating smell came forth from the sky, the gathering loud roar turned into a great crushing deafening roar!

Nearer and nearer!

[Hou ah ah ah ah ah...]

It was innumerable monsters, like vicious ghost and ferocious spirits charging out from the nine netherworlds, blood-red eyes sharp fangs, sharp cries

assaulting face-on. Various

kinds of strange monsters formed a surging stream of unstoppable force, in front of this turbulent wave, there was no one that could stop it and survive, even the forests on the sides of the road, in the thunderous roars, was rapidly swallowed by the flood.

There was no hesitation, no pause, this flood directly dashed into the Venomous Serpent Valley, like a black tide instantly pouring into the green sea, in every corners of the forest, horrified snakes were thrown out unceasingly, desperately struggling in the torrent but all without exception instantly drowned. Even that poisonous colourful miasma could not stop this terrible flood of demon beasts, the first several monsters at the front fell dead to the ground but even more trampled on their comrades' bodies and charged past, the powerful hurricane in an instant scattered the miasma, dispersing above the forest.

Within the black torrent of evil beasts, there were four or five sturdy beasts that looked several times bigger than the average monsters, brandishing their claws and fangs, leading their men ahead. And at the entrance to the valley, there were still countless of monsters charging endlessly into the valley.

The entire valley, seemed to be quaking. It looked like, the world's apocalypse.

At the other end of the Venomous Serpent Valley, standing at a vantage point Ghost King took a deep breath, although he had seen the evil beasts might but the sight before him still made him turned pale. He composed himself, after pondering for a moment, he again looked to the forest to the north of the valley, under the morning sun, the forest indistinctly reflected light.

A hint of sneer slowly surfaced on Ghost King's lips: one day, all of you will know, in the end who will be the winner?

He shouted in his heart like that, the expression on his face slowly hardened, BiYao is no longer around, then, let the world make up for it!

He slowly turned around, behind him in the dense forest, was Ghost King disciples, they packed the forest, their fighting morales high. Ghost King watched the people in front of him, countless eyes staring in his face.

At that moment, who would know his feelings?

Slowly raising his arm, it seemed to turn leaden, distant cries of roars and the gradual cries of fear and shock, also seemed to have travelled here, Ghost King's face suddenly changed, then, he swung his arm heavily down.

His arm like knife, like a sharp sword slicing the world, cutting off the last warmth, tearing apart the dreams that once existed, that sound made by the arm in the wind, like bones fracturing from a stab in the chest!

Countless people, behind his majestic back, made war-cry sounds, lifting their sharp swords in their hands and charged down, their clothes flying up, a strong breeze blew, the trees swayed in the forest, like it was dancing for this. Ghost King stood among the crowd, like a hard cold rock unmoving, he turned and looked at the forest in the north, there was also movement in the forest there, gradually spreading.

Ghost King laughed, he suddenly laughed crazily in the sea of people who were going to meet their deaths, that laughter was so piercing but no one dared

to ask him, only the morning sun, with its faint warmth still continued to leapt towards this crazy mortal world!

X

x

x

Seven days later, entrusted by Reverend DaoXuan, Pu Hong Master and Yun YiLan and the other Good Faction leaders, a group of Good Faction disciples set off from Qing Yun Hill, reached southwest. Due to the gravity of the matter, the three factions had sent their most talented disciples, as if coincidence, these people had already met.

Qing Yun sect Xiao YiCai, Lin JingYu and Lu XueQi, Tian Yin Temple FaXiang and FaShan, FenXiang Valley Li Xun and YanHong, a total of seven people, after setting off from Qing Yun Hill, they were cautious on their way, travelling by night, trying to avoid encountering the demon beasts on the road, going at full speed to southwest, hoping to find out the reason behind for the sudden change of direction of these large number of beasts to this place.

Just when these Good Faction disciples had just set off, although they were clearly aware of the great danger but for the common people, no one had any intention of retreating. However on the seventh day after they had set off, all of their faces had turned pale and did not speak for days, including the most eloquent Xiao YiCai, the calm and stable FaXiang and even Li Xun who had wanted to speak to Lu XueQi, all turned silent.

Thousand of miles, further into the south, the situation became more tragic. If it was not the entire village, entire city of corpses everywhere, dense white bones, it was one after another deserted village and city, fertile lands turned

into scorched earth. Nobody knew, how did these demon beasts know how to set fire, why were they so savage and blood-thirsty, like nobody knew, when would this catastrophe end?

The indistinct faint ghost wails, like it would always reverberated in the wilderness of the southern vast lands, describing the desolate and miserable past.

After entering the southwest province, they were even more cautious but right now they faced an even bigger problem, first of all, they simply could not find any local residents, all the people either fled to the north or died tragically in this catastrophe, so, these Good Faction disciples were unable to find the locals and ask them about the demonic beast movements. On the other hand, most of those beast demons were unable to communicate with humans, even if they were to risk it and capture a few monsters but the monsters would most likely only struggle and roar, how would they get information from them?

They had no alternative and after discussion, they could only follow Xiao YiCai's proposal and secretly follow the demons, wherever there are bigger groups of demons gathering, they would head there, to see what exactly these demons are planning to do? So they tracked in the southwest for three days and three nights, during which several times they were almost discovered by monsters who had sharp hearing and sense of smell, fortunately Xiao YiCai, FaXiang, FaShan, Lin JingYu etc were all extremely smart people and each time they managed to escape within a hair's breath at critical moments. But nevertheless, they still did not found out anything.

Just when they were beginning to lose heart, by accident they actually found one Evil sect disciple who had gone crazy in one of the forest, after they had asked in detail, or it could be said under their patient coaxing, gradually they learned that the large number of demons entering into southwest was to have a huge battle against the Evil Sect, and the results, of course the evil beasts won, the once arrogant Evil Sect three branches were almost wiped out in this battle.

The news immediately made everyone shocked and stunned, and in the crowd, standing the furthest, Lu XueQi's face, had turned especially pale!

Looking at pitiful person who had shrank into a ball and constantly mumbling "monster, monster", at times suddenly shivering from head to toe, shrieking, the seven Good Faction people felt their hearts were shrouded by a layer of heavy shadow.

Xiao YiCai coughed, looked at FaXiang, said, "FaXiang senior brother, now that we are generally clear about the situation, what do you think we should do?"

FaXiang frowned, looked down at the pitiful person on the ground, sighed and said, "Amitabha Buddha, it is a sin, a sin." Pausing for a while, FaXiang slowly said, "Everyone, actually the purpose of our trip, the gist of the situation we now know, lowly monk me think that we should first return and report about this situation to the various elders."

"No!"

Suddenly, a cold voice was heard from beside, everyone was startled, the person speaking was actually the quietest one on the trip, Lu XueQi. FaXiang, feeling surprised, said, "Lu junior sister, if you have any other views, please speak."

Lu Xueqi still looking pale but her voice was very calm, lightly said, "What we know now, came from this crazed Evil sect disciple, and his words were incoherent and we made many speculations on our own. If we assumed we have finished our mission just based on this, I think it is not appropriate."

FaXiang was silent, everyone looked at each other, after a moment, FaXiang nodded and said, "That's right, Lu junior sister is right, lowly monk me was too anxious just now."

Xiao YiCai pondered a moment, said, "There is some truth in what Lu junior sister said but these few days we have been checking day and night in the southwest and there was not a slightest clue, don't tell me we have to continue searching like this?"

Lu XueQi's mouth moved but did not speak, apparently facing the two difficult obstacles before them, she too could not think of any good solution. But at this moment, Li Xun who was frequently taking glances at Lu XueQi suddenly stepped forward and said, "I have an idea, maybe it has some hope."

Everyone was surprised, even Lu XueQi took a few more glances at Li Xun, FaXiang delightfully said, "Really, Li senior brother, please say."

Li Xun inhaled deeply, forced himself not to look at Lu XueQi, said, "I have listened carefully to the madman's words, heard him mentioned one place several times, called 'Venomous Serpent Valley', not sure if anyone notices?"

Xiao YiCai nodded his head and said, "Yes, I have also noticed. I have heard of this Venomous Serpent Valley before, it is said to be a valley deep inside the southwest mountains here, numerous poisonous snakes resides in it, there is also highly toxic miasma in the forest and is fatal to human, no one has dared to enter this forest. As time passes, no one knows the specific location of the valley."

Lin JingYu suddenly said, "Does Li senior brother thinks that this battle could be taking place at the legendary Venomous Serpent Valley?"

Li Xun nodded, determinedly said, "Yes, I infer that the battle would happen at this valley and more than that, I think maybe this valley might be one of the three Evil sect branches headquarters. As long as we can find it, naturally we will know if the words of this crazy person are true?"

YanHong who has been keeping silent suddenly said, "But senior brother, it has already been so many days, let's not say whether can we find this Venomous Serpent Valley, even if we found it, the scene over there might have changed from the original..."

Li Xun coldly said, "Junior sister, don't tell me you have forgotten, those cruel demon beasts indeed know how to eat humans and set fire but after the fire, there would be ruins, the demons eat humans but they do not eat bones!"

Everyone's expressions changed, YanHong turned even more pale after listening to him, suddenly felt nausea, clearly what they had saw on their way, was enough to make this lady reached her psychological limit.

Li Xun sighed and did not speak anymore, FaXiang and FaShan both quietly chanted, Xiao YiCai shook his head and walked over to YanHong side, quietly comforted her with a few words, until YanHong slowly settled down, he then turned and walked to that shivering Evil sect disciple, crouched down.

"Do you know where is the Venomous Serpent Valley?" Xiao YiCai tried to make his voice as soft as possible and sounded peaceful but that Evil sect disciple's body shook, buried his head lower, did not speak. Xiao YiCai asked three more times but the Evil sect disciple seemed to turn deaf and did not have any reaction.

Xiao YiCai slowly stood up, looked at the group, no one spoke. Xiao YiCai only sighed and said, "How?"

Li Xun who was standing by the side frowned, suddenly walked to the Evil disciple and pulled him up, loudly asked, "Where is the place where those monsters are killing people?"

The Evil disciple's body shook greatly, his face immediately changed into fear, opened his mouth and made a shrill scream but Li Xun, like his heart was stone, held him tightly, loudly shouted, "Where is the place where those monsters are killing people?"

"Ah!..."

Deeply entrenched in fear, that Evil sect disciple was trembling, his teeth chattering, eyes filled with fear but his head involuntarily looked to the north. Li Xun's eyes froze, urgently said, "It's in the north, is it?"

The Evil sect disciple's head suddenly tilted, his entire body slackened, everyone was shocked and quickly went up to check, his pupil had dilated, a check on his nostrils, he had stopped breathing, he had died.

Li Xun slowly put down the body of the man, stood up, faced the north, everyone looked towards where he was looking at, in the sea of forests, under the bright clear day, there seemed to be a blood-coloured cloud, shrouding above it.

Chapter 153 - Purgatory

Majestic Fox Mountain, where the Evil Sect Ghost King sect headquarters was located, shrouded in a somber, the original mighty great branch, more than half of its men were dead in a sudden, no matter to whichever mighty sect under the sky, it would also be a heavy blow. So many valiant disciples, high in battle morale however returning, was only Ghost King alone bathed in blood.

The lingering shadows, on every person in Majestic Fox Mountain, their hearts and faces, nobody knew, the cruel and ferocious demon beasts' next victim, who would it be?

After Ghost King returned, he went straight to closed-door seclusion, nobody dared to ask him but the people did not have to wait for a long time, soon, the news came one after another, things also gradually cleared up, in this southwest war, the Evil Sect three factions with their combined unprecedented force against the demon beasts, as to why would the three factions collaborate or was there another scheme, other than Ghost King, most probably nobody else knew.

The result of this battle, could said to be the most painful failure of the Evil Sect since a thousand years, not to mention Ghost King sect losing more than half of its men, Wan Du Clan first suffered greatly from its internal strife, followed by the attack of the demon beasts in Venomous Serpent Valley, the remaining elite disciples almost were dead or injured. As for the seclusive HeHuan Sect, for some reason this time, also led its entire sect force in this battle, and their fate too, before the endless army of beasts, a total defeat.

At this moment, the defeated Ghost King sect was in a state of panic but no matter what, their situation at the moment was still far better than Wan Du Clan and HeHuan Sect, most of the Ghost King sect's elites were left at Majestic Fox Mountain therefore the main core strength was not affected, and Wan Du Clan and HeHuan Sect after this battle, whether did anyone make it out was also uncertain.

This day, after recovering for many days, while the sect disciples were speculating uneasily, Ghost King re-appeared before his disciples. As for that big defeat, Ghost King did not even mention it and instead immediately issued a number of commands, very soon, the entire Majestic Fox Mountain began to stir.

Everyone started to pack for travelling, packing up things, preparing dry provisions and water, because the last instruction in the list of commands by Ghost King, clearly stated one thing, due to the Central Plains demon beast turmoil and the holy sect severe defeat, for the future of the holy sect, he had decided, the entire Ghost King sect, would move together to northwest, to the Wildlands, to that legendary holy sect birthplace - "Wildlands Holy Temple".

In the hectic scene, Ghost King expressionlessly clasped his hands behind, walked towards that ice cold stone chamber deep inside the mountain. The upcoming road trip was thousands of miles, and the Wildlands was desolate, hot and dry, with BiYao's current condition, she was not suitable for the long-distance to the Wildlands. Initially Ghost King intended to request Xiao Bai to look after BiYao, with the nine-tailed celestial fox's thousand years of skills, including the defensive traps in the mountain, it would be absolutely safe but now that things had changed. Ever since he came back, for some reason, Xiao Bai had disappeared, he asked several people but nobody knew where she had gone.

Thinking of this, Ghost King's brows slightly wrinkled, unknowingly he

discovered he had arrived at the stone chamber where his daughter was lying, he sighed, opened the door and went inside.

Ghost Li was standing there, quietly accompanying BiYao. He heard movements behind him but he did not even glance back.

Ghost King slowly paced, walked to Ghost Li, standing beside him he looked towards his daughter who was quietly lying on the ice stone platform, that pale and beautiful face as delicate and beautiful as before, as if in the other world she knew too, in the world the two men who were most concerned about her, whom were also as important as to her, were by her side.

Her face was very quiet, very calm, very at ease!

Ghost King watched BiYao for a long while, a faint glint in his eyes, a rare tender, after a long time, he let out a long sigh, lightly said, "Why are you not packing up your things?"

Ghost Li did not lift his head up, and did not directly answer him, instead asked Ghost King, "I heard in the vicinity of the Wildlands, it is either the bleak Gobi desert or the vast expanse of the desert, exceptionally hot all year round, is it?"

Ghost King nodded his head and said, "Yes, when I once visited the Wildlands Holy Temple, the climate is indeed the case."

Ghost Li frowned, said, "Then how can BiYao go, now that she in this...condition, how can she take the suffering?"

Ghost King glanced at Ghost Li, said, "I never intended to bring BiYao to Wildlands."

Ghost Li's expression changed, looked over at Ghost King, Ghost King said, "The Wildlands is desolate, dry and hot, it is indeed not suitable for Yao'er, I intended to let her stay in Majestic Fox Mountain, after we leave, activate the mountain's defensive traps and gears, close up the entrance, as such it is very safe. But in any case, there has to be someone to come in at least once a month to check, so as to prevent any accidents."

Ghost Li stood up and said, "Leaving one person, who is it?"

Ghost King lightly said, "I wanted to entrust to Xiao Bai, her cultivation is high and is very willing to take a few years of good rest in this Majestic Fox Mountain but for some reason, I could not find her these few days."

Ghost Li's expression slightly changed, Ghost King noticed it, said, "Why, you know where she is gone?"

Ghost Li slowly shook his head, was silent for a moment, said, "Let me stay here to take care of BiYao."

Ghost King gazed intently at him, said, "I am certainly assured if you take care of BiYao and I also trust you but now that the holy sect is heavily wounded, I intend to revitalize our prestige, firstly we have to stabilize the people, unify the holy church, need someone with talents like you around."

Ghost Li's eyes for the first time left BiYao, slowly shifted to Ghost King, suddenly said, "This time the war with the demon beast, those disciples that

followed you are all dead?"

Ghost King's expression changed, the glint in his eyes flared, this was the first time someone had dared to mention this matter to him but he was not angry, only looked deeply at Ghost Li and then slowly said, "All are dead."

Ghost Li looked away, back to BiYao again, after a long while, said, "After this big battle, although the Evil Sect is seriously weakened but Wan Du Clan and HeHuan Sect are also completely defeated, to our Ghost King Sect whose strength still remains, it cannot be deny that it is a good opportunity to unify the Evil Sect. With the current situation as such, even without me, there is no longer any power that can compete with you." He quietly said, "But over at BiYao, still need someone to look after, just let me stay to take care of her."

Ghost King looked at him for a moment, nodded and said, "Since you say so, I will not force you. I will entrust Yao'er to you, I believe you will be able to take good care of her but remember this, the demon beast strength is terrible and their senses sharp, just in case, it is best to seal the mountain entrance and you can probably come and check every one or two months, as such there won't be any mishaps."

Ghost Li slowly nodded, considered he had agreed. Ghost King looked at his daughter again, a moment later, he uttered a sigh, turned and walked out.

When he was about to reach the door, suddenly Ghost Li's voice was heard from behind him, "Sect head..."

Ghost King was stunned, felt somehow unexpected, Ghost Li rarely took the initiative to speak out, this time he suddenly spoke, puzzled what it was for, immediately said, "What?"

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, suddenly said, "Do you hate me?"

Ghost King back-facing him, did not move, did not speak, and could not see his expression.

Ghost Li slowly said, "BiYao is like this because of me, in your heart, is it that you hate me alot?"

His face was indifferent, as if he was talking about a topic that had nothing to do with him but Ghost King still did not speak. In the stone chamber, the two men with their backs facing each other, the tension in the air seemed to thicken.

The light mist, gently drifted up from the ice-cold stone platform underneath BiYao's body, floated in the air, for an unknown length of time, suddenly the stone door was heard opening, Ghost King did not say anything, quietly went out.

[Rumble!]... the heavy deep sound, the stone door once again shut, leaving only Ghost Li beside BiYao. His expression was wooden, staring blankly at the woman in front of him.

X

x

x

In the ancient and dense primitive forests, along with the wind came a

horrible and burnt smell, like an ugly scar, everywhere in the original exuberant forests it carried the signs of destructions from the demon beasts' rampage, huge trees lying on the ground in disorder, numerous forest animals' corpses littered everywhere, the entire forest's tranquility had vanished.

On the second day after they discovered the crazy Evil Sect disciple, Xiao YiCai, FaXiang etc the entourage of seven Good Faction disciples, following along the gradually turning obvious demon beasts trail, approaching the valley hidden deep in the mountains. The forests that they passed by on their way, replicated that scene, although human bones were not seen but they were still disturbed by the scene.

In many of their minds, even coincidentally at the same time, reflected, do those demon beasts really come to this world just to kill?

This day at noon, the group of them appeared on that decrepit ancient path outside Venomous Serpent Valley, the area here showed such clear signs of the monsters' destructions that they almost did not have to spend any effort to investigate, that path was widened from the stampede made by the demon beasts, giant footprints and sharp claw marks were everywhere, the air still carried a foul smell, other than that, there seemed to be a faint unbearable stench but nobody could tell what it was.

Looking at the valley entrance, inside and outside were similarly in a mess, the forest and ground which was ravaged by that terrible flood was clearly visible, the ancient path meandered and twisted, who would know in that valley, what is exactly there?

For some reason, all of them looked a little nervous, caught in an awkward silence. In the end, Xiao YiCai coughed once but then discovered that his own throat was dry and painful. He composed himself, said, "Everyone, it seems that the Evil Sect disciples did not speak a lie, it should be here, a big battle

happened between the demon beasts and the Evil Sect."

He looked around, hesitated for a moment, then asked, "Shall we go in and see?"

No one spoke, even Li Xun's face looked pale, a moment later, FaXiang who stood beside Xiao YiCai quietly chanted, said, "Since we are here, we should no longer say to give up, let's go in."

Actually everyone there knew that, just that for some reason, there seemed to be something strange in the valley, stealthy affecting everyone's moods, striking fear in their hearts. FaShan who had always following his senior brother FaXiang, with a low, muffled voice acknowledged and walked over to his senior brother.

"Let's go." The one who said this was not Xiao YiCai but Lin JingYu, his hand tightened over the Dragon Slayer Sword and then his face solemn, took the lead into the valley, following behind him was Lu XueQi, Li Xun too immediately kept up, Xiao YiCai and FaXiang looked at each other, saw the worry in each other's eyes but a moment later, everyone still went in.

The vast valley, the boundless forest, the group walked along in the valley, surrounded by only a dead silence, not to mention animals, even the usual cries of birds were missing. The valley seemed to have become a lifeless evil spirit.

The foul smell of the beasts was as strong but as they went deeper, everyone started to frown tightly, right now, following the mountain breeze the other stench, made one feel nauseous, and turning thicker.

The mountain road twisted and turned, the crowd was on high alert against their surroundings, slowly moving forward. In a corner ahead of them, there was a col, when they arrived here, the stench in the air had reached an unbearable stage. Suddenly, YanHong who was in the middle suddenly dashed to the roadside, everyone was startled, Li Xun exclaimed, "Junior sister, what happen to you..." He stopped halfway, because he and everyone saw YanHong standing on the weeds beside the path, vomiting hard.

No one laughed, because nobody knew how long they could hold on, although the valley still had not revealed its true colors but it seemed to be more terrible than most places on earth. YanHong panted and stopped, looking pale, walked back to everyone and whispered, "Sorry, I, I really..."

FaXiang forced a smile, said, "Yan junior sister, it doesn't matter."

Xiao YiCai also said, "That's right, nobody can stand the smell too, you don't have to mind, if you don't feel up to it, why don't you first go out of the valley and wait for us."

YanHong hesitated a moment but shook her head and said, "Let 's go."

Li Xun walked over, faced YanHong and nodded his head, a comforting look in his eyes, quietly said, "Take care of yourself, don't force yourself."

YanHong nodded and promised, Xiao YiCai turned and said, "Alright, let's continue on. We don't know what monster or danger lies ahead, everyone must be careful."

All of them nodded and once again went forward, Lin JingYu was still at the lead, approaching nearer to that col, he held the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand, his palm started to sweat. By now the air was so thick with the stench

smell that it was hard to breathe, Lin JingYu's face turned slightly pale, clenched his teeth, strided across, passed around the corner of the col and saw the scene in the valley.

His whole body instantly turned stiff.

The group behind him immediately noticed his abnormal reaction and could not help but became nervous, Xiao YiCai quietly called Lin JingYu twice but he did not respond at all, only staring ahead. Lu XueQi was the second person to walk over, then Li Xun, YanHong, Xiao YiCai, FaXiang and FaShan, one by one they passed through the col, saw the scene in the Venomous Serpent Valley.

Then, everyone of them was stunned.

That would probably be the legendary Asura Hell, such a terrible scene, appeared under the clear and bright blue sky. Countless bodies inside and outside that residence inside the valley, there were humans, also various demon beasts and monsters, some were complete but many more were limbs and miserable bodies, torn apart until it was unrecognizable, densely packed everywhere, almost to a point where gaps could not be seen.

After composing himself with an effort and walking further into the valley, the scene became more tragic, without even imagining, they could tell the battle was extremely tragic, innumerable bodies and demon beasts' bodies entangled together, the land under their feet had all turned completely deep black, that was the colour after being dyed with blood.

Walking into that residence, inside and outside every room, entrances to critical tunnels, they could see the remnants of the tragic battle, in some places corpses piled high up, apparently to fight over this small entrance, the two

parties advanced waves after waves desperately fought, stepping over their comrades' bodies and wrestling tirelessly.

In the courtyard, the group began to see a few demon beasts' bodies which were huge in size, some even bigger than the residence but these once savage and ferocious beasts, could only now lie quietly in this mortal hell, waiting to rot.

The stink of the corpses in the air had reached a terrible degree but the Good Faction disciples instead seemed better than before, because the tragic scene before them made them more indifferent to this stench, just that, no one looked fine, no matter who it was, these people's countenance looked almost the same as the dead.

They continued deeper into the residence, more bodies appeared before them, and now nobody knew, just how many Evil Sect disciples and demon beasts died in this valley, they walked almost subconsciously in, walked, walked...

Every one of their faces were wooden, every one firmly held their own magical weapons, refused to relax even a little, after passing innumerable bodies, they came to a mourning hall.

The reason they could tell it was a mourning hall because they saw a coffin in this room, and in this room, the battle seemed to be the most intense here, describing it as the bodies piling as high as a mountain did not seem exaggerating. It was also here, the group discovered many of the familiar Evil Sect bodies: Bai DuZhi, Blood-Sucking Vampire, Elder Duanmu...

These once all-powerful, invincible Evil Sect people, at the moment died with grievances hiding in this place, many of them still had fear on their faces.

Anyone could imagine but nobody wished to, what kind of scene they witnessed before they died!

As their investigation deepened, Xiao YiCai and the other slightly older ones in succession found even more famous Evil Sect figures, including God of Poison three disciples, many important figures from HeHuan Sect. However for Ghost King sect, although most of the dead disciples were wearing Ghost King sect uniforms but very little of the well-known figures were found.

Everyone slowly gathered to the front of the hall, saw each other's countenances, Xiao YiCai hoarsely said, "A lot of people died here, the important figures of Evil Sect are all here, seems like all of Wan Du Clan are dead."

YanHong who was beside was deathly pale, said quietly, "It is the same over there, many were dead from HeHuan Sect, even San-Miao Madame is too, too there..."

Lu XueQi's face was pale, her teeth clenched tightly together, her expression complicated, she looked like she could not bear, looked disgusted too, and for some reason, fearful. As the last person to join the group, she suddenly said, "Saw any of the Ghost King sect people?"

Everyone shook their heads together and then was startled slightly, Li Xun who was standing beside looked even more terrible. Xiao YiCai glanced at him, spoke to Lu XueQi, "Many of the dead are Ghost King ordinary disciples but seems like did not see...well-known figures' bodies."

Lu XueQi's expression relaxed slightly but Li Xun's eyes suddenly glimmered,

coldly said, "Xiao senior brother, have you forgotten that these beasts devour humans, on the way in, we saw many white bones, who knows those Ghost King sect evildoers, would they have been..."

"Wa!" A cry interrupted Li Xun's words but it was YanHong who could not bear it, ran to a corner and vomited again, Li Xun was startled for a moment then sighed and stopped talking.

FaXiang looked like he could not bear to, with FaShan together chanted quietly, all of them knew, although Li Xun's words were harsh but the possibility was high. Xiao YiCai, Lin JingYu and the rest had complicated expressions, slowly looked down, only Lu XueQi's face was bleak, her pale face without a trace of color, even her body trembled involuntarily.

But this delicate and cold woman did not look down, she slowly looked up to the sky, in that limitless clear sky, even the clouds above the valley looked blood-red.

Lu XueQi's lips moved, looked as if she wanted to shout out something, but, eventually not a sound!

Chapter 154 - Unfilial

Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, Crystal Hall.

"What?" with an incredulous cry, Reverend DaoXuan exclaimed, "The three main Evil Sect branches after the battle with the demon beasts, the entire force annihilated?"

Standing below three people who were the current Good Faction leaders and with many seniors standing or sitting beside, Xiao YiCai, FaXiang, Lu XueQi and the rest of the Good Faction disciples who had returned to Qing Yun Hill, did not speak, only the lead Xiao YiCai affirmatively nodded, said, "Yes, Teacher, the seven of us witnessed it ourselves, in the southwest Venomous Serpent Valley corpses lay everywhere, too horrible to look at, the Evil Sect indeed suffered a heavy blow, including SanMiao Madame and etc HeHuan Sect, Wan Du Clan many of the public figures, we have already found their corpses, only the main figures from Ghost King sect were not found but perhaps because of the fact that the demon beasts devour humans so..."

Lu XueQi who was standing behind turned pale again, as if this matter and that tragic scene had been constantly on her mind, impossible to get rid of, however in any case, right now she was able to control her own emotions and her face did not give much away, others did not seem to notice anything, only ShuiYue Master who was sitting in front of the crowd, this person who had brought up Lu XueQi, noticed that the ice-frost indifferent face of Lu XueQi, seemed to show some distress.

ShuiYue Master's brow wrinkled slightly, gently sighed, did not speak.

At the moment the crowd in Crystal Hall was in a commotion, their voices getting louder and louder, looking at the faces of these Good Faction elites, some were surprised, some fear and many more had mixed expressions, delight and shock, come to think of it, it is also true, the Evil Sect and Good Faction had been foes for unknown number of years, the Good Faction's several attempts to exterminate them were unsuccessful, unexpectedly this time they were wiped out by the demon beasts in one fell swoop, it was really a pleasant surprise. But since the Evil Sect was able to hold their own against the Good Faction, their forces naturally could not be underestimated but they had such a tragic fate against the demon beasts, those seated were not fools, anyone could also infer, the next target of the demon beasts must be Qing Yun Hill where the world's Good Faction convened.

And now the world's last hope, the Good Faction, would they be able to block this unprecedented catastrophe?

Nobody's heart knew the answer!

The three giant pillars of Good Faction who were sitting at the forefront, Reverend DaoXuan, Pu Hong Master and Yun YiLan, after quietly discussing for a period, all were frowning, then

Reverend DaoXuan spoke some words, Pu Hong Master and Yun YiLan nodded their heads, indicating their agreement. Following which Reverend DaoXuan stood up, coughed once.

The private discussions in Crystal Hall immediately toned down, everyone looked towards Reverend DaoXuan, Reverend DaoXuan's face was solemn, until the crowd completely

quietened down, in a heavy voice said, "Various fellow friends, everyone has

heard the incident clearly just now. The Evil Sect has unexpectedly fall, it is completely out of our expectations but as for the details, whether there is still any evildoers who made it out of that battle, we still have to investigate thoroughly, however right now that matter is not important anymore."

His face grim, eyes glinting, not of anger but of power, solemnly said, "Various fellow cultivators, now that the catastrophe is right in front of us, the common people in misery, the demon beasts evildoers' might, is really unsettling. But we as the Good Faction people, there is no reason for us to retreat anymore. This matter is complicated, I and Pu Hong Master and Yun valley master wish to have a good discussion and then decide. Everyone also please go back first, take a good rest, the great battle most likely is near, at that time, for the common people, depends on everyone to give their best!"

The crowd nodded and answered, Reverend DaoXuan revealed a trace of a smile, Pu Hong Master and Yun YiLan also stood up, walked to the rear rooms, Reverend DaoXuan was about to follow along when suddenly he thought of something, spoke to Xiao YiCai, "YiCai, you too come along, tell us again in detail about the situation."

Xiao YiCai acknowledged, strided up, followed behind Reverend DaoXuan into the rear quarters.

In the Hall after these three revered elders left, immediately became bustling with noise and excitement, the crowd formed small groups, discussing spiritedly, other than Xiao YiCai who had followed Reverend DaoXuan in, the other six disciples who had went to the southwest, were all crowded around, the people speaking at the same time, enquiring about the details, at times exclaimed out, shook their heads, sighed etc various different kinds of expressions and sounds.

And in the crowd, Lu XueQi had remained silent, her eyes indifferent but she seemed not to see those faces in front of her, instead staring at some distant place.

Suddenly a stir went through the crowd and then a path was made out, Small Bamboo Valley head ShuYue Master walked in, WenMin and other beautiful Small Bamboo Valley female disciples followed along. Lu XueQi recovered her senses, saw her teacher before her and staring at herself, her lips moved, quietly called out, "Master." Then, lowered her head.

ShuiYue Master's face was expressionless, said, "Sect Head Reverend is discussing with the other seniors on this matter, there will not be any other matters here for the time being, you will follow me back to Small Bamboo Valley first."

Lu Xueqi nodded, whispered, "Yes."

ShuiYue Master, ignoring the rest, headed first out of the Crystal Hall, Lu XueQi following. Qing Yun factions heads' reputations were not trivial, the other Good Faction members mostly were very respectful of her, all made way to let out a path. Looking at Lu XueQi about to follow her teacher out of the Hall, Li Xun who was standing at a side had a trace of anxiety on his face, stepped one foot out and was about to say something when suddenly a silhouette blocked in front of him, Li Xun was taken aback and upon closer look, it was ShuiYue Master's eldest disciple, WenMin.

WenMin smiled and said, "Li senior brother, XueQi junior sister must be very tired from her travel, better let her have a good rest. And this time she was away for quite some time, my teacher must have a lot to say to her."

Li Xun glanced at WenMin a few times, a disappointed look on his face but eventually still stepped back, said, "Alright but like to request WenMin senior sister to please take good care of ..."

Before Li Xun could finish, WenMin smiled and said, "Li senior brother please be assured, XueQi and I are same sect sisters, we are closer than real siblings, what must be done or said, I will naturally do and say."

Li Xun's face reddened, nodded his head and no longer spoke, retreated to the side, WenMin with a few other female disciples, also walked out of the Hall, very soon, Qing Yun Hill Small Bamboo Peak group of people had already disappeared before the people's sights.

X

x

x

Along the way they rode the clouds and mounted the mist, from TongTian Peak back to Small Bamboo Valley. After ShuiYue Master landed, her face aloof, did not speak to anyone and walked directly to the Small Bamboo Valley Hall, the group respectfully stood at where they were, watching their teacher.

Until their teacher's figure disappeared into the building, Lu XueQi's eyes looked lost, standing motionless at where she was, until WenMin patted her shoulder.

WenMin's eyes carried a trace of worry, whispered, "Junior sister, what happened to you, look at how lost you are and didn't respond even calling you a few times?"

Lu XueQi was startled for a moment, a trace of a smile forced out, said, "I'm sorry, senior sister."

WenMin shook her head, said, "Why are you saying sorry to me? We are all sisters, don't have to be so formal. Oh right, I noticed something off with teacher's expression, I will go to take a look at her, you too had a long journey, go back first to take a good rest."

Lu XueQi was silent for a moment, quietly said, "I'm afraid teacher is still mad at me."

WenMin looked at this most beautiful and most talented junior sister of the same faction, suddenly felt that on her pale face, although still as beautiful but looking thinner and pallid than before. WenMin sighed in her heart, hugged Lu XueQi's shoulder, softly said, "Silly girl, don't think foolish thoughts, how teacher has always treated you, we and you yourself know it. It will be alright, I will go take a look now."

Lu XueQi silently nodded, WenMin smiled, left some instructions with the other junior sisters and was about to leave when a girl walked out from the door ahead, it was that young girl XiaoShi on the night where Ghost Li had secretly sneaked up to Small Bamboo Valley, because of her young age and meagre cultivation, therefore she had always stayed on Small Bamboo Valley, ShuiYue Master found her intelligent and lovely and so kept her around her.

XiaoShi glanced over their direction, with quick steps walked over to WenMin and Lu XueQi. WenMin with a "Ai", until XiaoShi reached them, said, "XiaoShi, why did you come out, didn't teacher just returned? You should go wait on her."

XiaoShi nodded, glanced at Lu XueQi, said, "Big senior sister, various senior sisters, teacher wants me to come over and ask XueQi senior sister to go to 'Quiet Bamboo Pavilion' to see her."

WenMin was surprised, turned back to look Lu XueQi, Lu XueQi's lips moved, a complex expression passed her eyes and then said: "Alright, I will go now." After speaking, she walked straight ahead and soon disappeared into the buildings.

WenMin looked while Lu XueQi left, brows frowning, spoke to XiaoShi, "XiaoShi, did teacher say anything else, why did she ask XueQi to go over?"

XiaoShi shook her head, "Nope, after teacher came back, she kept to herself, after a while she told me to ask XueQi senior sister to see her."

WenMin with a "O", for the moment also could not deduce the reason, shook her head, spoke to the other junior sisters, "Alright, it seems like there is no other matters, all of you go back first and rest."

The group of women acknowledged and started to leave, WenMin glanced towards the direction that Lu XueQi left, felt a heavy feeling in her heart, for a moment a mixed of emotions welled in her heart.

"Quiet Bamboo Pavilion" was located at a secluded area of the Small Bamboo Valley's buildings, near the rear of the mountain, surrounded by verdant Tears of Bamboo, when the mountain breeze blew from time to time, the bamboo leaves gently shook, giving one a meditative feeling. ShuiYue Master liked to come here, staying by herself, therefore the other Small Bamboo Valley disciples were very familiar with this place.

Lu XueQi walked past the corridor, stepped onto the path made out of smooth small stones in the bamboo forest, meandering along the way, deep into the bamboo forest, soon arrived at the fine house made from bamboo, from the outside it looked simple, the outer walls made from beads, experienced countless of storms and time, right now had a faint mark of age. On both sides of the house, the small windows were opened and indistinctly could see the meditating silhouette of ShuiYue Master.

Lu XueQi walked to the door, at the same time using the door made out of bamboo as a cover, for some reason, she felt a little nervous and inhaled deeply once, said, "Teacher, I am XueQi, did you call me?"

ShuiYue Master's voice was heard from the house, calm and emotionless, "Yes, come in."

Lu XueQi bestirred herself, pushed the door and went in. The furnishings in the room were very simple, table and chairs and tea sets, a desk beside the window, paper, ink pen and ink on it, ShuiYue Master was a person who did not like luxury. Right now she was sitting before the desk, quietly watching the bamboo forest outside the window.

Lu XueQi walked to her back, watching ShuiYue Master's back figure, quietly said, "Teacher."

ShuiYue Master unhurriedly turned around and looked at Lu XueQi, Lu XueQi seemed unwilling to meet her teacher's eyes and lowered her head down. Teacher and disciple, both of them, nobody spoke, the atmosphere in the room turned somehow awkward. Actually, ShuiYue Master and Lu XueQi were both people not with many words, this kind of situation had also happened when they were alone together but somehow, this time today, between the teacher and her disciple, there seemed to have another strange unfamiliar feeling,

distancing each other further than before.

After a while, ShuiYue Master broke the silence, her voice calmly asked: "This time you went to the southwest, along the way was it smooth-sailing?"

Lu XueQi nodded her head and said, "It was still alright, along the way the demon beasts were rampant but we all tried our best to avoid them and finally found a crazed Evil Sect disciple, which we then found the Venomous Serpent Valley, saw ..."

Her voice suddenly stopped, a trace of visible pain flashed past her face, even her body also seemed to tremble. ShuiYue Master looked at Lu XueQi, her eyes glimmering, as if she was contemplating something, after a moment, she looked at Lu XueQi, said, "Have you seen him?"

Lu XueQi was stunned, looked at her teacher, ShuiYue Master although her expression was calm but she seemed to have seen through to her heart. Lu XueQi's expression changed, quietly said, "Teacher, what, what are you saying?"

ShuiYue Master coldly said, "I am referring to Zhang XiaoFan, who is also the current Ghost Li in Ghost King sect!"

ShuiYue Master's voice was not loud but to Lu XueQi, it was as if a thunder beside her ear, she abruptly lifted her head up, her face pale but the bright stare of her teacher standing before her was still staring at her eyes. Lu XueQi's lips opened and closed, closed tightly together, did not speak a word.

Silence, once again descended.

Time passed, ShuiYue Master's expression also slowly relaxed, her eyes while looking at Lu XueQi, also gradually had pity and pained expressions.

"Qi'er, how long are you going to lie to me?" ShuiYue Master looked at Lu XueQi, slowly said.

Lu XueQi's hands clenched tightly into a fist, the fair skin due to the force exerted turned white around the joints, it was clear at this moment, she was also extremely agitated. Just that looking at her mentor who had brought her up, her eyes gradually misted but in the end she with an effort held it back, clenched her teeth, she slowly knelt down, before ShuiYue Master.

"It is disciple's fault, let down teacher's teachings." Her voice became smaller and smaller, her delicate back also seemed to be gently trembling.

ShuiYue Master heaved a long sigh, her eyes full of vicissitudes of life, as if from this disciple, she recalled back her past, even her own expression also had grief. She slowly turned and walked to the window, looking out to the green bamboos, swaying in the wind, just that that person, would he still remember this place?

"You can get up." ShuiYue Master faintly said.

There was no movement behind her, apparently Lu XueQi was still kneeling on the ground.

ShuiYue Master did not insist further, said, "Qi'er, you have been extremely bright, some things I thought even if I do not say it out, you should know."

Lu XueQi kneeling behind her, was motionless. ShuiYue Master continued, "You being entangled with that Zhang XiaoFan, for you, this is still a ill-fated relationship, do you know?"

Lu XueQi quietly acknowledged, her voice almost indiscernible, said, "Yes."

ShuiYue Master unhurriedly said, "Moreover Zhang XiaoFan has already betrayed the Good Faction, devouring blood and turning evil, this decade his actions, I do not have to say more on this to you. To tell you the truth, between you and him, right now has become the talk of the town, even your sect head teacher uncle DaoXuan also knows about it, just that those elders firstly considered you young and ignorance, secondly your aptitude, intelligence and hard-gain cultivation, again gave you another chance, you must not continue to obstinately persist in the wrong way!" Towards the end, ShuiYue Master's voice gradually turned urgent and harsher.

Lu XueQi's face turned paler but for some reason, her body stopped trembling.

ShuiYue Master's face slowly softened, turned and helped Lu XueQi up, gently said, "Qi'er, you are my most beloved disciple, in the branch, even among the entire seven branches younger generation of disciples, you have the highest aptitude of cultivation Tao, your future has boundless prospect. I have very high expectation of you, you know?"

Lu XueQi whispered, "Yes, teacher."

ShuiYue Master looked at her, said, "With your aptitude, in the future the leader of Small Bamboo Valley, naturally would be you, at that time you would be revered by thousands, meditating and comprehending Tao, as such, isn't it

what you have dreamt of in the past?"

Lu XueQi was silent, only bowing slightly, on her beautiful face, other than her pale complexion, was the glint in her bright eyes slowly changing, the misted eyes had already disappeared.

ShuiYue Master sighed, said, "Go back and think about it carefully."

Lu XueQi stood before her but did not immediately turn to leave, instead slowly looked up and looked at her benevolent teacher who had raised her up.

"What is it Qi'er?" ShuiYue Master asked.

"Teacher," Lu XueQi slowly called out, said, "I have let you down."

ShuiYue Master shook her head and sighed, said, "What silly words are you saying."

Lu XueQi looked strange, a trace of agitation appeared on her usually indifferent face, even her breathing quickened. ShuiYue Master very quickly noticed that, frowned and looked at her, said, "What is it Qi'er?"

Lu XueQi, as if turbulent waves were set off in her heart, therefore making the expressions on her face changed but finally, facing ShuiYue Master, she quietly said, "Teacher, you're right, I am really muddle-headed, Zhang Xiaofan and I, I knew too, this is an ill-fated impossible relationship."

A trace of regret flashed past ShuiYue Master's eyes, she gently said, "Qi'er,

return to the shore, as long as you sever the emotions, there is nothing great, at least, you still have teacher and Small Bamboo Valley, and Qing Yun Sect which could still accept you."

Lu XueQi abruptly looked up, the speed astonishing, on her elegant and beautiful face, was full of pain and sadness, even her voice was quivering, "Teacher, but I am unable to sever."

ShuiYue Master's face changed, stared intently at Lu XueQi, suddenly her hand raised and fell, [pa] a sound, giving Lu XueQi a slap heavily. Lu XueQi did not avoid it and did not step back, standing where she was motionless, she only bit her lips tightly, her body slowly trembling.

"You, what did you say?" ShuiYue Master's voice seemed to be also quivering but her words were filled with anger, "You, you this traitorous disciple, do you know what you're talking about?"

Lu XueQi's face had long turned white with not a trace of colour but she still met the eyes of ShuiYue Master, as if determined, determinedly said, "Teacher, you have adopted me since young, raised me up and taught me, my gratitude is deep beyond. XueQi is unfilial, made benevolent teacher to be so angry and upset, deserved to die..."

Her white clothes fluttered, once again kneeled in front of her teacher, said, "XueQi rather die and would not dare to betray benevolent teacher and Good Faction, if in the future I meet that Zhang XiaoFan again, disciple will do my best and take his life with TianYa Sword, if unsuccessful, then disciple will just die by his hands..."

ShuiYue Master started to look enraged but after hearing Lu XueQi's words,

she then slowly calmed down but the following words, made her face changed again.

Lu XueQi kneeled in front of her, breathed deeply, her eyes looking away, at the ground before her, as if into her own heart, slowly said, "But this ill-fated sinful love, disciple is unable to cut if off, no longer able to sever!"

The room instantly turned deathly silent, as if even their breathings also paused, a moment later, ShuiYue Master's sharp stern loud scolding was heard, resounded in this house,

"You, you this traitorous disciple, you get out, get out, I never want to see you again!..."

Chapter 155 - Night Drinks

Majestic Fox Mountain, Icy-cold stone room.

Ghost Li quietly looked at BiYao lying serenely on the ice stone platform, the women in slumber within the curls of the white mist, the corner of her mouth always seemed to be smiling. At this moment, does she still have feelings, does she know someone is beside her protecting her?

Or to say, in her heart, she had never regretted and so therefore she looked so serene while sleeping?

As for these, Ghost Li had asked himself numerous times, he never knew the answer and did not dare to think about it, just that every time he thought of it, he seemed to receive another degree of suffering. However his body right now was getting worse, although because he had practised three volumes of the TianShu true way, these few days he had come to realize that the true ways of Buddha, Taoism, Evil had a way to merge together, his skills improved as the days went by but Sinister Orb's evil power seemed to be circulating in his body every day, like a pestering spirit, waiting for the final moment to perish with him.

That icy-cold feeling, Ghost Li had long been familiar with it, every since from his youth until now, it had always accompanied him! Even if he was to die, he probably would feel the cold like that and die!

He gave a wry smile, finally glanced at BiYao, this was the third day he was guarding BiYao alone.

"You have a good rest for a while, I will come back soon to see you." Ghost Li gently said, "Don't be afraid, your father and I are just temporarily away. Even if I were to die, I will still come back to see you before I die."

He looked at BiYao, smiled gently and then turned and walked out of the stone room. The light white mist floated, like a veil behind him.

[Rumble!]

The heavy stone door slowly closed behind him, Xiao Hui who was long awaiting at a side, jumped up his shoulder. Ghost Li's hand gently smoothed Xiao Hui's head, nodded his head and then walked all the way out. Along the way he would either reach out to the wall corners or after passing through a number of turns activated the traps, the layers of mechanisms in Majestic Fox Mountain Ghost King sect headquarters were all set, just the heavy stone doors, there were already more than ten closing down.

In the Majestic Fox Mountain right now, everywhere was the sounds of traps activating but there was only one human silhouette, Ghost Li, the others had long at three days ago, followed Ghost King into the Wildlands Holy Temple. The Majestic Fox Mountain right now, was empty and lonely, Ghost Li walked out of the mountain body, when the sun shone onto his body bringing a trace of warmth, he could not help but shivered.

[Rumbling ...] The last stone door slowly closed, covering up this huge mountain body, within it Ghost Li heard vague sounds of [Pa Ta] and knew that it was the sound of the trap setting in place, in the future if somebody who do not know how to activate the mechanism, and wistfully intent to force his way in through this more than a thousand jin rock, then he would need skills like a

celestial being in order to do so.

The warm sun shone onto his body, Xiao Hui lying on his shoulder stretched out both of its arms, stretching itself, its mouth yawned. Ghost Li turned to it, smiled slightly, "Why, looking so bored and sleepy?"

Xiao Hui [zhi zhi] called twice, its monkey face showing the whites of its eyes, then it gestured and danced, kept pointing to outside of the mountain. Ghost Li smiled and said, "So you are bored ah, oh, the surroundings here are desolate, not even a few trees, no wonder you feel uncomfortable."

Xiao Hui immediately nodded earnestly, jumped down from Ghost Li's shoulder, [zhi zhi] calling, gesturing with his limbs. Ghost Li inhaled deeply, turned to look back at Majestic Fox Mountain which had by now, already merged with the mountain as one, no visible traces of the entrance could be seen, nodded his head and said, "Well, anyway, we have to wait a month before going in to visit BiYao, taking this time, let's take a walk around here."

Xiao Hui rejoiced, bounced on the ground, grinning broadly. Ghost Li was infected by its mood, his mood lightened, laughed and scolded, "Alright, still not coming up, if not you stay here by yourself."

Xiao Hui's head shrank, [suo] a sound and again up on Ghost Li's shoulder, [he he] smiling. Ghost Li shook his head, a smile on his lips too, his hands moved, a familiar coldness surfaced again, Ghost Li seemed to think of something, hesitated for a moment. Xiao Hui feeling puzzled, [zhi zhi] twice, Ghost Li turned to look at it, then faintly smiled, softly said, "Life is lonely, why bother to think so much?"

Xiao Hui's eyes blinked twice, apparently it did not quite understand the

words, Ghost Li did not say anything more, a flip of his hand, dark-green light glowed, the Soul-Absorbing stick appeared, carrying them a monkey and a human, straight up to the blue sky, leaving Majestic Fox Mountain.

X

X

X

The most populated place on Majestic Fox Mountain, was a small town two hundred miles northeast, called "Three Fortune Town". Three Fortune town population was not much,

but there were a few villages around and so reluctantly, it could also be considered lively. In the past, for the sake of secrecy, the Ghost King sect never bought their food and other daily necessities from Three Fortunes Town, instead they went to the farther town to buy, to prevent the Good Faction or the Evil sect other factions from discovering where the headquarters was. But before the Ghost King sect disciples return to their mountain, many of them would rest at Three Fortunes Town.

In the past, Ghost Li also passed by Three Fortunes Town with Xiao Hui, although not many times but Xiao Hui was extremely clever, it clearly remembered, right now they had just left Majestic Fox Mountain, Xiao Hui waving desperately at Ghost Li's shoulder, kept pointing to the direction of Three Fortunes Town, apparently it wanted to go to Three Fortunes Town to eat and drink. Ghost Li shook his head but did not say anything, turned and headed to the direction of Three Fortunes Town.

A distance of two hundred miles away, to the cultivated Taoist practitioners who could fly, it was not that far. Among the blue sky and white clouds, a flash of dark green light with an indistinct black energy, streaked across the sky.

Xiao Hui crouched restlessly on his shoulder, at times tilting its head, its long tail swayed to and fro, wondered was it that it was anticipating the moment of savouring the delicacies. Ghost Li while wielding the Soul-Absorbing stick, gazed downwards, the area around Majestic Fox Mountain needed nothing more to say, a stretch of desolate bare mountains, after leaving Majestic Fox Mountain range, the terrain was relatively flat but the wilderness, it was the same with no signs of inhabitation, looking down, only a desolate path in the wilderness lonely extended out, wondered where it leads to?

Ghost Li suddenly sighed but did not say anything, only Xiao Hui was slightly weird, took a few more glances at its master.

After flying less than one hour in the direction of northeast, they have already reached the tip of Three Fortunes Town, from far clusters of houses could be seen, Xiao Hui was already excited, [zhi zhi] calling, pointing down. Ghost Li smiled and said, "Alright, we will go down."

The dark green light flashed, a sharp [si si] sound was heard in the sky, descending from the sky, landed on the streets of Three Fortunes Town. However once he landed, Ghost Li frowned. Xiao Hui jumped down from his shoulder, scratched its head, obviously feeling bewildered. After a moment, as if it had sensed something, its three eyes lit up at the same time, [zhi zhi] calling, looking slightly nervous.

The Three Fortunes Town in front of them, looked as if it had turned into an empty town, most of the surrounding housing were still intact, only a few spots looked damaged but the entire town of people had completely disappeared. The deathly silence, shrouded above this small town.

Ghost Li snorted, comprehended in his heart, needless to say, the place's appearance here, most likely was due to the demon beasts catastrophe. The people in the town might have escaped in time to the north, if they were slower, most probably they could not avoid the fate of being food for the beasts. A proper small town and yet turned into this state. And thinking further, on the Divine Land right now, how many towns had this similar fate too?

A wind was blowing from a distance, disturbing up some sand from the streets, in this warm day, the wind seemed to be cold. Xiao Hui seemed to be uneasy, went near Ghost Li, at the same time glancing around, Ghost Li bent over, picked up Xiao Hui, muttered, "It's nothing."

Xiao Hui's eyes blinked, seemed to quieten down with Ghost Li beside, Ghost Li breathed deeply, slowly walked forward, Xiao Hui crawled to his shoulder and no longer made any noise, quietly looked around.

The town other than the sound of the wind, was silent, Ghost Li walked forward, after walked half of the street, saw the doors and windows of various households were shut tightly but some had their doors opened, not sure if it was the demon beast who had barged in. Only that along the way, they did not see any corpse, seemed like the commoners here had ran to the north when they heard the news.

At this time, suddenly a burst of cold wind, a dangling door on the left side of the street with a [pong] sound dropped down, echoed in the empty street. Ghost Li and Xiao Hui turned around and looked at the same time, saw behind the door, an arm fell weakly on the wooden board, unmoving, at the same time a faint smell of blood in the air.

Ghost Li quietly looked for that direction for a while, then turned and continued to walk forward, Xiao Hui instead kept turning back to look at that

arm.

In the past Ghost Li had come to Three Fortunes Town a few times, therefore he was quite familiar with the place. He slowly walked, was silent for a long time and then said, "I remember there is a tavern ahead, let's go there, maybe we can still find something for you to eat."

Xiao Hui [zhi zhi] called out twice.

Footsteps sounded on the street, seemed especially loud, the cold wind blowing in gusts from behind, very quickly, walking along the street, they came to the tavern. The sign of the tavern had fallen from the door, landing face-front on the entrance, covered with a layer of dust. Ghost Li glanced at this wooden board, stepped on it, leaving a footprint behind.

Suddenly, Xiao Hui quietly called out, stared into the tavern, Ghost Li's body suddenly stopped. After a while, a deep roar was heard from the tavern.

Was it demon beast? This was Ghost Li's first reaction but this roar, sounded slightly familiar.

[Roar ...]

Xiao Hui suddenly shrieked, scurried into the tavern, Ghost Li was taken aback, did not know the reason for its agitation but Xiao Hui had always been close to him, and could be said to be his only partner, no matter how he could not allow Xiao Hui to face the mysterious thing alone. Watching Xiao Hui soon disappearing into the tavern, Ghost Li's countenance changed, his body moved, he was already chasing after it.

The next moment, he was in the tavern, after he took a good look at the thing inside the tarven, he could not help but was shocked.

The tavern was in a mess, pots and pans were everywhere, broken pieces piling up, the tables and chairs were also in a disarray, a few were still intact, a thick layer of dust could be seen on the tables. But in such a dilapidated pub, there was a perfect table in the middle, a pot of wine and a few glasses were placed on it, sitting next to it was a young man dressed in bright silk clothing, and on the empty space between he and Ghost Li, a monster and Xiao Hui was facing each other, its looks ferocious and terrible, in its deep roars it had a slight trace of surprise, it was the evil beast "TaoTie".

It was that day in the barren hills and deep forests, that mysterious boy that Ghost Li met.

TaoTie stretched its long neck, staring with its four huge eyes, staring at Xiao Hui but Xiao Hui's expression was not as tense as before, instead it looked happy, [zhi zhi] called out twice, grinning, slowly walked up, wanted to touch TaoTie's head.

TaoTie growled once, apparently unused to Xiao Hui's action, Xiao Hui paused, its three eyes blinked, went around TaoTie's body twice, from the left to the right, and from the right to the left. TaoTie's long neck turned, followed Xiao Hui's body, making a few growls but it sounded not as hostile, obviously towards this three-eyed monkey, TaoTie had some good feelings, just that not sure if it was because it had met a greedy guy like it which was rare and therefore looking at it with a different look...

By then that youth also saw Ghost Li, remained seated but his expression also looked startled, evidently he did not expect to meet Ghost Li here. But his expression soon resumed, smiled and nodded to Ghost Li. Ghost Li was not any

less surprised and had more doubts on this young man's identity, to be able to appear in this dead town's tavern, without asking, this person's origin could be deduce, extremely strange.

At this time Xiao Hui had already went near TaoTie, suddenly opened its mouth and laughed, stretched its hand to explore, patted a few times on TaoTie's head. TaoTie made a low growl, its four eyes staring at Xiao Hui, looking ferocious but Xiao Hui looked not a bit afraid instead was amused, patted a few more times, made a strange and a funny [pu pu] sound.

TaoTie seemed helpless against the monkey, made a snort and lay down, no longer minding Xiao Hui. Xiao Hui seemed to like this strange monster, went near TaoTie and touched here and there, extremely affection.

That mysterious youth looked away from the two spiritual beasts, looked at Ghost Li, smiled and said, "Seems like they really got along well."

Ghost Li nodded and smiled too.

The young man patted the chair next to him, said, "Actually we can be considered quite fated, the Heavens and Earth are so huge and we actually meet here. Brother why don't you come over here and sit, let's drink a cup and also chat a bit."

Ghost Li glanced at Xiao Hui and TaoTie, saw that Xiao Hui's attention was all on TaoTie, said, "Alright", and walked slowly over but to another side and took a chair, sat at the other side of the table.

That young handsome face had a faint smile, reached for a clean cup, placed

before Ghost Li, then filled it up with wine, smiled and said, "Brother came to this deserted town, wonder what it is for?".

Ghost Li did not answer, looked at the young man, quietly said, "Then what are you here for?"

The young man smiled and said, "I passed by here and discovered that it still has a few glasses of wine remaining, and so rested here for a moment, enjoying the wine by myself".

Ghost Li turned to look at Xiao Hui, said, "If I said I was also bringing this monkey to look for wine here, do you believe it?"

That young man was surprised, looked at Xiao Hui, suddenly laughed out, clapped his hands said, "Believe, why not! Come come come, you and I drink up, life is lonely, it is rare that there is still a person with affinity, in the desolated secluded corner of the ends of the earth, looking for wine together".

Having said that, he raised his glass to Ghost Li and then drained it. Ghost Li looked at him intently, slowly repeating the words, "Life is lonely, he he, life is lonely..."

He suddenly laughed out, that laugh was full of vicissitudes of life, raised his glass and downed it. A fire-like taste of wine, from his throat straight to his abdomen, the wine on this desolate town, was actually this strong.

The young man laughed, "How is it?"

Ghost Li looked up, reached over for the wine jug, filled up the two glasses,

said, "Good wine!"

The young man smiled deeper, slapped the table, laughed and said, "Good, it is really a good wine." In his laughter, the young man's expression gradually looked excited, suddenly loudly recited:

:

"The past feelings, vicissitudes of life,
Do you still remember, the broken-hearted person.
White hair withered lamp going to the ends of the earth,
A reign of loneliness for hangover..."

Until the end, his voice gradually turned desolate, his face also somewhat looked lonely. After he finished, he looked down and was quiet, Ghost Li quietly looked at him, downed the glass of wine before him.

X

x

x

Night, the cold wind gradually picked up, the lonely town made [wu wu] sounds, like someone quietly crying in the distant.

The night was dark, black like dark waves, swallowing the great earth. The monkey fell asleep on TaoTie's body and that ferocious animal at the moment was also lazily lying on the ground.

In the tavern, everywhere was dark, Ghost Li and the young man sat in the darkness, no one had the intention to get up and look for the candle.

Perhaps in the dark, they seemed to be more comfortable.

All day long, they sat face to face like that, occasionally exchanged a few irrelevant conversations, occasionally drank a few glasses of wine, and most of the time, seemed like they brought up each other's past, remained silent, contemplating their past.

In such a cold night, in the desolate corners of the ends of the earth, two strangers seemed like they have known each other for their whole life, indifferently getting along.

Chapter 156 - Former Residence

Morning, it was another new day.

At the Three Fortunes Town entrance, Ghost Li stood face to face with that young man, Xiao Hui on his shoulder, the evil beast TaoTie followed behind the young man, a bored expression on its face.

.

The young man glanced at Ghost Li, smiled and said, "What a rare opportunity for us to meet, after today, we do not know when we will see each other again, brother do take care."

Ghost Li lightly said, "You too!"

The young man seemed to recall something, said, "Now that the world is in chaos and the situation in the north seems to be getting more tense, don't you intend to go up north to take a look at the fun?"

Ghost Li slightly surprised, could not help but take another glance at the young man, saw his composed expression without any subtle meaning, pondered for a moment and said, "I'll see first! Why, are you interested in those killings and fights too?"

The young man smiled but did not answer, only cupped his hands together, said, "The roads to the ends of the world are long, the world is filled with hardships and dangers, let's meet again if we are destined to."

Ghost Li returned the gesture, said, "Yes."

The young man laughed and turned away, TaoTie made a low growl, it seemed to be informing Xiao Hui too and then followed along. Crouching on Ghost Li's shoulder, Xiao Hui seemed reluctant, called out a few times at TaoTie's back figure. In a short while, that mysterious young man and TaoTie's figures disappeared.

.

Ghost Li looked at the direction where they had gone, was silent for a moment and then slowly turned around, the silent Three Fortunes Town before him, not a single sign of life. Xiao Hui clicked its tongue twice, grabbed that wine bag on its back and drank two mouthfuls, last night from the tavern's cellar, this monkey actually again found some alcohol.

"Let's go Xiao Hui!" Ghost Li suddenly calmly spoke.

Xiao Hui [zhi zhi] called out twice, its monkey hand fiddling with Ghost Li's hair. Ghost Li gazed far into the distant, after a long time, quietly said, "Over there, was where we had once lived together, do you still remember?"

The monkey did not answer, nobody knew if it understood, just that on this completely cold deserted street, a cold wind seemed to blow past...

Qing Yun Hill, Big Bamboo Valley.

The head of Qing Yun Hill Big Bamboo Valley, Tian BuYi, at the moment was alone in Observed Silence Hall with his hands clasped behind his back, pacing back and forth. His mood was extremely foul, faint traces of anger showing on his face and with a hint of irritability. His kind and understanding wife, SuRu, at

the moment was not in the valley and instead had went over to Small Bamboo Valley ShuiYue Master there, as for his disciples who had always been respectful to him, saw his mood and had long avoided the place, the only disciple who could still put in a word most of the time, Song Daren the eldest disciple, at the moment also could not be seen.

Tian BuYi knew the reason, now that the world's catastrophe had arrived, nobody knew when those horrible demon beasts would attack, he as one of the leaders of Qing Yun sect, naturally was troubled over it. But it was also because of this, after repeated persuasion from his wife SuRu, for his disciple Song Daren's happiness, Tian BuYi finally at three days ago made a trip to Small Bamboo Valley, to propose marriage for Song Daren and WenMin.

Unexpectedly, ShuiYue Master, like she had swallowed some gunpowder, exploded at one go, even disregarding SuRu who was there, not to mention her distressed disciple WenMin who was beside, immediately rejected and coldly, sarcastically mocked Tian BuYi.

With Tian BuYi's temperament, how would he not be angered, there and then had an altercation with ShuiYue Master and almost came to a fight, in the end, SuRu barely pulled him back to Big Bamboo Valley and ShuiYue Master was also stopped by her group of disciples who kneeled and held her back.

After the commotion, Song Daren was naturally extremely depressed, a look of dejection, all day long his face was like a bitter gourd. Tian BuYi who was already in a foul mood, saw his expression and was even more infuriated, scolded him in succession several times, said that so what if he did not have a wife, he just has to devote himself to cultivation, in the future who knows maybe he would instead have blessings in disguise *etc.*

Song Daren naturally did not dare to contradict his mentor but although his

mouth was answering obediently, his disapproval expression was written on his face, clearly he was still thinking of WenMin. Tian BuYi was even angrier upon seeing it, scolded him even more harshly, until in the end Song Daren, like a mouse terrified of a cat, hid here and there the whole day, did not dare to see his teacher again.

This day SuRu left early, specifically told Tian BuYi to go Small Bamboo Valley himself to persuade ShuiYue Master, Tian BuYi snorted a few times, coldly made some snide remarks about ShuiYue Master, Su Ru ignored him, went off straight, leaving Tian BuYi to fume by himself. However before she left, SuRu privately spoke a few words with Tian BuYi and made him understood somehow the reason why ShuiYue that woman was so unreasonable that day.

SuRu actually said it very simply, only said, "I heard that the day before we went over, that is the day when Lu XueQi returned, ShuiYue senior sister summoned her alone and they talked for quite a while, in the end for some reason, not only Lu XueQi was reprimanded heavily, even the other disciples were also admonished."

Tian BuYi might looked stiff but he was definitely not a slow person, after a moment he comprehended the reason behind it but just that after SuRu left, each time he recalled himself going over by his own volition and being insulted, he really could not take it down and fumed with anger.

The Observed Silence Hall right now was silent, only the sounds of Tian BuYi's pacing footsteps, his expression too slowly changed with his movements, for some reason, in the end, his expression turned rather odd, as if he had recalled some things. The incident where Lu XueQi rejected the marriage proposal in TongTian Peak, he was aware of it, and the rumours regarding the most outstanding disciple of the younger generation, Lu XueQi, Tian BuYi had also heard about it.

Just that his concern deep inside his heart, was the other person in those 'rumours'.

"Ten years already." He sighed softly, looking distracted, sometimes even he himself felt a little strange, the disciple who looked so unremarkable, what exactly was the reason, that made himself worried for so many years?

Tian BuYi made a bitter laugh, shook his head, at this moment, as if he suddenly sensed it, frowned and looked out of the Observed Silence Hall, in the distant a tearing sound from the sky was heard. Tian BuYi contemplated for a moment, composed himself and walked out.

A white light was only seen streaking past the sky above Big Bamboo Valley, as fast as lightning, directly headed for the summit of Big Bamboo Valley, landed six feet in front of Tian BuYi, the brilliant dazzling light wavered and dissipated, revealing Qing Yun sect TongTian Peak Xiao YiCai.

Xiao YiCai turned, a smile on his face, cupped his hands together and said, "Greetings to Tian teacher uncle."

Tian BuYi nodded and said, "Hm, why did you come, is something up?"

Xiao YiCai smiled and nodded but following which he looked around, feeling slightly surprised, said, "Tian teacher uncle, why is it so deserted here, where are your other disciples! Why are they not here?"

Tian BuYi thought in his heart, "If you can see them then you must be seeing ghosts, one by one hiding off somewhere." But his expression was nothing like

that, indifferently said, “They are all doing their homework so did not come out. Here is unlike your TongTian Peak, crowded with people, it is common not to see anyone around.”

Xiao YiCai was stunned, he could hear that Tian BuYi seemed unhappy but he was shrewd enough and appeared not to notice, smiled and said, “Oh, so that’s the reason. Tian teacher uncle, disciple is here today because my benevolent teacher tasked me to come and pay a visit to teacher uncle, there are some questions to seek your guidance on.”

Tian BuYi frowned and was nonplussed, asked in surprise, “Seek guidance from me, what guidance? Senior brother DaoXuan is celestial pedant with unequalled merit good fortune, what is there to ask this good-for-nothing junior brother?”

Xiao YiCai smiled but did not speak, only looked at Tian BuYi. Tian BuYi understood and said, “Then let’s go in and speak!” After speaking, he turned and was about to head into the Observed Silence Hall, Xiao YiCai following behind him. Suddenly Tian BuYi paused, abruptly turned around but it was towards the direction of his disciples’ residences.

Xiao YiCai felt puzzled and also glanced towards that direction but did not see anything, could not help but asked, “What is it Tian teacher uncle?”

Tian BuYi hesitated for a moment, shook his head and said, “Nothing, I must have seen wrongly, how could he...” He suddenly coughed, lightly said, “Let’s go in and talk!”

Xiao YiCai, feeling lost, took another glance towards that direction but only saw the neat rows of houses, silent, couldn’t look anymore normal. He did not

give it much thought and only followed Tian BuYi into the hall.

The two figures disappeared into the Observed Silence Hall, the quiet atmosphere again enveloped the mountains of Big Bamboo Valley. After a period of time, suddenly in the corridors of that stretch of houses, a silhouette flashed, it was Ghost Li, he silently gazed towards the direction of Observed Silence Hall for a moment and then turned and following a once extremely familiar winding corridor, unhurriedly walked in.

Probably because this was in the afternoon! Not a single disciple was seen, in his memory, the most often heard sounds other than junior sister Tian LingEr's crisp and clear laughs, would be Du BiShu's shouts with a tinge of dejection, because he must have lost another bet. Then, big brother Song Daren and the rest deep and resounding laughs would be heard, the other senior brothers would also add on their jokes and for that most unremarkable little disciple! Most likely would also be smiling in one of the corner?

Not long after, the past, in the unhurried footsteps sounds, gently flipped over, those old stories as if engraved in every tile, pillar and buildings, echoed beside him.

Initially Ghost Li's face was dazed, gradually it changed, the ice-like expression quietly receded, the past was actually this soul-stirring, even after many years he still could not forget it.

If, if... if everything had not changed...

He stood in the faint sunlight of the corridor, slowly sat down onto the low railings, the warm and pleasant sunlight shone onto his face, like a decade ago.

There were footsteps and conversations, travelling far from the back, approaching, it was Big Bamboo Valley fourth disciple, He DaZhi and sixth disciple, Du BiShu. Two of them walked side by side approaching and when their figures appeared, Ghost Li had already like an apparition, suddenly disappeared, the mountain breeze blew past, the trees and vegetation swayed, nobody knew where exactly he was hiding.

He DaZhi and Du BiShu obviously did not notice anything, both of them whispering and slowly walked past, Du BiShu was also carrying a wooden bucket, filled half with water, a rag draped beside, like he was going somewhere to clean up. And they walked forward and soon arrived at a door of a house, Du BiShu shrugged his shoulders at He DaZhi, He DaZhi smiled and both of them went in together.

A moment later, Ghost Li appeared from another corner of the winding corridor, his eyes' expression complicated and looking ahead. The room that the two people who were once his senior brothers entered, was actually his when he was still Zhang Xiao Fan Big Bamboo Valley most junior disciple. However, that house should have been abandoned for many years, why did the two senior brothers still go in?

Ghost Li quietly drifted over.

Suddenly, like sinking into an old dream, he stood nonplussed at the door, in this little courtyard, everything was exactly the same as before, there was still a narrow path made of crushed stones, there was still verdant green grasses, even that small pine tree, was still growing there, just that over the years, it had already grown much sturdier.

The sound of water was heard from inside the house, following which Du BiShu and He Dazhi's voices were heard, "Fourth senior brother, why don't you

try to explain, after so many years, why does teacher still want us to clean up this house? Isn't this deliberately trying to make me suffer!"

He DaZhi scolded laughingly, "Stinking brat, you are trying to loaf on the job again right, I am telling you first, teacher is still fuming over big senior brother's matter! You better don't provoke him, if not teacher would for sure skin you alive."

Du BiShu [he he] laughed drily, said, "Senior brother you are joking with me again, how would I dare to provoke teacher. Just that little junior brother has already left for more than a decade, yet teacher still order us to maintain this place as it is, cleaning it every day, I really do not know what is he thinking in his heart?"

That figure standing outside the house, stood erect stiff, slowly lowered his head.

From the house, He DaZhi was silent for a while and instead sighed, quietly said, "Although teacher never talked about little junior brother all these years but we all know that in his heart, his favorite is junior brother Xiao Fan."

Du BiShu's voice said, "Yes! This I can tell too, to tell you the truth, sometimes I also missed little junior brother. But what use is that, little junior brother right now has already become another person, don't tell me he would still return to Big Bamboo Valley, again become Zhang Xiao Fan, and be our seventh junior brother? ..."

Outside the window, Ghost Li's expression turned more and more indifferent, his body was still straight, just that his two hands, were clenched into a fist, gripping tighter and tighter.

Can we turn back?

The steps that you strided in the time, the roads that you have crossed, many years later, do you still remember to look back? Do you still want to go back?

The warm sunlight on his body, yet felt like being cast in ice!

He DaZhi and Du BiShu also turned silent, as if inadvertently this topic, made them also felt heavy and wordless. After tidying up for a while, carrying a bucket out, He DaZhi gently shut the door, he watched the green grasses in the small courtyard, the pine tree swaying, although the scenery had a look of spring but it always had some feeling of loneliness. As if without the owner of the house, even the scenery of spring also turned pale.

He shook his head, sighed and left with Du BiShu.

After a long time, Ghost Li from behind that pine tree, slowly walked out. The familiar mountain breeze blew past his face, ruffling his hair. He walked to the room door, raised his right hand and placed it on the door.

His movement was very slow, very slow, as if his hands were heavily leaden, even his face expression, he looked like he couldn't breathe. However, that strange inexplicable feeling, like an invisible force, finally pushed opened the door!

--- Just like, opening a window of the past, looking into the past time.

That familiar bed, that familiar tables and chairs, as well as what was hanging on the wall, after those years the painting of Tao character already had a slight decayed yellow color, even the kettle and cups, looked exactly the same!

Who would know, this simple and plain room, how many times had it appeared in his dreams? Even the smell of the air here, also seemed to carry a faint smell of the past. He slowly walked into the room, went to the bed and slowly sat down, gently stroked his bed bedding, the soft feeling, traversed from his palm.

Who would see, him suddenly biting on his lip, that hard, that deep!

In the Observed Silence Hall, Tian BuYi and Xiao YiCai sat down together, Tian BuYi looked unsettled, facing Xiao YiCai but his eyes were looking at another direction, as if contemplating something. Until Xiao YiCai coughed once and called out, "Tian teacher uncle."

Tian BuYi like being awoken, nodded his head and said, "Um, alright, say it! What does senior brother DaoXuan want that requires you his favourite disciple to especially make a trip down?"

Xiao YiCai smiled and said, "You flatter me, It is like this, benevolent teacher has two things, wish to ask Tian teacher uncle through disciple."

Tian BuYi said, "Oh, say it."

Xiao YiCai said, "Firstly, the number of Good Factions fellow members coming to Qing Yun Hill is still increasing, the other branches have already received quite a number of people, TongTian Peak has also arranged hundred over fellow friends to stay in the houses at mid-level of the mountain. However, even it is so, the residences are still not enough, so teacher wanted disciple to entreat teacher uncle, possible to arrange more of the Good Faction friends on Big Bamboo Valley?"

Tian BuYi's eyebrow twitched, glanced at Xiao YiCai, Xiao YiCai looked a little awkward but still with a courtesy smile, said, "Teacher uncle, this is also for the imminent catastrophe, a last resort, and our Qing Yun sect has always considered ourselves as the leader of Good Faction, we can't push our fellow friends out of the door right?"

Tian BuYi snorted, said, "Don't treat me as a fool, those so-called righteous fellow friends, when it is really time to fight those demon beast monsters, those that can really contribute is less than thirty percent, most of them probably only because of our fame, ran over here to take refuge."

Xiao YiCai gave a wry smile, said, "Tian teacher uncle over exaggerate but even if it is so, we can't push them out of the door, if we really do so, how would the world look at our Qing Yun? For the sake of the overall situation, would have to request Tian teacher uncle to render more help."

Tian BuYi rolled his eyes, suddenly seemed to think of something, his eyes suddenly lit up, a mocking smile revealed at the corner of his mouth, coughed once and his face revealed a righteous awe-inspiring expression, said, "Since DaoXuan senior brother also said it like this, I shall not decline further, anyway it is for the world Good Faction and the current situation, then let's do it that way!"

Xiao YiCai was overjoyed, cupped his hands and said, "Thank you teacher uncle."

Tian BuYi smiled then suddenly raised his hand and said, "Just a minute, I have not finished."

Xiao YiCai was startled for a moment, said, "What? Tian teacher uncle please

say.”

Tian BuYi smiled, said, “Since the calamity is imminent, everything should be for the sake of the current situation. I heard among our seven branches, there is still one branch, er, seems like the branch which has more female disciples...”

Xiao YiCai who was initially smiling, his face already stiff halfway, gradually could not smile anymore.

Tian BuYi naturally smiled by himself, said, “I remember in that branch, their terrain vast and a few days ago I have been there, the number of empty houses are innumerable! Why is it that sect head senior brother who has been brilliant his entire life, did not even think of this place?”

Xiao YiCai forced a smile, after a long while said, “Tian teacher uncle, this, this...”

Tian BuYi snorted, his plump face looked up to the sky, silent. Xiao YiCai saw his expression, secretly shook his head and could only said, “Yes, after disciple returns today, will take it to report to benevolent teacher and ask him to make a decision.”

Tian BuYi did not speak and his expression also did not change, only nodded his head but he was feeling delighted in his heart, laughing secretly inside.

Xiao YiCai composed himself for a moment then said, “Then Tian teacher uncle, there is the second thing but more important than the matter just now, teacher has also repeatedly reminded, for teacher uncle to think carefully before answering.”

Tian BuYi saw Xiao YiCai's serious face, greatly different from before, evidently this matter was not something trivial, could not help but feel stunned, nodded and said, "Oh, what is it that is so serious, say it."

Chapter 157 - Paying Respect

Xiao YiCai lowered his voice, his expression turned slightly solemn, said, "Asking teacher uncle on teacher's behalf, the 'Heaven Secret Seal' behind Big Bamboo Valley, is it still safe and sound?"

Tian BuYi's expression changed, suddenly stood up, stared at the Xiao YiCai, Xiao YiCai also slowly stood up but took a step back instead. Tian BuYi watched Xiao YiCai for a while, his face's expression constantly changing, initially was shocked and surprise, slowly after calming down he looked to be contemplating and finally a strange glint seemed to flash past his eyes, he looked at Xiao YiCai, suddenly said, "Seems like senior brother DaoXuan really intended to pass his position of sect head to you in the future."

Xiao YiCai slightly bowed, said, "Teacher uncle overstates, disciple dare not."

Tian BuYi indifferently said, "He even told you this matter, his intention is obviously very clear. Forget it, this is TongTian Peak's matter, I can't be bothered too. But regarding the Heaven Secret Seal, " he paused, in a deep voice said, "This is no trivial matter and even concern Qing Yun destiny, at that time Qing Ye Founder once commanded the Qing Yun seven branches leaders, not to use unless out of absolute necessity..."

He took a deep breath, said, "The implications of it, all of us understands it very well. I just want to ask one question, does DaoXuan senior brother really thought about this carefully?"

Xiao YiCai's expression at the moment was also very solemn, after

deliberating for a long time as if he dared not say the wrong word, nodded and said, “Yes, before disciple left, teacher had already solemnly instructed disciple.”

Tian BuYi after contemplating for a moment, said, “Other than TongTian Peak and Big Bamboo Valley, what about the other five branches ‘Heaven Secret Seal’?”

Xiao YiCai respectfully said, “For this matter, teacher has only told disciple and no others, because teacher thinks that in Qing Yun sect, Tian teacher uncle is the most prestigious and noble, therefore especially came here first to seek teacher uncle’s opinion. As for the other five branches, disciple will pay a visit to the various leaders later.”

Tian BuYi slowly nodded and sat back down, after thinking for a long time, he sighed and said, “The situation before us, has indeed come to a critical juncture, the fate of the common people are all depending on this war, if sect head senior brother wishes to go all out, I have nothing to say too. Just that after you go return, please relay one sentence to him for me.”

Xiao YiCai looking respectful, said, “Yes, Tian teacher uncle please say, disciple will definitely convey it.”

Tian BuYi’s face slightly pale, said, “Once the seven branches Heaven Secret Seals are removed, the vicious energy that Qing Yun Hill suppressed for thousand years will inevitably be released, although there is still Zhu Xian Ancient Celestial Sword’s energy to hold it and turn it into an unparalleled killing intention but the severe damage to the sword-holder, corrodes the foundation of the cultivation, it is not a laughing matter. DaoXuan senior brother’s skills are exquisite and deep but this is a serious matter, it is better to ask him to consider carefully, to guard against the unexpected.”

Xiao YiCai seriously said, “Yes, Tian teacher uncle's words, disciple will

definitely convey it.” After pausing for a moment, he continued, “Then if Tian teacher uncle has no other matter, disciple will first make a move.”

Tian BuYi nodded, did not speak. Xiao YiCai saw his heavy mood, did not dare to speak more, slowly retreated out.

In the Observed Silence Hall, only Tian BuYi was left. He slowly turned around, looked at the Taoism San Qing Founder deity statue worshipped in the Observed Silence Hall, his expression complicated, after a long while he only sighed and did not say anything.

When Xiao YiCai flew back to TongTian Peak, it was already night, lights lit brightly on TongTian Peak, so it was many of the senior Qing Yun sect disciples, including the numerous Good Faction members who had came to Qing Yun, turning this paradise-like place into a slightly crowded and secular place.

However Xiao YiCai did not have the mood to bother about these, he went straight to the peak where Crystal Hall was, after asking the whereabouts of Reverend DaoXuan from Qing Yun junior disciples in Crystal Hall, he headed for Reverend DaoXuan’s room at the inner quarters of Crystal Hall.

Coming to a secluded area of the rear rooms, Xiao YiCai stood before Reverend DaoXuan’s room door, composed himself and was about to knock when Reverend DaoXuan’s voice was heard from the room, saying, “Is it YiCai, come on in.”

Xiao YiCai was nonplussed for a moment, immediately respectfully said, “Yes.” Then gently pushed opened the door and went inside.

The room was very spacious, all of the furnishings had a scholarliness quality, other than a simple table, chairs and bed, were numerous books on the

bookshelves placed at both sides of the room, many of which were old books but were neatly placed on the shelves, they looked like they had been read many times by their owner.

Reverend DaoXuan was sitting beside the study desk, his hand holding an old scroll, was reading it when he saw Xiao YiCai came in, he smiled and said, “You are back only now?”

Xiao YiCai respectfully bowed and said, “Yes, teacher.”

Reverend DaoXuan nodded his head and said, “How is it?”

Xiao YiCai said, “The seven branches’ leaders did not have any objection, all said to follow teacher’s intention, only Big Bamboo Valley Tian teacher uncle...”

Reverend DaoXuan frowned and said, “Why, what different opinion does Tian junior brother has?”

Xiao YiCai quickly said, “It is not so, Tian teacher uncle did not object too, he only requested disciple to relay a few words to teacher.”

Reverend DaoXuan was slightly surprised, said, “What words, tell me?”

Xiao YiCai repeated what Tian BuYi said, Reverend DaoXuan was silent after listening, Xiao YiCai secretly sneaked a glance at him, Reverend DaoXuan’s expression looked complicated, he seemed to be thinking about something.

While Xiao YiCai was trying to guess what Reverend DaoXuan was thinking when Reverend DaoXuan suddenly said, “YiCai, what do you think of Tian

teacher uncle this person?”

Xiao YiCai was surprised and did not know the subtle meaning of Reverend DaoXuan’s words, he looked at him but did not see anything particular and so could only cautiously said, “Hm, disciple thinks, Tian teacher uncle this person...is actually quite nice.”

Reverend DaoXuan smiled, apparently was not bothered by this disciple tricky words, leisurely said, “Ah yes! He is a good man, he he, it must have been difficult with his looks at that time, his extraordinary talent could actually be discerned by someone...”

Reverend DaoXuan’s words suddenly stopped, the room submerged into silence, Xiao YiCai moved his body slightly, felt somehow uneasy.

A moment later, Reverend DaoXuan said, “You have been out for a day, and must be tired, go back and have a rest.”

Xiao YiCai nodded, bowed and said, “Yes.” Then slowly backed out.

Reverend DaoXuan watched his favourite disciple’s figure gradually disappeared, was silent for a moment and then again viewed the dark black sky outside the window, slowly stood up and walked out, soon, his figure merged into the dark night of Qing Yun Hill.

.

Although it was late at night but at the Founders Ancestral Hall at the secluded back of TongTian Peak, the altar lamp was still burning in the dark, like an otherworldly fire. The old man who was keeping watch over the hall was still up, right now he was standing before the offering table for Qing Yun Hill

generations of ancestors tablets, staring at the names within the dark shadows

Distantly, low insects cries were heard.

In the silence, there seemed to be heartbeat sounds!

The night breeze blew past, the altar lamp fire flickered, trembling like breathing, the old man slowly turned around, walked to the altar lamp, gently blocked the incoming wind, soon, the fire quietened down and started to burn steadily again. The old man gazed at this light, the light reflected in his eyes, like something was burning.

In the middle of the night, footsteps sounds were suddenly heard, the old man's brows wrinkled slightly, carefully listened and then slowly turned around, his old voice unhurriedly said, "Didn't expect that you will still come at such a late hour."

Reverend DaoXuan's figure, slowly emerged from the dark and walked into the Founders Ancestral hall.

In the dim light, the two elderly men met across each other, for a moment was stunned, caught unaware and suddenly realized, that the other party was actually so old and then thought, isn't he himself also the same case?

Reverend DaoXuan was silent, stared at that old man for a long time and then slowly came to the table, stood under the Qing Yun sect generations of ancestors' tablets, slowly straighten his body. The old man walked to his back and was too silent.

In the dark, invisible dignified aura emitted slowly from those, like deep scars that time could not erase. Reverend DaoXuan expressionless, picked up three incense sticks from the table, walked to the candle and lighted them, holding solemnly with both of his hands, respectfully bowed three times to the ancestral tablets and then stepped forward and inserted into the incense burner.

The faint smoke, curled up from burner, diffused in the mid-air, making those ancestral tablets looked even more hazy, indistinctly like a pair of eyes, coldly looking at these two old men and this world.

“Offering incense in the middle of the night, is there any difficult problems?” The old man asked indifferently, his tone flat, like he was talking about something that had nothing to do with himself.

Reverend DaoXuan did not look back at him, his eyes staring at those dignified tablets behind the faint smoke, a moment later, he slowly said, “Say, after we have passed on, when the later generations offer sacrifices to us, what kind of feelings will they be having?”

The old man grunted, said, “For you, naturally it will be full of reverence, as for me, will anyone still remember me?”

Reverend DaoXuan did not take offence on the elderly’s slightly sarcastic words, only faintly smiled. Then he quietly said, “Now that the catastrophe is before us, the world is plunged into misery, suffering from the rampant actions of the evil beasts. When I think of the inevitable war between Qing Yun and the evil beast, and the world’s fate is at risk, all of these heavy responsibilities on my shoulder, I have not slept well for many days.”

The old man brow frowned, said, “You are not complaining to me right? This

is not like you.”

Reverend DaoXuan looked at the old man a moment, suddenly laughed out and then sighed, “You and I our hundreds of years of friendship, it is only you who know me best.”

The old man shook his head and said, “I know you? If so, I will not be here guarding the ancestral hall. Alright, let’s not talk superfluous words, what exactly are you trying to say?”

Reverend DaoXuan seemed to be particularly tolerant of the elderly man, he retorted several times but DaoXuan did not mind, looking slightly solemn, he slowly said, “I have already decided, the implications of this battle is too great, for the survival of the common people, I want to remove the Heaven Secret Seals of the seven mountain summits of Qing Yun.”

That old man's face suddenly froze, his brows frowning deeply, looked intently at DaoXuan, DaoXuan looked frankly back at him, after a long time later, the old man slowly said, “This matter, you have thought over it carefully?”

DaoXuan slowly nodded and said, “But today when I secretly informed the other six leaders, Tian BuYi requested someone to convey some words to me, advised me to be careful of the vicious energy backlash.”

The old man smiled coldly, turned to face those ancestral tablets, after a long while, said, “It’s not like you have not entered Illusory Moon Cave before, what is inside, you know if yourself.” His voice suddenly turned gentler, also with a trace of helplessness, said, “Look out for yourself!”

Reverend DaoXuan did not speak, a moment later too raised his head, watching the shadows in the darkness, that silent dignity, seemed to be mocking silently in the dark.

Seven days later, the areas around Qing Yun Hill, started to have more and more news of the demonic beasts, within a radius of hundred miles, with HeYang City at the foot of the mountain as centre, everywhere refugees could be seen. As if right now the world, only that towering and lofty Qing Yun Hill, could give some comfort and security feelings to the people.

And in the hubbard of the crowds, HeYang City was the most chaotic, the streets were full of people, the city's inns were long full, the incoming refugees could only sleep in the open. Under such circumstances, the city's food supply had become extremely tight, fortunately the city was beside the river, they did not have to worry about the water supply.

Actually under such chaotic situation, it would be difficult to ensure that there would not be looting and murder and other bad things and the fact was, from time to time there was really such news, the previous day who and who had disappeared and today someone's corpse was on the street. But HeYang city was after all at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, Qing Yun Hill had also made some early preparations, dispatched a considerable number of disciples in the city to maintain order so in general those numerous refugees in this catastrophe, were still safe.

But, following the rumours of the demonic beasts spreading worse and worse with each day, who could predict what tomorrow would be like? Under these circumstances, HeYang City's atmosphere became more and more uneasy.

And also in such circumstances, Zhou YiXian who roamed the JiangHu together with his granddaughter, Xiao Huan, and Wild Dog Taoist, came to this

city. Standing in the streets which used to be spacious, right now they could only see dense population of humans heads moving, it was crowded to the point where it was hard to even walk, Wild Dog Taoist was still alright but Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan was dumbfounded.

Relying on Wild Dog Taoist's sturdy body and fierce looking face, he opened the way for them, those weaker ones were pushed aside, those stronger ones who saw Wild Dog Taoist's face when they turned around, most did not dare to say anything. Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan followed Wild Dog closely, managed to move forward, sweating profusely along the way and finally passed through this street, into another small alley on the west side of the city.

The three walked on, although the secluded alley right now was also full of people but compared to the big street outside, here could said to be spacious. Zhou YiXian cursed softly, looked extremely pissed, forget it that I this old man have to run for my life, why are there so many people too running for their lives, in the end make me this old man so uncomfortable while running for my life and so on.

The alley was very long, twisted and turned, lesser and lesser people headed in, after walking about an hour, the three of them reached the end of the alley. There was no longer any refugees in this area, the reason was very simple, because there was morgue here but looking at this small morgue derelict courtyard, even half of its wooden door had fell to the ground, the other half missing, not sure if it was taken by people for firewood.

Zhou YiXian looked at this morgue, shook his head, sighed, Xiao Huan stood beside him, whispered, said, "Grandfather."

,

Wild Dog was puzzled but he came from the Evil Sect and was not bothered by these ominous morgue, feeling slightly bewildered that Zhou YiXian and Xiao

Huan would come to this place.

Zhou YiXian after a long while, said, Let's go in! Anyway, this place should be relatively quiet."

When he finished, he first went inside, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog followed behind. They saw in the small courtyard, trees and grasses bleak and desolated, remnants of wood shavings and roof beams could be seen lying disorderly everywhere, there were some white stuffs in the grasses that glimmered. Xiao Huan looked pale and could not help but pulled Zhou YiXian's clothes.

Zhou YiXian turned and looked at her, quietly reassured her, "It's not the first time here, what are you afraid of, besides here is where your father lives, will he harm us?"

Xiao Huan nodded, her face looking better, Wild Dog Taoist frowning at the back but did not say anything.

Ahead of the courtyard was the door to the morgue, Zhou YiXian went up and saw the door was covered with dust, just how long did no one come, he did not speak, shook his head, another sigh and opened the door.

[Zhi ya...] the wooden door made a harsh sound, slowly retreated inside, a moldy smell assaulted them, in the dim light, three coffins were lying disorderly but the coffins' covers had already dropped to the side.

The years of desolation, as if in this small room, slowly emitted out. Zhou YiXian's mouth twitched, his face bleak, slowly walked in, disregarding those coffins, he walked straight to the offering table, looked at the spiritual tablets

that were lying disorderly.

The room was quiet, it seemed that no one dared to speak. Zhou YiXian slowly stretched his hand out, picked up the tablets and slowly wiped the thick layer of dust, placed it beside and then found another one, and so on, when he cleared the seventh spiritual tablets, saw that the tablet read

[Tablet of Beloved Son of Zhou Xing Yun].

Zhou YiXian stopped, silently looked at the tablet, after gazing for a long time, Xiao Huan slowly walked over, saw the tablet in his hand, teared and quietly said, "Grandfather, keep father's spiritual tablet properly away!"

Zhou YiXian heaved a long sigh, his face looked desolate, nodded his head. Xiao Huan took the tablet from his hands, carefully placed it on the table and then stepped back, placed her hands together, respectfully bowed to the tablet, quietly said, "Father, I have come with grandfather again to visit you, these few years thanks to your blessing, although grandfather and I roam the world but everything is good. Today we came back to clean you up properly, hope you will not blame us."

She then respectfully bowed three times.

Wild Dog Taoist watched from the back, suddenly came to the front and also bowed three times to the tablet, Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan were instead shocked, Xiao Huan exclaimed, "Priest, why did you..."

Wild Dog Taoist did not look at Zhou YiXian's strange expression, said, "Since he is your father, he is also my senior, coming here, paying respect to senior, it is ought to."

Xiao Huan then felt relieved, nodded and said, "Then I thank you." She turned to the tablet and said, "Father, this is Wild Dog Taoist, he is a good man and gave a lot of help to grandfather and me."

Zhou YiXian snorted, said, "Is he considered a good person, [snort snort], harbouring evil intentions..."

Wild Dog Taoist's expression froze but Xiao Huan had already glared at Zhou YiXian, said, "Grandfather, how can you talk nonsense."

Zhou YiXian rolled up his eyes, turned around to look elsewhere, Wild Dog Taoist gratefully looked at Xiao Huan and was about to speak when suddenly his body stiffened and he abruptly turned around, Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian seemed to sense something, almost at the same time looked towards the entrance.

In the desolate quiet morgue, at the entrance, suddenly a man in black appeared, even his face was also veiled in black, an unexplainable weirdness. The ambience created by Zhou YiXian and the rest, right now with the appearance of the man, suddenly sank into a even deathly silence.

Wild Dog Taoist's expression changed greatly, his lips moved a few times and finally slowly hoarsely said, "Mr Ghost..."

Chapter 158 - Night Exploration

The black-attired person standing at the entrance was indeed the mysterious figure of Ghost King sect, Mr Ghost. Wild Dog Taoist after being subdued by Ghost Li, stayed at Ghost King sect for a period of time and had at least seen Mr Ghost a few times, although as to what kind of person Mr Ghost was, he still knew very little but he clearly understood the fact that that person's status was not low and not one that could be mentioned in the same breath as him.

Now that he encountered this person at such place out of a sudden, how would Wild Dog Taoist not be shocked. Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan did not know the identity of this mysterious man in black but looking at the faint look of fear on Wild Dog Taoist face, expected that this person most likely was not a good person and could not help but tense up.

Mr Ghost paused in his drift, he did not expect that there were people in this secluded unfortunate place and one of them even recognized him, he could not help but be startled, a moment later he took a good look at the three people, especially at Wild Dog Taoist, Mr Ghost then calmed down. He assessed Wild Dog Taoist and again at Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan and finally back to Wild Dog, his calm voice, said, "Are you Wild Dog Taoist?"

Wild Dog Taoist had seen this Mr Ghost several times previously and usually behind Ghost Li in Ghost King sect, looking at this mysterious black figure from afar, now that Mr Ghost was right in front of him, it was the first time. When he heard Mr Ghost speaking and actually recognized himself, he could not help but was startled, paused for a while before saying, "Yes."

Mr Ghost faintly said, "Aren't you always with Ghost Li GongZi, why are you at this place, and who are these two people?"

Wild Dog Taoist wanted to ask him back, why couldn't he come when he himself could be here but he didn't dare to speak it out, only quietly said, "I, I separated from Ghost Li and will go look for him soon. These two are my friends."

Mr Ghost's words were insipid, as if totally ignoring Wild Dog Taoist's tone of emphasis, whether intentionally or not, on 'Ghost Li' these two words, said, "Oh, oki but you still have not say, why are you here?"

Wild Dog Taoist was speechless for a moment and did not know how to explain, instead it was Zhou YiXian who was watching Mr Ghost for a while, spoke, "It is because this old man me has a relative's spirit tablet here, we came to pay our respect."

Mr Ghost's gaze concentrated and then saw, behind the three of them, a derelict spirit tablet was erected on the altar table, a few words were written on it: Beloved son Zhou XingYun Memorial Tablet. Mr Ghost nodded and then pondered a moment, the gleam in the eyes behind the veil seemed to be flickering, unhurriedly said, "Since you all have already paid your respect, this place is after all for spirits tombs, it is not advisable to stay for a long time, better quickly leave."

Wild Dog Taoist turned to Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, he was clearly unwilling to stay a minute longer with this ghostly figure and with Mr Ghost's words, seemed like if it was not because of Ghost Li, he might used his skills to retain them. But even though it was so, Wild Dog Taoist was not sure if Zhou YiXian understood that they could not afford to offend this person and when he glanced over just now, Zhou YiXian had deep affections for his son who died

young and now that out of a sudden someone abruptly issued an order for the guests to leave, with his usual temperament, not sure if he would explode with anger.

Sure enough, when the Wild Dog Taoist turned back to look, his heart suddenly sank, Zhou YiXian was still fine, his face tight and seemed to be contemplating something, his eyes too seemed to be strangely wandering around , Xiao Huan's graceful face instead revealed anger, obviously infuriated by this man in black's words, her mouth opened and she seemed about to rebuke.

Wild Dog Taoist panicked, sweat appeared on his forehead, crying in alarm in his heart, while he was panicking, suddenly Zhou YiXian stepped forward, walked to Xiao Huan and blocked her, Xiao Huan was about to speak and got a shock, said, "You this...eh, grandfather, what are you doing?"

Zhou YiXian glanced at Mr Ghost who was standing at the entrance like a ghost, indifferently said, "Nothing, we came to only visit your dad, since we have already paid our respects, let us go, anyway we don't have anything to do here."

Xiao Huan was nonplussed, for a moment speechless, Wild Dog Taoist heaved a sigh of relief, his heart which had jumped to his throat returned to its place, hurriedly walked forward, said, "Yes, yes, we better quickly leave."

Xiao Huan was a clever girl, comprehended the situation and did not insist, nodded her head. The three of them hastily packed up their things, with Wild Dog Taoist leading, walked to the entrance, Mr Ghost quietly let out a path, drifted into the dim area of this tomb place, looking like an spectre.

The three of them quickly walked out of this house, the sun shone down on them once again, after a few steps, the door behind them was heard closing by itself without any draft, making an eerie sound of [wu wu] and with a [pong] shut close.

After walking with quick steps and leaving this morgue far behind, almost not in their line of view anymore, the three of them then stopped, Wild Dog Taoist and Zhou YiXian heaved out a long sigh at the same time, Xiao Huan glanced at them, frowned and said, “What happen to both of you, why so afraid?”

Zhou YiXian ignored her, pondered with his head bowed and then raised his head up and spoke to Wild Dog Taoist, “I heard you called him something Mr Ghost, who is he?”

Wild Dog Taoist hesitated for a moment, said, “He is the most mysterious figure in Ghost King sect, like an honoured elder figure, usually he is always with Ghost King, I am not sure too what kind of person is he but he is definitely not an ordinary figure.”

Zhou YiXian frowning tightly, did not speak, Xiao Huan felt puzzled, her grandfather seldom went into deep thoughts, could not help but curiously asked, “Grandfather, what is it, do you feel that this person is strange too?”

Zhou YiXian slowly nodded, his speech slow and serious, said, “This person is indeed not a simple person, we cannot underestimate him. And just now in the house, did you all notice at the right hand corner, three chi away from the wall, what is it?”

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were stunned, carefully recalled but it was still Xiao Huan who was more detailed, frowned and said, “Grandfather, I

remembered other than the coffins lying in a mess there, there isn't anything else."

Zhou YiXian coldly snorted, said, "Right, it is coffins."

Wild Dog Taoist asked in bewilderment, "What is strange about coffins, that is a mortuary, naturally there are coffins."

Zhou YiXian rolled his eyes at him, said, "What do you this good-for-nothing know, of course the other coffins are not important but there is one coffin that is different from the rest, it is not only cleaner with less dust than the rest, its position facing the north and south are extremely accurate, and especially its location, is at where the Yin energy is densest in that mortuary."

Zhou YiXian's expression became more serious and said, "Actually I too did not thought about these, that coffin was not that conspicuous but when Wild Dog first called out that Mr Ghost, my heart jumped and I secretly observed the house's unearthly fengshui and really, it showed me some hints, I'm afraid this person is really from the The Way of Ghost and uses the Yin energy to recuperate." However, Zhou YiXian looked bemused, slowly bend his head, perplexedly said, "Just that although the cultivation ways in the Evil Sect are mostly unusual but this kind of forces of evil skills, seems to be more commonly seen in southern border shaman witchcraft, how can it be that this person has it?"

Wild Dog Taoist suddenly interrupted and said, "That is not necessarily so, there is an old fellow in Wan Du Clan named Blood-Sucking Demon, other than his famous blood-sucking skill, doesn't he also knows 'Five Ghost Govern Spirits' formation?"

Zhou YiXian with a [pei] sound, said, "Don't try to act like you know, that

useless Blood-Sucking Demon fellow learnt some short-changed skills from somewhere, forcibly captured some innocent spirits and then deliberately acted mystery to deceive people, when it was time to really use it, most likely he would be struck down once he uses his skills. The southern border shaman witchcraft is extensive and profound, and has even more exceptional achievements in The Way of Ghost faction, how can it be mentioned in the same breath as that useless thing!”

Wild Dog Taoist was stunned but recalling back, he felt that it was really as what Zhou YiXian had described, the person that Blood-Sucking Demon ambushed on the road was that Qing Yun disciple, Zhang Xiaofan, when he first used the Five Ghosts Govern Spirits, his formation was broken inexplicably by Zhang Xiao Fan, although the situation was rather bizarre and weird and Zhang Xiao Fan’s weapon was sinister but in any case it was because the Blood-Sucking Demon was useless. As such, Wild Dog Taoist could not help but felt somehow disdained towards that Blood-Sucking Demon and had forgotten how he had struggled and begged for mercy from him.

Xiao Huan standing beside him, frowned and said, “Grandfather but however, father's spirit tablet is still in the house, now that there is a monster inside, will it be alright?”

Zhou YiXian slowly shook his head, said, “Your father had passed away for many years, this instead doesn’t matter but in there after all is where your father’s spirit tablet is, I only have one son, I cannot just ignore it.”

Wild Dog Taoist was startled, stared and said, “What did you say?”

Zhou YiXian snorted and said, “Naturally I want to go back and take a look again, I cannot just leave like this.”

Wild Dog Taoist's face turned pale for a moment, angrily said, "That is someone you nor me can afford to provoke, do you know?"

Zhou YiXian with a [pei] sound, ignored him, muttered to himself, "According to logic, this type of martial artist from The Way of Ghost, the Yin energy at night is the strongest, it is also the best time for him to recuperate quietly, if we were to explore, it is best to do it during the day. Just that since we encountered him, we can't go back this early, we better wait for the night."

Xiao Huan nodded, said, "Alright.", and then thought of something, turned and spoke to Wild Dog Taoist, "Priest, why not you don't come along, grandfather and I, because of my father's spirit tablet which is still there, we are really worried and therefore we have to go back."

Wild Dog Taoist, after being looked at by Xiao Huan's bright eyes, was about to speak with his mouth opened, suddenly shut his mouth, after a long while, said, "Let's go together."

Xiao Huan was surprised but still smiled and said, "Oh is it, he he, Priest, you are really a good man."

Wild Dog Taoist was silent, Zhou YiXian who was beside, [he he] sneered, his tone seemed to suggest something else.

And so the three of them waited in this secluded alley, initially they could still see a few human figures from a distance but as the day turned night, even those few shadows also gradually disappeared, most likely it was because of the mortuary.

When the night finally came, the HeYang City which was bustling for the whole day, the people shrouded in fear of the calamity, finally passed another day, tired, the people in every corner of the city, carrying their fear and at loss for the future, quietly fell asleep, who would bother about things happening around them?

There was no moon in the night sky, dark clouds heavy, HeYang City appeared to be a blanket of dimness, only at the distant horizon, there were one or two weak stars, facing each other from a distance, emitting faint lights. The night wind blew, carrying a trace of chill and cold, making a thin whining sound, quietly blowing past the top of the city.

The three of them quietly came to the entrance of the mortuary at the end of the alley, under the dim light, they could vaguely make out the derelict entrance walls, the cold wind [sou sou] blew, there seemed to be a chilly wind blowing constantly from within. Zhou YiXian's neck shrank, seemed like he was cold, Wild Dog Taoist beside him also had the chills in his heart but he quietly looked to the side, saw Xiao Huan's graceful figure was just standing beside him, her face also tensed and watching the darkness ahead, Wild Dog Taoist's initial cowardice, disappeared without a trace.

Zhou YiXian watched that darkness for a long time, he seemed to be contemplating something, after a long time turned around, took out a few yellow paper charms from his bosom, twisted obscure drawings indistinctly could be seen drawn on it, unable to see clearly what they were exactly in the darkness. Zhou YiXian passed two to Xiao Huan, hesitated for a moment, stretched his hand and also gave two to Wild Dog Taoist, whispered, "These two spiritual charms, the big one keep it concealed close to your body, it can ward the ghostly energy from invading the body, the small one keep it in your hands, if things go wrong, immediately recite the incantation and you can escape."

After speaking, Zhou YiXian quietly told them the incantation, Xiao Huan most likely had already knew the incantation, nodded and looked relaxed but Wild Dog Taoist instead felt overwhelmed, he had never heard those strange incantations, not only it was a mouthful to say, it twisted and turned, extremely difficult to memorise. Wild Dog Taoist almost doubted, if really something were to happen, before he could finish reciting, he would already be dead in Mr Ghost's hands.

But whatever it was, although he didn't know if Zhou YiXian, this JiangHu scammer's magic would work this time, Wild Dog Taoist in the end still memorized with his heart, after about the time to brew a cup of tea, he finally managed to remember this mouthful of incantations.

Zhou YiXian listened to Wild Dog Taoist's recitation of the incantation, nodded his head in indication, this time while teaching Wild Dog Taoist the skills to escape, it was rare to see him not losing his temper, not sure if it was because he himself knew the incantations were too hard to remember. Zhou YiXian composed himself, pointed in the direction of the mortuary entrance, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist both nodded at the same time.

Zhou YiXian inhaled deeply, then slowly moved his feet forward, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist followed behind him, they could only see darkness ahead, an unexplainable strangeness. And at this tense moment, suddenly behind them in a distance, faint sounds were heard.

[Zhi zhi, zhi zhi...]

The sound was similar to the cries of the insects on normal days, Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist did not mind it but Xiao Huan suddenly shook, whipped her

head around, looked behind, her abrupt action shocked the two men, thinking something had happened, quickly turned around to investigate but found nothing behind.

Zhou YiXian asked in surprise, “Xiao Huan, what is it?”

Xiao Huan’s expression was uncertain, looked a little strange too, hesitated for a moment, said, “Grandfather, I, I seem to hear Xiao Hui calling.”

Zhou YiXian frowned, said, “Xiao Hui, what Xiao Hui...” His voice suddenly froze, whispered, “You mean that monkey beside Ghost Li?”

Xiao Huan nodded but her face looked slightly confused, slowly said, “But now there is no sound, have I mistaken it?”

Both Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist looked far into the small alley and saw only darkness, where are Ghost Li and Xiao Hui’s shadows?

Zhou YiXian stared at Xiao Huan, Xiao Huan turned red, turned over, for some reason, she looked dazed, wonder what she is thinking about?

Wild Dog Taoist saw it, an inexplicable expression flashed past his dog face, slowly lowered his head.

Zhou YiXian said, “Alright, don’t imagine things, let’s go in.”

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist nodded. The three of them walked gingerly to the entrance of the derelict entrance, saw that in the small courtyard, the vegetation withered, extremely dilapidated, everywhere was darkness and

nothing there but it seemed like behind every shadow, there was a pair of cold eyes looking at them.

The cold wind blew, it was really an uncanny, unearthly ghostly atmosphere.

Zhou YiXian swallowed his saliva, lightly walked in. Their footsteps stepped onto the grasses in the courtyard, in the silence, though they were extremely careful but they still made very light footsteps sounds, resounded in their own ears, it seemed to be louder many times more than in the day.

As they went near that mortuary, their heartbeats could not help but palpitated, Xiao Huan even wondered how could her heartbeats be so loud, afraid that others might hear it too.

And it was also at this time, the house which was pitch dark, a sound, although light but right now like thunder in their eyes, suddenly started, a burning ball of fire, lighted up suddenly, and that fire colour, was an uncanny faint dark green...

, , ,

Chapter 159 - The Way of Ghost

Zhou YiXian and the rest were shocked, in this unearthly night in an instant they felt, the rays behind them were like stabs, even their hairs were standing up. That bit of dim dark-green other-worldly fire in the house, was quietly burning, from the gap between the house it slowly illuminated, an unexplainable mystery, even the night breeze around them sounded more and more like ghost wailings.

While the three of them were non-plussed and thought they were being discovered by the person in the house, that dim dark-green fire after being lighted was quiet and did not have any reaction, the three of them outside the house did not even dare to breathe out loud, after a long time, after confirming that the dim dark-green fire did not lighted up because of them, they were then secretly relieved but what followed after that, was curiosity mixed with fear.

Zhou YiXian frowning tightly, contemplated for a moment, made a gesture to Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist and then quietly moved forward, came to the side of the house. This mortuary had been abandoned for many years and had long been falling apart, he easily found a gap and crouched down, looking carefully into the house, Xiao Huan And Wild Dog Taoist also followed over, crouched down beside him and each found a gap to look quietly.

In the middle of the dark house, a dark green fire was giving out light, that fire was not any oil lamp fire, it was a tiny ball of light suspended in mid air, like a flame quietly burning. Mr Ghost figure was not seen in the house, only under the faint dark-green light illumination, the abandoned coffins looked especially creepy.

Outside the house, Xiao Huan's face turned more pale, her teeth gently biting her lower lip, looking up, on that altar table, Zhou YiXian's son, Zhou XingYun's memorial tablet was still there, the other tablets were still the same, lying scattered on the table, clearly although Mr Ghost was here but he had no interest in those tablets.

Zhou YiXian was relieved, seemed like when he saw his son's memorial tablet was safe and sound, he could laid down his worries. Xiao Huan suppressed her voice, whispered, "Grandfather, what do we do now?"

Zhou YiXian was not those chivalrous heroes, tonight risking his life here, was all for his son's tablet, now that he found out Mr Ghost had no interest in this tablet, his son was safe and sound, naturally he did not wish to stay any longer, furthermore the place was eerie and naturally not suited for Zhou YiXian, who knows if it would hinder his cultivation.

Since he had decided, Zhou YiXian turned and quietly said, "Let's go!"

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog both nodded, the three of them were about to turn to leave but unexpectedly at this moment, Zhou YiXian feeling relieved, did not pay attention to his footsteps, when he turned, he kicked something like a stick on the ground and immediately it rolled out from the courtyard, making a loud sound.

The three of them froze, Xiao Huan angrily said, "Grandfather!"

Zhou YiXian was full of embarrassment, while he was about to make up some excuses, suddenly a cold sneer was heard from behind, like a bone-penetrating cold, the decrepit wall behind them, suddenly collapsed, the darkness and dark-green light instantly surged out from that house, soon to envelope them three.

Zhou YiXian became pale, suddenly raised his hand, waved the yellow charm, anxiously said, "Quick go!"

His mouth urgently chanted, a series of strange sounds from his mouth, at that moment when the dark-green light touched his body, Zhou YiXian's yellow charm activated by the incantations, a yellowish-brown colour flashed past, Zhou YiXian disappeared into the thin air.

Almost at the same time, within the deep corners of the dark house, a surprised cry of "Yi" was heard. However although Zhou YiXian escaped in time, the dark-green light had arrived in a blink of an eye, Xiao Huan was halfway through her incantation and not to even mention Wild Dog Taoist, at this critical moment, the incantation which he was forced to remember suddenly vanished from his mind, staring tongue-tied, he could not even recite a single word and could only helplessly waved the yellow charm in his hand a few times, opened and closed his mouth a few times, looking comical.

The green light abruptly charged up, enveloped them in, the next moment an extremely icy wind pierced into their bodies from all directions, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist felt their entire bodies' blood being frozen up in an instant, they could no longer resist and a strong force generated out from the house, a sound of [wu] and both figures sucked in, unable to resist even the slightest.

The next minute, banging sounds were heard twice, most likely it was Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist's bodies that were thrown on the floor inside the house but for some reason, they did not make any noise, the eerie house suddenly plunged into a dead silence.

The long night, cold and silent, nothing moved inside or outside the house, a

mist gently drifted past in the dark night, giving one a feeling of unreal, only that unearthly fire in the house, still silently burning, reminding one of the existence of the strange things here.

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist had been sucked into the house by the green light for a very long time but since then there wasn't any sound coming out from the house, and the only one who escaped, Zhou YiXian, had also disappeared. Time in this stillness, passed by minute by minute, as if the one in the house was also especially patient, quietly waiting.

In the silence, suddenly a human figure appeared at the entrance, it was Zhou YiXian, he was frowning tightly and seemed hesitant but eventually he shook his head, sighed and slowly walked over to the house.

Reaching the door, before he could think, a sound of [zhi ya] was heard from the door, it automatically opened, the faint green light inside, silently shone onto Zhou YiXian.

“Please come in!” An emotionless voice, rang out from inside the house.

Zhou YiXian composed himself, went in, he looked around and soon found Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist both lying on the ground next to the altar, a quick glance and seemed like they were not hurt but both of them were staring with eyes wide opened at him, their mouths moved a few times but no sound was made, it was very strange, wondered if it could be that they were controlled by some strange techniques.

And the most attention-grabbing object in the house, was that bit of faint green fire hanging in mid-air, at the moment it was above that coffin that Zhou YiXian noticed in the day, and in the coffin below it, right now Mr Ghost's

emotionless voice was heard.

“‘Land Escape Strange Skill’ has been long lost for many years, didn’t expect to see it again today, I wondered which master is your distinguished self be?”

Zhou YiXian was silent, watching that coffin, quietly said, “Both of them are young and ignorant, your distinguished self is an exceptional master, don’t have to be so calculating with those juniors right?”

Mr Ghost lightly said, “You flatter me, I am just a lonely ghost, dare not take the title of some exceptional master. In the day I have already told all of you not to come here again but you all defy my order, what is the reason for it?”

Zhou YiXian’s eyes flickered, unhurriedly said, “This is where my deceased son’s spiritual tablet is, where his spirit travelled to the afterlife, you are from The Way of Ghost, how can I not be worried?”

Mr Ghost's voice suddenly paused, after a while drawled, “How do you know I am from The Way of Ghost?”

Zhou YiXian said, “You take shelter in a place of Yin energy, sleeps in a Yin coffin, also uses ‘Netherworld Ghost Fire’ to absorb the unearthly ghostly energy of this hundred-years old mortuary, nourishing your own body, this level of deep skill from The Way of Ghost, one who has not immerse long in The Way of Ghost for many years cannot use it.”

Mr Ghost was silent for a long time, said, “Your distinguished self is really an expert, I have been disrespectful.”

Zhou YiXian's face had a rarely seen seriousness, said, "You are also a person who sees reason, naturally know what I was worrying? Although my dead son has passed away for many years but this useless father cannot let him be dead without peace. But today coming over and witnessing, your distinguished self is not someone who misuse his skills, I am now also assured."

Having said that, Zhou YiXian actually bowed to that coffin. Mr Ghost sneered, his tone cold, heard from the coffin, "You don't have to lick my boots that way, capturing humans souls this kind of lowly tactic, I of course will not do it but all of you have violate my prohibition and so are guilty."

Zhou YiXian's countenance changed, he gave a dry cough and said, "Er, actually this is a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding! Your distinguished self is an exceptional master, why..."

Mr Ghost snorted, ignoring Zhou YiXian's tactic of delaying him, the green ghostly fire in the mid-air suddenly shook, instantly became brighter. Zhou YiXian's face looked troubled, watched that spot of ghostly fire.

Green light flashed, the fire gradually became bigger, when it grew to be the size of a fist, the whole room was already enveloped by green light, even Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist who were on the ground, their faces already reflected green.

Suddenly, [pong] a sound, the green light wavered, that Netherworld Ghost Fire instantly split opened, from one to five, went in five directions, followed closely by numerous dark red lights projected soundlessly from the green light, connected to each other, formed a five-star formation, emitting auras of eerie ghostly energy from the mid-air, hit them directly in the face.

Zhou YiXian's face looked solemn, his pupils slightly contracted, indistinctly looking over, there seemed to be sweat on his forehead.

When the formation was slowly forming opposite him, Zhou YiXian hesitated for a moment, took two steps back, pulled out several yellow paper charms from his bosom and without saying he first stuck four on himself and then at the surrounding ground, chairs, broken rocks, he stuck on a few, it seemed disorganized but a faint response seeming to be coming from it.

Just when Zhou YiXian finished his formation, Mr Ghost's formation had also completed, at that moment, a light flashed from the five-star formation, immediately the entire house was suddenly filled with ghosts wails, extremely ear-piercing.

Zhou YiXian trembled, exclaimed, "Ghost Howl Break!"

The ghost howl seemingly invisible but like all-conquering, from the formation a stern and sharp light broke out, the rubbles and broken woods along its path flew out upon touch, even the sturdy slabstone was slashed with a deep cut.

Zhou YiXian's white hairs fluttered in the wind, both of his hands stretched out quickly, two yellow charms stuck above his ears, immediately the pain shown on his face receded, followed by his mouth reciting something, his right finger like a sword, stabbed the paper charm, his eyes wide opened suddenly, stared at that ghost howling.

The next moment, the ghost howl collided with Zhou YiXian, almost at the same time, that four pieces of paper charms on Zhou YiXian's body and the ones on the ground all lighted up, swiftly condensed into a bunch of green light blocking in front of Zhou YiXian.

[Rumble]

A loud bang and Zhou YiXian's body flew out, crashed into a ruined wall and dropped down. In the house, the yellow charms floated in the air, helplessly scattering away and that five spots of fire above Mr Ghost coffin, once again condensed into one, quietly burning.

Zhou YiXian panted heavily, struggling for a while on the ground and slowly climbed up, laughed bitterly, "I am this old already and you are really not letting me go?"

Mr Ghost after a moment of silence, said, "Your insight, experience, knowledge, all are incomparable to an ordinary person, but why is your cultivation at such a low level?"

Zhou YiXian wiped off a faint dribble of blood from his mouth, indifferently said, "So what if my skills are low, there are so many people keen on cultivating Tao in the world, so many highly skilled cultivated martial artists, how many are as carefree as me?"

This time Mr Ghost was silent for a long while and then without speaking, that ghost fire suddenly shook and swiftly flew towards Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist, pausing above them.

Zhou YiXian was shocked and while he was panicking, that Netherworld Ghost Fire circled around them once and flew back to Mr Ghost's coffin, the next moment, for some inexplicable reason, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist bodies moved, at the same time crying out softly and then scrambled up, seemed like Mr Ghost had released the spell on them.

Zhou YiXian was surprised and happy, quickly spoke to the coffin, "Thank you, we will go now, go right now, in the future we will not come even if we are beaten to death."

When he finished, he signaled with his eyes to Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist, the two of them were naturally anxious to leave too, nodded earnestly but when they were about to stride off, Mr Ghost's cold voice was suddenly heard again, "I released them, it does not mean I will spare you all."

The three of them were surprised, Zhou YiXian asked in shock, "What did you say?"

Mr Ghost sneered, said, "The three of you came here again to spy out me, and even know my secret of The Way of Ghost, greatly violated my taboo, now I will let the three of you attack me together, so that you all can die without regrets."

Xiao Huan and the rest turned pale, Zhou YiXian had just fought with him and knew this person's skills were deep and unfathomable and he could not fight against him, he could only meekly said, "Your distinguished self is an exceptional master, know that we bear you no malice, only worrying my dead son's soul will be disturbed so then..."

Before he could finished, Mr Ghost suddenly shouted, "Don't need to say anymore, look out for the fire!"

That ghost fire in the mid-air again lighted up, the ghost energy once again filled up the house. Zhou YiXian's expression changed greatly, before he could speak, that ghost fire again formed the five-star formation, a sound of shriek, it

was that all-conquering ghost howl projected out again, rushing over.

Wild Dog Taoist cried out in his heart, rushed before Xiao Huan, took out his Beast Fang weapon and had it before him, Zhou YiXian shouted, “Can’t block it, quickly avoid it...” But while speaking, that ghost howl seemed to be much faster than before, in a blink it was already before Wild Dog Taoist, in that instant Wild Dog Taoist felt a powerful wind like a knife in his face, especially both of his ears felt stabbing pain, his entire being like among thousands of sharp swords, helplessly being slaughtered.

Xiao Huan behind him, was heard screaming, her voice full of fear, about to go and help but was stopped by that powerful wind from beside Wild Dog’s body, the Ghost Howl Break abruptly stopped, Xiao Huan had nowhere to retreat and could not avoid, when it seemed like Xiao Huan was about to be hit by this powerful ghostly attack, at this critical juncture, suddenly a light [suo] was heard from outside the house, an object flashed, a black-green light like lightning flew before Xiao Huan and Wild Dog, a black stick which looked ordinary and blunt, slashing gently from top-down, suddenly the all-powerful Ghost Howl Break vanished, the howling in the house slowly quietened down.

Xiao Huan who had just came back from gates of Hell, whipped her head around, an uncontrollable joy on her face, she cried, “It’s you...”

And almost at the same time, the Netherworld Ghost Fire slowly fused into one, Mr Ghost also coldly said, “You?”

Someone indifferently spoke from outside the door, “Yes, it is me.” Following that voice, someone unhurriedly walked in, a long robe with hands clasped behind, a three-eyed grey monkey on his shoulder, it was Ghost Li.

Ghost Li glanced towards the three of them, Xiao Huan was beaming and looking at him with joy, Wild Dog Taoist on the other hand looked strange, glanced at him a few times and slowly retreated to a side.

Ghost Li felt bewildered but did not think much of it, unhurriedly walked to the middle of the room, the Soul-Absorbing Stick glimmered with strange light, slowly flew back to his hand.

Zhou YiXian glanced at Ghost Li, and glanced at Xiao Huan, suddenly grunted, said, "Brat, you must have long arrived at this area and actually did not render help, you know that me this old man is frail and old, and still watch me face this ghost thing, really harbour sinister motives you this fellow."

Xiao Huan frowned, glared at Zhou YiXian, called out, with some rebuke, "Grandfather!..."

Ghost Li did not seem to care, looked at him, said, "If not so, I won't know you actually have some connections with that old ancestor at Qing Yun Hill!"

Zhou YiXian's face changed, grunted, Ghost Li ignored him and slowly turned, faced that silent coffin.

Mr Ghost's voice slowly rang out, "Aren't you at Majestic Fox Mountain looking after BiYao, why did you come here?"

Ghost Li stared at the coffin, said, "I was about to ask you, you are not at the Wildlands Holy Temple, what are you doing here?"

Mr Ghost was silent for a moment, said, "In any case, you and I are after all

from Ghost King sect, these three violated my taboo, infringed my privacy, I want to remove them, why are you obstructing?”

Zhou YiXian listened from the back, somehow his voice became louder now, loudly said, “Pei, you talked about killing so easily, don’t tell me you think it is as easy as slaughtering pigs!”

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist both glanced sideways at him, Zhou YiXian frowned, seemed to feel something amiss with himself too, mumbled a few words and quietened down.

Ghost Li coldly spoke to the coffin, “You cannot kill them.”

Mr Ghost coldly sneered, said, “Why not?”

Ghost Li said, “Because I am here.”

Mr Ghost paused, after a long while coldly said, “Don’t tell me you are planning to come forward for them in force?”

Ghost Li’s face was expressionless, said, “Yes, with me here, you cannot kill them.”

A trace of joy flitted past Zhou YiXian’s face, Xiao Huan watched Ghost Li’s back figure intently, biting down on her lips, her eyes particularly bright, only Wild Dog Taoist did not look at Ghost Li, instead watched Xiao Huan for a moment from the side and then quietly stepped back.

That spot of Netherworld Ghost Fire in mid-air, suddenly started to light up,

the faint green light again diffused out, Zhou YiXian and the rest turned pale but Ghost Li was still standing there, unmoving, coldly staring at that ball of fire, the Soul-absorbing stick in his hand also started to glow.

Right now, in the entire house, the one that was most carefree was Xiao Hui, it seemed not concerned at all about the impending fight in front of it, peering here and there, looking at the ghost fire for a moment, and then turned and glanced at Xiao Huan, made monkey faces at her, while its hand from time to time scratching its body.

， ， ， ，

Chapter 160 - Secret

Facing Ghost Li, although Mr Ghost still had not emerged from that coffin but clearly he had become much serious, that faint point of ghost fire in mid-air, gradually became larger, casting the surrounding people's faces green.

Ghost Li stared at that ball of green, his face expressionless, suddenly stepped forward. Almost at the same time Ghost Li moved, that ball of ghost fire, as if stimulated, suddenly flared but this time it did not divide itself into the five-stars formation, instead it suddenly rose, creating a gust of strong wind with it, the dust in the mortuary fell in showers. Zhou YiXian and the rest were caught unaware, one by one started to rub their eyes.

And at this increasingly tensed situation, the unearthly atmosphere in the air, looked like it was about to activate some mysterious strange spell. Ghost Li facing this mysterious Mr Ghost, dared not let his guard down and was on high alert, suddenly he raised his eyebrows, his body lifted abruptly into the air, almost at the same time, a rumble emitted from below the house, the entire house quaked violently, like the mountain was moving.

A huge and pale skeleton giant arm broke through the flagstones, heavily smashed down on where Ghost Li was standing previously, the black brick stones on the ground smashed into pieces, broken pieces flying. The entire room at the moment was engulfed in ghosts' howling cries, Ghost Li in mid-air, that skeleton arm seemed to be manipulated by some mysterious power, sprang up and charged towards Ghost Li.

Ghost Li frowned tightly but there was no panic in his eyes, his eyes reflecting

the giant arm's fast approaching figure, when it looked like it was about to hit his body, his body swayed and floated to the right, at that moment of hair's breadth avoided it, that giant arm crashed down, again another cloud of debris.

The dense unearthly atmosphere in the house, the fierce wind piercingly cold, Zhou YiXian and the rest pressed tightly against the walls, wanted to leave but dared not move, for fear they might get hurt in this chaos. But luckily, it seemed that Mr Ghost's attention was all on Ghost Li, the three of them hid at the corner of the altar table, the white skeleton did not hunt for them. Only that the three of them in the chaos, saw that the mortuary which was originally not that spacious, with the addition of that huge arm out of a sudden, pursuing Ghost Li, the place looked slightly crowded.

But almost as if this was not enough, while Zhou YiXian was grumbling in his heart, the earth below rumbled with another deep groan, the faint sound sounded agitated and violent, like a fierce spirit imprisoned for a long time, finally had a chance to emerge and vent its frustration.

The mortuary quaked violently, the earth erupted and stones cracked, another identical giant arm emerged from the ground, fiercely hit towards Ghost Li. Ghost Li moved swiftly and swerved to avoid the two arms, both eyes concentrating tightly but so far, he had not fought back.

In the house, right now it seemed extremely crowded.

The ghastly white arms, moved in a flurry, the unfathomable yet horrifying scene played out in this mortuary, despite the intense fight between Mr Ghost and Ghost Li, they seemed to have a tacit understanding, their display of powers were limited to this mansion, Mr Ghost's Way of Ghost's skills did not extend out of the house while Ghost Li's movements were kept to the interior of the house.

Above in the air, that ghost fire coldly burned, under the green faint light, the white bones danced in the air, Ghost Li's figure seemed to gradually take on some strange ghastly energy but no matter what, so far, Mr Ghost still was unable to do anything to Ghost Li. Within the coffin, Mr Ghost's coldly snorted.

Suddenly, that ghost fire brightened, the two huge and pursuing giant arms abruptly stopped, then with a sound of lament, [kaka, kaka] piercing sounds rang out, numerous cracks appeared on that two giant skeleton arms, the next moment turned into innumerable small pieces, the edges extremely sharp, like a shower of bones and yet like swarms of man-eating bees, blotted out the sky and covered up the earth, charged towards Ghost Li.

Zhou YiXian and the rest turned pale, Xiao Huan cried out, in the small mansion, it was already hard enough avoiding the two giant arms, right now they had turned into showers of bone pieces, densely packed together, how could one avoid it.

Ghost Li's face was as cold as frost, staring at this sheet of bone pieces, the pieces looked to be reaching him, he suddenly dropped swiftly from the air, heading straight to the ground, his movement extremely fast, like lightning. The bone pieces braked in the air, like it was alive, made a screeching sound, stopped its momentum, made a bend and descended from the air.

Ghost Li looked like he was about to reach the ground but before he could land properly, Ghost Li slapped his hand on the ground, his entire body stuck close to the ground and flew out, and his direction, was towards that coffin where Mr. Ghost was.

That ghost fire in the air startled, struck down lightning-fast and the numerous bone pieces behind, like a wind whistling, pursued tightly, the violent storm howling, the entire house quaked violently, Ghost Li's clothes flapped

wildly in the wind but at this moment, where there was obstacle in front and pursuing soldiers behind, he suddenly threw out the Soul-absorbing black stick from his hand, that force was great, with strange powers activating it, the Sinister Orb at the tip of the black stick swirled with dark red, lines and dots of blood lighted up, it was a scene where evil power was at its peak.

Just that, the direction where the Soul-absorbing stick flew, was where Zhou YiXian and the rest were at, Zhou YiXian, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist, before they could react, a stream of black light suddenly rushed before them, an extremely cold blanket of air already enveloping them before it arrived, an indistinct mysterious evil power like a ferocious demon descended from the air and influencing the blood inside their bodies, a feeling of penetrating into their bodies and exiting.

The next moment, the Soul-absorbing stick was before them, a sound of [duo], stabbed into the wall beside Zhou YiXian's head, almost totally sinking in.

Zhou YiXian blanched, even forgotten to curse Ghost Li, immediately felt a cold wave travelling from his head to his feet, that black stick beside his ears, like an invisible arm, wanted to drag him in. He was terrified, forced his body to move and only then managed to breathe deeply.

And this moment, that shower of bone pieces and that ball of faint ghost fire, like a wave of tsunami, suddenly abruptly stopped, froze in the air, a moment later, a faint groan was heard from the wall, a block of human-shaped earth suddenly flew out from the wall, headed towards Ghost Li, and the numerous bone pieces, like losing their spiritual power, fell onto the ground, only that ball of ghost fire, surged in brightness, once again floated above that piece of earth.

Ghost Li whistled lightly, his right hand waved, the Soul-Absorbing stick flew back, stabbed into the block of earth from the back, immediately the earth

broke, a human figure in black flashed out, drifting like a ghost, floated above to where that coffin was, it was Mr Ghost.

The Soul-Absorbing Stick slowly landed, went back to Ghost Li, Ghost Li stared at Mr Ghost, did not make any move, Mr. Ghost slowly turned and looked at Ghost Li, suddenly said, “How did you find out my place of concealment?”

Ghost Li was silent, did not answer but only looked at him coldly, Mr Ghost’s black veil moved slightly, nodded his head and said, “Alright, we may not be friends in the future, of course you will refuse to say, just that we are not yet finished today, I’d like to see you who is rumoured to have the three great factions’ true ways in your body, how exactly is your cultivation?”

Ghost Li’s pupils slightly contracted, although he took Mr Ghost by surprise by using Soul-Absorbing stick to attack where he was concealing, considered having the upper hand but his expression did not look relaxed at all. Intentionally or unintentionally, the Soul-Absorbing stick stabbed into the earth block but Mr Ghost was like an apparition, an empty space, he could not tell the effect of the Soul-Absorbing evil power on him, this person was mysterious and unfathomable, it was really something Ghost Li had not encountered before.

Watching the confrontation between the two people, it seemed like there would be another fierce fight again, Zhou YiXian calmed his frightened self, quickly pulled Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist, both of them startled, knew that it would be extremely dangerous with such strange powers battling each other, hurriedly found a hole in the already dilapidated wall and scurried out, before leaving, Xiao Huan seemed to remember something, stretched out her hand and took Zhou XingYun’s tablet with her too.

The three of them left in succession, Ghost Li and Mr Ghost were clearly aware but Ghost Li did not react and as a great foe was before Mr Ghost, he seemed couldn’t be bothered about them. Just that after they left, howling

sounds were heard again from the house, sands and stones flew past, Zhou YiXian and the rest outside the broken walls, were pushed several chi back by the violent winds.

Zhou YiXian pulled Xiao Huan back a distance, a full three zhangs away before turning back to gaze at the house, but at such a far distance, he could not feel the intense fight going on between the two martial artist experts, seemed like they were still controlling their powers within the house. Looking from a distance, strange lights flashed from the house, other than the initial faint green, right now gold, red, white, dark-green and other strange lights also began, if not for the dense ghastly and murderous atmosphere, the scene was rather beautiful.

Xiao Huan stared at that house, whispered to Zhou YiXian who was getting ready to run, said, “Grandfather, are we just going to leave like this, I don’t think it’s very nice?”

Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist who was beside him, were shocked, turned around and looked at Xiao Huan, Zhou YiXian frowned and said, “Silly girl, what are you thinking of! Those two are monsters who kill people like flies, we are lucky to escape with our lives, why do you still want to stay here for?”

Xiao Huan hesitated a moment, said, “But, but after all, to save us, he then...

...”

Wild Dog Taoist looked at her, did not speak, Zhou YiXian impatiently said, “I say, why are you so muddle-headed! Ghost Li is highly-skilled, what is there to worry, besides they are dog-eat-dog, oh, no, one is called Ghost Li, the other Mr Ghost, should be called ghost-fighting-ghost. They ghost-fighting-ghost, what concern it is to us, quickly go, quickly go!”

Speaking, he pulled Xiao Huan's hand and walked off, Xiao Huan hesitated for a moment but eventually was pulled away by Zhou YiXian, Wild Dog Taoist turned to glance at that mortuary flashing with strange lights, indistinctly whistling of fierce winds could be heard, his eyes complicated, did not speak, paused for a moment then turned and chased Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan.

In the mortuary, the time to brew a cup of tea had passed, the ramshackle mansion right now was even more ruined, broken stones of the dilapidated walls, even the ruined floor was like being plowed by cows after an earthquake, the earth uneven and lumpy, stone pieces suddenly sticking out, not even a proper place to stand.

And Ghost Li and Mr Ghost were both floating in the air right now, temporarily ceased fighting, staring at each other, both seemed to be slightly panting, only Xiao Hui on Ghost Li's shoulder, looked impatient, yawned a few times lazily, stretched itself.

Mr Ghost suddenly spoke, "Can't imagine your skills have actually improved so much, just only ten years of time, and you are able to merge Taoism, Buddhism, Evil the three factions true ways into one, that is really not easy."

Ghost Li looked at this mysterious figure in black, coldly said, "I also did not expect, you are not from the Evil Sect and instead from the southern border shaman art, the Way of Ghost."

Dark red light suddenly appeared in his eyes, he stared at Mr Ghost, his voice turned ice-cold, said, "Since you are well versed in the Way of Ghost, then the Soul Return Unusual Art for BiYao, you..."

Before he could finish, Mr Ghost already interrupted, “You are wrong, although I know a little of the Way of Ghost skills but Soul Return Unusual Art is still the southern border Black Shaman tribe secret art, I do not know it, else if not based on my friendship with Ghost King, I would have already saved Miss BiYao.”

Ghost Li looked at him coldly, the red glow glimmering uncertainty in his eyes, he seemed to be deliberating over Mr Ghost’s words. Instead Mr Ghost who was silent for a moment, suddenly spoke, “Since tonight you insisted to protect those three, given that we are all from Ghost King sect, I will let them go this time. There is no meaning to us fighting here, why not we just stop now!”

Ghost Li sneered in his heart, he was no longer that naive youth from the past, the perilous fight just now, if his cultivation was low or if he had been careless, he would have died numerous times, and at that time, definitely no one would say things like we are all from Ghost King sect. Mr Ghost was really an unfathomable character, although Ghost Li was not afraid of him but that battle earlier on, he knew that this person’s skills were abnormal and was really someone not easy to deal with, he did not wish to be overhasty and so nodded and indifferently said, “That is good too.”

Mr Ghost slowly descended and landed, the mortuary was in a ruin, most of the coffins were all torn apart, only that coffin at that Yin place was still intact, Mr Ghost landed on it, was silent for a moment, said, “What is your intention for coming to Qing Yun Hill this time?”

Ghost Li coldly said, “Then what are you here for?”

Mr Ghost faintly said, “The world is in a chaos, it is the troubled times, the evil beasts are on a rampage, the battle between Good Faction and the evil beasts is inevitable, how can I miss it?”

Ghost Li looked at him and said, "As what you said, the Good Faction and the evil beasts, who will win?"

A glint suddenly flashed in Mr Ghost's eyes, he seemed to recall something, said, "The evil beasts are formidable, contrary to everyone's expectation, especially for that Beast Deity, until now no one has seen his moves, moreover his cultivation level but to be able to dominate the innumerable powerful demonic beasts, presumably this person must be an unparalleled formidable figure. This big battle, I'm afraid the demonic beasts have a seventy percent odds."

Ghost Li's pupils slightly contracted, he was silent for a long time, said, "Then thirty percent from the Good Faction, don't tell me it's on Zhu Xian formation?"

Mr Ghost smiled and said, "That is right. Qing Yun Hill Zhu Xian Sword Formation really makes a difference, after a thousand years, it is still the world's top supreme Taoism formation, if the Good Faction wishes to win, then they will have to put their hopes on this sword formation, if not there will not be that many Good Faction righteous people, instead of going other places, all of them came to Qing Yun Hill."

Ghost Li silent with his head lifted, his expression complex, seemed to have recalled some things, pain indistinct on his face.

Mr Ghost saw his expression, suddenly said, "Although you started out from Qing Yun but some of Qing Yun's secrets, most likely you are still unaware?"

Ghost Li's countenance changed, turned to look at Mr Ghost, as if he wanted to stare through this person, after a while, he drawled, "Please advise!"

Mr Ghost looked at Ghost Li, his tone calm but his eyes seemed to convey a deeper meaning, “Qing Yun Hill Zhu Xian Sword Formation’s might exceeds the mortal and enters the sage, it is sufficient to slay the evil and eliminate the demons, for a thousand years it has always been the treasured weapon of guarding Qing Yun Hill. Legend says that the sword formation was born out of that volume of nameless ancient scroll that Qing Yun Hill Qing YunZi founder obtained, until a thousand years ago the emergence of the peerless genius Qing Ye who went into seclusion at ‘Illusory Moon Cave’ for thirteen years, emerged white-haired, personally invented this, he gathered the spiritual energies from Qing Yun Seven Mountains Summits as the formation, transformed the murderous energies of the world’s living things as the sword and becomes invincible in the world.”

His voice paused and then sounding slightly erratic but his pair of eyes firmly glued on Ghost Li, slowly said, “And this astounding unparalleled formation, is inseparable from one celestial weapon.”

Ghost Li exclaimed, “The ancient sword, Zhu Xian?”

Mr Ghost nodded and said, “It is indeed! Where exactly did Zhu Xian came from, it has always been a mystery, I'm afraid even those people at Qing Yun Hill won't be able to explain. But one thing is for sure, the first appearance of Zhu Xian ancient sword was when Qing Ye Founder emerged from his seclusion in Illusory Moon Cave for thirteen years, holding that sword in his hands. And all along, that celestial weapon is never kept closely with Qing Yun sect head but instead placed in the Illusory Moon Cave at the back of Qing Yun Hill.”

Mr Ghost stopped, in the mortuary, a silence temporarily descended. Ghost Li looked at him intently, slowly said, “How did you know so much?”

Mr Ghost waved his hand and said, “You don’t have to bother about me but what I have said to you is indeed the facts. Therefore the secret of Qing Yun Zhu Xian Sword Formation, most likely is within the Illusory Moon Cave that only Qing Yun sect head can enter.” He smiled and said, “Do you understand?”

Ghost Li did not speak, only stared silently at that person, after a long while, coldly said, “Who exactly are you?”

Mr Ghost clasped his hands behind his back standing, slowly said, “In short, remember that I am not your enemy, that is all.”

Ghost Li looked at that person for a moment, suddenly turned and slowly floated out, when his figure was about to disappear, his voice seemed to be heard but it also sounded like the wind, indistinct.

Mr Ghost stood alone in the dark, motionless, that faint ghost fire slowly darkened and finally completely extinguished, the mansion lapsed into silence again.

.

Just after a while, the dark place where a human figure was, a low, low sneer was heard.

, , , ,

Chapter 161 - Struggle

Dawn, when the sky was just brightening up, the sky around Qing Yun Hill was covered thick with dark clouds, raindrops fell soon after. The rain from small droplets to big, very quickly the world turned gray and misty, pitter patter sounds of raindrops everywhere, enveloped the lofty mountains in a water mist, appearing hazy and mysterious.

The sound of raindrops hitting the green bamboo leaves, as though for the past ten thousands years it had never changed, at Qing Yun Hill, it has always appeared lonely. The tips of the tile house eaves, moss grew on it due to the years, water droplets from drips turned into a water curtain, strings and strings like pearls fell down, landing on the floor paved with bluestones, splattering pearl-like fragments water beads.

Wind in the rain, bursts of rain swayed in waves, bringing faint moisture and mist of water, oscillating between the windowsill, as if sentimentally attached to something.

Lu XueQi stood alone before the window, watching the misty rain scenery outside the window, undulating, at this cold and chilly moment, it was as if only the sound of rain falling onto the bamboo leaves reverberated in-between Heaven and Earth mountains and rivers.

A slight breeze blew past, her black hair gently ruffled, the rain mists brushed past her face, like a wave of coldness seeping into the skin. She pursed her lips slightly, her hand supporting against the windowsill, the sound of rain, sounded far yet near, eventually all seemed to fall deep into her heart.

Wondered, if there were also ripples?

Footsteps were heard outside the house, someone gently knocked on the door, Lu XueQi silently looked back, quietly came out of her musing, walked over to open the door, her senior sister WenMin was standing there.

Lu XueQi smiled faintly, said: "Senior sister."

WenMin looked at her slightly haggard face, frowned and went in, Lu XueQi closed the door behind her, the two of them sat down in the simple house. WenMin first looked at the bed, saw that the bed was tidily made up, sighed and said, "You didn't sleep last night?"

Lu XueQi quietly said, "I can't sleep."

WenMin looked at Lu XueQi, felt a stab of pain in her heart, she had entered Small Bamboo Valley earlier than Lu XueQi and had always been on good relations with her, with Lu XueQi's aloof and proud character, other than their mentor, ShuiYue, only WenMin was the closest to her. Recently Lu XueQi had troubles endlessly, WenMin saw it all and was anxious, although she was worrying by herself but there was nothing she could do and could only watched helplessly as the relations between Lu XueQi, teacher and Qing Yun various elders turned more and more tensed.

For a moment the house was in silence, WenMin too did not know what to say, after a moment, Lu XueQi instead spoke, "Senior sister, this time because of me, I am really sorry."

WenMin was stunned, said, "What?"

Lu XueQi said, "I heard a few days ago Big Bamboo Valley Tian teacher uncle and SuRu teacher uncle personally brought Song Daren Song senior brother to propose marriage but teacher instead rejected and also got into a big argument with Tian teacher uncle."

WenMin gave a wry laugh, there was some bitterness in her laughter, slowly shaking her head, "Ai...that, that is nothing, to say this is also not because of you, he and I are not fated and we all know, teacher has always abhor Big Bamboo Valley."

Lu XueQi silently shook her head, said, "No it's not, that day was the day that I upset teacher, when I made her angry, I also dragged you down with it, if not with SuRu teacher uncle around, Tian teacher uncle was also willing to give such a big face and personally came to propose marriage, very likely your marriage proposal would be successful. But ...senior sister, I am really sorry!"

WenMin smiled, heaved a long sigh, said, "Enough said, don't blame yourself over it, aren't I doing well now and teacher is only mad for a period and not to say there wouldn't be a chance in the future." Pausing, she glanced at Lu XueQi, said, "Enough of my stuff, as for you, what is your plan exactly, you can't go on this deadlock with teacher indefinitely?"

Lu XueQi's face turned slightly pale, remained silent.

WenMin pondered for a long time, said, "Junior sister, I roughly know what is going on in your mind but you can't go on like this, Zhang...that person he after all has already joined the Evil sect, cast aside by the world's Good Faction and to take a step back and say, this time you went to the southwest, the battlefield

where the fierce battle between the Evil sect and demonic beasts, the scenes over there you..."

WenMin suddenly stopped and did not continue, because at that moment Lu XueQi's face seemed to instantly turn pale, even her bright, clear eyes, also seemed to be etched with deep pain.

The room was silent for a long time, the pitter sounds of the rain outside the window, wordlessly lonely.

Finally, WenMin whispered, "Most probably he is really not in the mortal world anymore, you being this persistent, you yourself will only suffer."

Lu XueQi was pale, did not speak and slowly stood up, went to the windowsill and gazed out, that blanket of mist in the mountain, misty lingering, like in a dream, even rain spray and water droplets at this moment, seemed to feel surreal in the coldness.

"I know..." This cold and beautiful woman, in this misty rain, gently said, "He might be really gone, sometimes I have also thought about it, actually to him, this may be also a release. I also know, teacher's rebuke, is not wrong, it is me who is in the wrong, I should not be carried away by my wishful thinking, I should not...should not..."

Her voice suddenly choked, WenMin stood up, was about to go comfort her when she suddenly turned, a figure of white floated, like a lonely cloud.

Her eyes seemed to have tears, sparkling and clear, with a trace of melancholy that was never there before, said, "Senior sister, I know it all but I just cannot let it go. Even though I sever this affection a thousand times, I still cannot sever it, unable to escape from it. After returning from the southwest, I

have told myself countless time, he is dead, he is dead and everything is over. But every night after I fell asleep, I dreamt about that horrible scene at the Venomous Serpent Valley, dreamt that he by the demonic beasts..."

Lu XueQi suddenly stopped, looked agitated, till WenMin felt worried but Lu XueQi soon calmed down, only her eyes, still looked grieved, "Then, I woke up, in cold sweat, like in an icehouse!"

She looked at WenMin silently and then her expression gradually turned fragile, as if her body was also beginning to tremble, said, "Senior sister, I, what happened to me, what exactly happened to me?" She suddenly fell into WenMin's arms, WenMin hugged her shoulders, felt her weak body shivering, from her ears, came the sound of her quiet voice.

"Senior sister, I can't take it anymore, I really cannot take it anymore..."

WenMin was silent, tightly held Lu XueQi who had never been so fragile, this once aloof and proud girl, right now seemed to be the most broken-hearted and disconsolated person in the world.

...

Silence once again descended, the rain sounded anxious outside the window, quiet sobs still seemed to be heard in the wind. Outside the small house, at the edge of the bamboo forest, ShuiYue Master was standing still silently, holding a oil-clothed black-green umbrella, stared at that house in the storm.

Then she slowly turned away and disappeared into the bamboo forest.

Between Heaven and Earth, the sound of the wind and rain whistling, it was a desolate time.

In HeYang City, it was also raining like that. Zhou YiXian, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist the three of them walked out from another remote alley, converged into the dense crowd on the main street, tried to take a few steps and was pushed to the sides, for one, there was simply too many people and difficult to walk, two, they should first take shelter from the rain and discuss their plans.

And this time they were divided into two factions, Xiao Huan insisted to return to that mortuary to take a look again, Zhou YiXian adamantly refused, Wild Dog Taoist this time, unprecedentedly supported Zhou YiXian.

Xiao Huan singularly was weak but she had a clever tongue, debated one against two, including although Wild Dog Taoist had different views with her this time but he was as usual, unable to speak once Xiao Huan glared at him so most of the time only Zhou YiXian alone protested.

Right now the three of them was standing at the roadside, Zhou YiXian quietly said, "You silly girl, what do you want to go back to that dangerous place, to court death?"

Xiao Huan curled her lips, said, "And to say you have lived to such an old age, Grandpa, do you know there is something called morality?"

Zhou YiXian angrily said, "Morality? Moral fart! What moral do you speak of when you are dead, that guy who is like a ghost is so powerful, aren't we courting death if we go back?"

Wild Dog Taoist nodded in the side, said: "That's right, it is really not appropriate to go back..."

Xiao Huan shot a stare over, Wild Dog Taoist's heart jumped and was unable to continue.

Xiao Huan looked back at Zhou YiXian, said, "Grandpa, if it was not for him last night, we would have been dead and won't be here arguing about morality or not. Is it wrong to go back and take a look?"

Zhou YiXian without changing his expression, said, "It is indeed because we were saved by him, so we have to cherish our lives, otherwise, if we walk right into the trap and again landed into the tiger's mouth, then wouldn't it be letting down Ghost's Li's good intention?"

Xiao Huan stifled, for a moment could not think of anything to refute Zhou YiXian, Zhou YiXian could not help but be conceited, [hehe] smiled and said, "Nothing to say right?"

Xiao Huan angrily said, "You know it well that that man is eerie and unfathomable, aren't you a bit concern about your savior?"

Zhou YiXian calmly, said, "Do not worry, Ghost Li that fellow has skills and magical weapon, to compare the ghostly energy, I'm afraid his is even more sinister than that coffin, even if he wants to die it would also be difficult, what are you worry about?" Pausing for a while, he said, "And to say, didn't you give him a reading ten years ago, and you said it that time, this person has a one in a thousand 'Chaos Devil Physiognomy', although stormy situations with twists and turns but it is not a short-lived premature life, then what are you still worrying for..."

"Why, have you read my fortune before?" Out of a sudden, a voice was heard

beside them, the three startled, turned around and saw Ghost Li appearing beside them, in broad daylight, it was as if he had flashed out from the rain.

By now although the rain was quite heavy but the number of refugees in the city was really a lot and most of them were terrified of the imminent arrival of the demonic beasts and so were not bother about the rain. In fact, these past few days, there were cases in HeYang City where the people who were too tightly-wrought lost control, fortunately Qing Yun Sect disciples were maintaining order in the city and most of them arrived within a short time to deal with it. However the people were in a state of panic and also caused this city to be immersed in a madness-borderline atmosphere all day.

Xiao Huan and the rest were all startled and then Xiao Huan was overjoyed, could not help but softly cried, "It's you..."

Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist instead frowned together at the same time, Zhou YiXian snorted and actually said the same words, "It's you..."

Ghost Li ignored them, first looked at Xiao Huan, saw the genuine obvious joy on her young face, his eyes could not help but revealed a trace of warmth, nodded slightly, said, "It is me."

On Ghost Li's shoulder, drenched because of the rain, the monkey Xiao Hui, also [zhizhi] called out to Xiao Huan, grinned, it seemed to be delighted too to see Xiao Huan.

Xiao Huan smiled happily, spoke to Xiao Hui, "You still remembered me! He he." Then, she looked up at Ghost Li, hesitated for a moment, said, "Last night you, you all right?"

Ghost Li nodded and said, "I'm fine."

Xiao Huan was then relieved, took a few more glances at Ghost Li, suddenly for some reason, turned red, her eyes shifted to Xiao Hui, smiled and opened her arms, said, "Come, come over and let me hug."

Xiao Hui [zhi zhi] giggled twice, suddenly leapt with both feet, left Ghost Li's shoulder and jumped straight to Xiao Huan's arms. Xiao Huan laughed, felt the wet fur of the monkey and was about to take out a cloth to wipe it, unexpectedly the monkey seemed to feel uncomfortable too and suddenly shook its body, immediately water beads sprayed everywhere. Xiao Huan cried out but was unwilling to let the monkey down and so quickly closed her eyes, soon her face and clothes were wet because of the monkey.

Xiao Huan opened her eyes, stared at Xiao Hui, the monkey's three eyes blinked, unmoving. Xiao Huan humphed, threw out her hands and threw Xiao Hui back to Ghost Li, Xiao Hui climbed up back to Ghost Li's shoulder, saw Xiao Huan hastened to arrange her clothing, could not help but [zhi zhi] laughed out loud.

Xiao Huan did not know whether to laugh or cry, bit her lower lips and secretly glanced at Ghost Li, then lowered her head and arranged her clothes, Ghost Li turned to look at Zhou YiXian, Zhou YiXian felt somehow guilty, said, "Hey, stinky brat, I was your savior once, don't act recklessly."

Ghost Li pondered for a moment, looked around and saw the commoners around them were occupied with themselves, no one noticed them and so asked Zhou YiXian, "What are you exactly?"

Zhou YiXian lifted his head up, said, "Old man me is a master."

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were stunned, evidently the answer made one felt very strange.

But Ghost Li was clearly ignoring this 'master', calmly and directly asked, "Last night your Land Escape Strange Skill, it has been lost for a long time but legend said that this art was the ability of Qing Yun Sect founder ancestor Qing YunZi who roamed the JiangHu, why would you have it?"

He looked at Zhou YiXian, said, "What is your relationship with Qing Yun sect?"

Zhou YiXian after a moment of silence, said, "Alright! Things have come to such, I will no longer deceive you all..." Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were shocked, saw Zhou YiXian's solemn face and did not look like he was kidding, could not help but turned serious too.

Zhou YiXian was heard slowly speaking, "Things are actually like this, old man me during my youth was a young and handsome, romantic and suave, talented and smart, peerless...uh, don't have to look at me this way, I will say it directly alright. When I was young, I gathered herbs for a living, once when I entered deep into the mountains to gather herbs, I accidentally fell into a thousands zhang-tall clif..."

Ghost Li, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist all frowned at the same time but Zhou YiXian seemed to get more and more excited as he continued, "But old man me was lucky, a pine tree caught my clothes in mid-air, blocked most of the fall and then I fell down again, unexpectedly there was a pool at the bottom and so old man me was fortunate that I did not die..."

Xiao Huan could not help but interrupted, "Grandfather, why is it that I seemed to hear your story from somewhere and seems like many people also have also said it before, a lot of historical romance storytellings' heroes have all fell once like that from a cliff..."

Zhou YiXian glared at Xiao Huan angrily, "is it me telling it or you, shut up. Uh, where was I, oh, down the cliff but my life is lucky, I did not die and then I even accidentally discovered a secret manual left by a senior master unknown number of years before, old man me has a natural aptitude and am intelligent, I comprehended the secret manual under the cliff, absorbing the spiritual energies of Heaven and Earth as food, time travelled back and forth and finally old man me efforts finally came to a fruition, achieved Tao and become a celestial..."

Ghost Li coldly said, "Other than your name, where else do you resemble a celestial?"

Zhou YiXian stifled a bit, looking a little embarrassed but immediately resumed his normal expression, sternly said, "Old man me for the world's common people, do good deeds and accumulate merits, that is why I roam the world."

Ghost Li indifferently said, "Then are you going to tell me, your Land Escape Strange Skill is learnt from that manual?"

Zhou YiXian nodded again and again, seriously said, "It is, you are worth teaching." But after speaking, he turned to face them, not only Ghost Li but Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist's faces clearly showed 'do not believe' words.

Ghost Li looked at this person, he naturally would not believe that pack of lies but since Zhou YiXian fabricated such story, whatever it was, he was unwilling

to reveal his identity. However although this person had connections with Qing Yun Hill but because he had once stayed with this person before and frankly there was nothing inappropriate, and besides to Ghost Li, more or less he would always view them differently.

As such, Ghost Li did not press him further but also did not wish to speak more, was about to say a few words to them and then leave when suddenly at this moment, a burst of cries and screams were heard from the crowd somewhere south of the city, the sound was extremely mournful

.

Everyone was surprised and looked back, the people next to them on the streets also did the same, a stir went through the street full of people, the towering city walls were originally were filled with people, right now all were running and scattering away. In the misty rain, a mournful scream sounded across the horizon, a huge ferocious bird opened its wings, a pair of big eyes glimmered with blood-red fierce light, pouncing down from the sky, both of its wings expanded out, it was actually almost as wide as half of the city gates, extremely terrible.

Huge winds created by this giant bird, the strong winds attacked, the mast on the city walls snapped over by the winds. Everyone on the wall was terrified, ran away in all directions, the giant bird descended from the sky, a sharp scream, its huge sharp claws like a devil's hand, seized two people who were fleeing and then ascended and disappeared in the sky.

The whole city instantly turned silent, after a long time, not sure who was the first to cry out, "Demonic beasts, the demonic beasts are here, we are finished! ..."

At that instant, the entire city dissolved into a hysteria, countless people howled, cries were heard everywhere, a scene of chaos.

Only between Heaven and Earth that misty rain, continued to fall quietly, as if nothing had happened!

Chapter 162 - Lonely

Deep, low roars were heard from all directions, on the plains two hundred miles outside of Qing Yun Hill, more and more strange demonic southern beasts gathered around, some of the beasts constantly howled to the sky. Among the groups of beasts, there were six, seven larger, far exceeding the surrounding common beasts, standing in the middle of the crowd, turning and growling, the surrounding beasts seemed to be especially fearful towards them.

The foggy misty rain, more and more of the dark clouds in the sky gathered, gradually in the clouds at the horizon's edge, some bright lights flashed, after a moment, finally rumbling sound of thunder was heard.

Dark and pressing onto the world's sky and earth, an unspeakable vicissitudes of life.

Lightning flashed past the horizon, reflecting a strong and vigorous shadow, the giant demonic bird which had just returned from HeYang City, descended from the sky, relying on the light from the lightning, the beasts saw the giant bird's claws clutching two people, for a moment, the hundreds demonic beasts near and far howled loudly, their roars forceful, making one's hair stands.

Huge wings soared and flapped in the wind and rain, the giant bird circled once above the beasts crowd, suddenly loosed its claws, the two human silhouettes like a stone, fell down, although the human figures flipped in mid-air but their limbs did not flail around and looked extremely stiff, most likely along the way, those two poor humans could not take the giant bird's powerful grip and died under the two giant claws.

The cries of the beasts on the ground immediately rose higher, sounds of teeth gnashing rose and fell, at least several beasts leapt up and pounced over instantly, in the dreary rain, blood indistinctly was seen and finally disappeared.

The giant bird which was circling the sky shrieked twice, again flew for a while then as if it had discovered something, kept its wings, descended from the sky, landed deep among dense cluster of beasts. Its huge body was about to land when suddenly its huge wings spread out, making a [hu] sound, the strong wind generated caused the surrounding several ferocious beasts to fall onto the ground, whining out.

A gust of strong wind, the giant bird flapped past the herd just like that, along the way countless of beasts bend their heads reverently to avoid, in the middle it encountered those few large powerful beasts, each stared at each other, refusing to show any weakness. The giant bird drifted, its body soared up and down at times, from the top of the beasts or leaping on the trees branches, at times when it encountered an inconceivable terrifying huge demonic beast, it passed directly underneath from the demonic beast.

Wind and rain swayed, lightnings flashed across the sky horizon, the giant bird in the storm drifted like a duckweed, finally, again making a sharp shriek, landed from the sky.

That was the densest area of the beasts herd, among waves of dark, pressing beasts, under the horizon of flashing lightnings, an oil-covered umbrella image suddenly flashed out, a few branches of peach blossom drawn on it, gently drifting in the storm.

The giant bird landed beside this umbrella, by now it could be clearly seen, a wooden stick was tied onto the umbrella's handle, increasing its length and inserted into a rock, and under the umbrella right now was a young man

dressed in gorgeous silks, sitting underneath, holding a wine flask and cup, pouring wine and drinking. And beside the young man, TaoTie who was obviously looking sleepy lying on the rock, saw the giant bird landed, only slightly opened his eyes, took a glance and again closed it.

The surrounding beasts herd made restless roars, the giant bird landed on the ground, [gu gu] called out, waved with its huge wings, immediately blew several beasts out from the area, instantly cries of shock and anger were undulating but none of the beasts dared to come forward to challenge. The giant bird swept an arrogant gaze around, obviously viewed those beasts in disdain and then turned around and faced the young man but the next moment, it looked especially respectful.

"Gu gu, gu gu gu..." Facing the young man under the umbrella, the giant bird [gu gu] cried out for a while, that young man seemed to understand bird language, slowly nodded. The giant bird again

called out a few times and then stood where it was, after a moment it used its beak to clean up its body feathers, the falling rain, had long drenched it, after cleaning up a few times, it quickly gave up its efforts, looked up to the night sky, slowly tuck its head into its wings, avoiding the wind and rain.

The rain became heavier, that youth drank one cup one after another and never paused once, only occasionally in a trance, stared blankly in the distance for a moment and then silently looked down and again continued to drink. But no matter how much he drank, his face never revealed the slightest intoxication.

Finally, that flask of wine was empty, fell gently from the hand in the wind and rain, landed on the ground full of mud. The young man slowly stood up, a stir went around the beasts herd, revealing extreme fear in their eyes. Just that in the young man's eyes, those innumerable beasts were nothing, not at all

concerned about them. In his eyes, at the moment only silently looking at the sky, the looming dark clouds, wind and rain whistling.

TaoTie gave a low cry, stood up at his side.

The young man was silent, turned and gently patted TaoTie's head, after a long time said, "Do you also feel lonely, TaoTie?..."

The TaoTie growled but in the end no one knew what it meant, that young man lifted his head and looked at the sky, after a very long time, did not speak again.

At Qing Yun Hill's summit, on TongTian Peak, a night of heavy rain and it was still raining, those Good Faction members as the leader of the three major Good Faction sects was gathering at Crystal Hall for discussion, arguments were heard from time to time. And above those, the three great masters, Qing Yun Hill Reverend DaoXuan, Tian Yin Temple PuHong Master and FenXiang Valley Yun YiLan were also quietly in discussion, the three of them were frowning tightly, clearly preoccupied, deeply worried about the imminent demonic beasts catastrophe.

Suddenly, sounds of urgent footsteps was heard outside the Crystal Hall, everyone was startled, Qing Yun Hill the oldest branch disciple Xiao YiCai with quick steps walked into Crystal Hall, pausing slightly, nodded in greetings to the Good Faction members and then quickly went straight to Reverend DaoXuan, whispered in his ear.

The crowd watched the two men, saw Xiao YiCai's solemn expression, unusual from the norm and after he had spoken, Reverend DaoXuan's usual serious expression was even more without any smile, leaving only a solemn expression, gradually, everyone started to tense up, vaguely felt an inexplicable pressure

slowly descending upon this place.

Reverend DaoXuan after listening to Xiao YiCai, glanced at him, quietly asked in return, Xiao YiCai silently nodded, his expression definite. Reverend DaoXuan heaved a long sigh, nodded his head, Xiao YiCai then quietly turned and stood behind Reverend DaoXuan.

PuHong Master and Yun YiLan by now could also tell, PuHong Master chanted and said, “Amitabha, DaoXuan Sect Head, could it be there is news of the beasts?”

Reverend DaoXuan nodded his head, stood up, a stir of commotion went through the Good Faction members in the scene.

Reverend DaoXuan focused his mind, a firm determined expression gradually shown on his face, loudly and clearly said, "Fellow Good Faction friends, we have just received a message, a large group of demonic beasts has already appeared in the wilderness two hundred miles from Qing Yun Hill, soon they will arrive and HeYang City at the foot of the mountain, has also begun to discovered sporadic traces of the demonic monsters.”

Once he had spoken, it immediately caused a commotion, for a moment, panic, fear, anger, sighs etc various expressions appeared on the crowd's faces, the calamity suppressing on their hearts for the past days had finally arrived.

Reverend DaoXuan watched the crowd's reactions, pressed down with both of his hands, the hubbub slowly died down, until it turned quiet, Reverend DaoXuan loudly said, “Everyone, now that the catastrophe is before us, the common people's lives are depending on us to battle this demonic beasts, everyone of you here are all cultivated masters embracing the True Way,

seeking livelihood for the common people, the approaching battle, you and I will spare no effort, what is known as the Will of Heaven unrestrained, surely Heaven never seals off all exits, although these evil monsters are running wild now but most likely they will not last long.”

The crowd, was silent for a while, someone spoke, “Reverend is right.”

"Reverend please be assured, with so many highly skilled martial artists here, we will fight together with all of our might, surely it will not be hard to win against those monsters!"

"It is, exactly..."

All of a sudden as if being inspired, the crowd began to look relaxed and happy, after all no matter what, other than the three major sects, there was still these experts. To look further, on this Qing Yun Hill, there was still the legendary all-conquering, invincible Zhu Xian Sword Formation, looking at Reverend DaoXuan's full of confident expression, what was there more to be worried about?

Reverend DaoXuan under the numerous Good Faction members' stares, slowly smile, spoke a few words to the crowd and walked to the inner quarters with PuHong Master, Yun YiLan, Xiao YiCai and the rest.

Once they had left the crowd's line of vision, Reverend DaoXuan's face immediately turned heavy and PuHong Master and Yun YiLan's expressions were the same, the group of them reached the secluded room, Xiao YiCai was the last and shut the door.

Reverend DaoXuan turned and spoke to Xiao YiCai, "Yi'er, elaborate the details"

Xiao YiCai nodded, said, "Yes. Disciple made an inspection to HeYang City at the foot of the mountain, within a day received reports in succession, especially at the top of the city wall, disciple personally saw a huge demon bird appeared, looking at its appearance, it looked very similar to the 'Asura Bird' among the rumoured thirteen evil beasts recently."

Reverend DaoXuan met the glances of the other two masters, their expressions heavy, Xiao YiCai solemnly said, "In addition, the other fellow sect disciples who are secretly scouting in the surrounding all reported that they had discovered sporadic trails of the demonic beasts, especially most concentrated southwest two hundred miles but the few disciples who were scouting two hundred miles beyond, disciple waited for a long time but did not receive news of them."

Xiao YiCai spoke till here, his face gradually became downcast, Reverend DaoXuan's face was composed and Yun YiLan beside him sighed, PuHong Master quietly chanted.

Reverend DaoXuan pondered for a moment, nodded his head, to Xiao YiCai said, "Seems like it will not be wrong, the demon beasts are really here, YiCai, " he looked at his most beloved disciple, said, "Make one more trip down hill, inform all of the disciples distributed in the areas to all come back, the range to be hundred miles around Qing Yun Hill, be sure to exhort them, not to overstep the boundary when investigating and most definitely not to make a move against the demons on their own, in order to prevent any accidents."

Xiao YiCai nodded his head, as if recalling something, said, "Teacher, then what about those commoners of HeYang City?"

Reverend DaoXuan was silent for a moment and turned around and looked at PuHong Master and Yun YiLan, PuHong Master clasped his hands together and bend his head, Yun YiLan faintly said, "Now that things have come to such, everything will be lead by Reverend Sect Head, will like to ask Reverend sect head to make the decision."

Reverend DaoXuan lifted his head slightly, an indication of his gratitude and then pondered a moment, spoke to Xiao YiCai, "This is indeed tricky but HeYang City is really too dangerous and we currently have no means to go down and protect the people. You immediately go downhill to HeYang City, lead all of our Qing Yun Hill disciples in the city and tell the common people to hasten to the north, minimally they have to travel past Qing Yun mountain ranges. Those beast demons' target right now is the Good Faction at Qing Yun Hill and not those commoners, maybe it could at least ensure their safety."

Xiao YiCai was nonplussed for a moment but looking at Reverend DaoXuan's expressionless face, in the end he still silently nodded and quietly said, "Yes, then disciple will go now."

Reverend DaoXuan said, "There is one more thing, quickly notify the other six branches leaders, to come to TongTian Peak immediately, I want to see them now, there is something that needs to be discussed."

Xiao YiCai nodded and said, "Yes, disciple will go now."

Reverend DaoXuan sighed and said, "Be careful on your journey, go!"

Xiao YiCai nodded his head and retreated.

X

x

x

"Illusory Moon Cave?" Zhou YiXian surprised, frowning, a rare serious look appeared on his face, after hesitating for a moment, said, "Why are you asking that?"

Ghost Li indifferently said, "Aren't you always knowledgeable and have wide experience, I am suddenly interested in this cave so asking you about it, how much do you know about this cave?"

Zhou YiXian glanced at Ghost Li, he looked calm and collected, there was no telling what he was thinking, a look of mystery. At that moment, they were still in HeYang City but the city's mood right now was totally different from last night, where the giant bird had appeared, the people's fears had finally become a fact, the anxious folks under the overwhelming pressure of fear, more and more people were already at the brink of collapsing, from time to time some folks were seen shouting gibberish on the street, their behaviours like madman.

Zhou YiXian turned his eyes away, thoughts went through his mind, slowly said, "You, you are not planning to do anything strange right?"

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were all looking at Ghost Li too, Xiao Hui on Ghost Li's shoulder seemed to sense something too, grinned at them and made a monkey face. Ghost Li indifferently said, "What do you think I can do?"

Zhou YiXian made a dry laugh, said, "Actually I don't know much about the

Illusory Moon Cave, this cave is also not very well-known, just that because thousand years ago that Qing Ye Founder achieved enlightenment after in seclusion inside there, at the same time Zhu Xian Ancient Sword appeared from there, the cave was then made famous, however these past years it has only been a place to keep the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword and only Qing Yun Sect Head can enter it, therefore its reputation also gradually died down."

Ghost Li said, "Oh, is there more?"

Zhou YiXian hesitated a moment, said, "I don't care what you want to do but that place, you'd better not go in."

Ghost Li's eyebrows raised, said, "Why?"

Zhou YiXian sighed and said, "It's not like you are not aware of your identity now, that Illusory Moon Cave is an important place in Qing Yun, what if you are discovered on Qing Yun Hill...You better not forget, right now on Qing Yun Hill, there is not just ten thousands of Good Faction people, what if your identity is exposed, I'm afraid even if you turned into a bird, it will also be hard for you to escape."

Ghost Li coldly said, "That is my business, you only need to tell me about the Illusory Moon Cave will do."

Zhou YiXian shook his head, murmured, "Nowadays these young people really do not have the patience ... alright! That cave is named Illusory Moon, rumours said that on the night of the full moon, in front of the cave there is a strange stone, colourful and magnificent, like illusion, like in a dream but more importantly, actually there is a natural area inside the cave, which will cause the person who walked past it, to fall into an illusion, if one's will is not firm and

determine, he will sink deep within it, unable to extricate oneself, his entire life of cultivation will be destroyed in a single day."

Ghost Li was stunned for a moment, said, "What, there is such a thing?"

Zhou YiXian snorted, looked at Ghost Li from head to toe, said, "I advise you not to have wishful thinking, entering that Illusory Moon Cave, there is only a death path."

Ghost Li sneered, said, "How can you be sure?"

Zhou YiXian said, "I know you are unconvinced and also know that your character is tough but I will tell you the truth," his expression slowly turned solemn, an unexpected demeanor of sternness but not anger, in a deep voice said, "The so-called determined will, is not about your character, in my opinion, your whole life is winds rising and clouds scudding [translator's note: turbulent], the twists and turns are like mountains, the griefs in your heart are numerous, if you fall into the illusion, I'm afraid inevitably it will trigger the matters in your heart and you will not be able to free yourself."

He paused for a moment, as if somehow hesitant but after thinking for a moment, in the end still said, "And, the magical weapon on you is an extremely ominous and evil object, your body's blood and soul have long already merged with the Sinister Orb's evil power, this degree of evil object in that kind of illusion, will even be more detrimental and no help to you so I will advise you one sentence, better give up this thought."

Ghost Li looked at Zhou YiXian, like he was seeing this person for the first time, quietly watching, Zhou YiXian instead also looked straight back, after a long time, Ghost Li without speaking, slowly turned away.

At that moment, there was another commotion in HeYang City, a large number of Qing Yun disciples appeared on the streets, speaking loudly to the commoners. Zhou YiXian and the rest were stunned, squeezed in to hear, the Qing Yun disciples were announcing to the crowd, the demon beasts would soon be here, HeYang City was no longer safe and asked the people to head north, at least over the mountain ranges.

Zhou YiXian looked troubled after listening, shaking his head and sighed incessantly, turned to Xiao Huan and the rest, “Ai, this is bad, don’t know...eh, where is Ghost Li that fellow?”

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were surprised and quickly turned but only saw the empty space behind them, the crowd was extremely packed, how would they be able to find Ghost Li’s figure.

The sea of people, a hubbub of noise, Zhou YiXian standing among the crowd, frowned and shook his head, Xiao Huan beside him was silent, only gazed far ahead, after a long time, gently sighed, in that sound, there seemed to be some sadness.

, ,

Chapter 163 - Concealed Person

The rain ceased temporarily but the dark clouds still loomed low in the horizon, layers upon layers, giving one a feeling of suffocation.

HeYang City's north gate was opened wide, countless of commoners streaming out from the city, headed towards the north, incessant sound of crying was heard, nobody could foresee in this journey, where exactly is the road ahead?

Xiao YiCai led the Qing Yun disciples and maintained order along the way, kept reassuring the panic-stricken commoners, again and again told the commoners around them, that this was only temporarily, in a few days once after they defeated the demon beasts, after the calamity, everyone could once again go back to their homes.

Constantly hard at work throughout the day, it was really exhausting and dehydrating, looking at the snaking queues moving slowly ahead, Xiao YiCai silently shook his head, was about to take a moment of break when he saw Long Shou Valley Lin JingYu standing not away, also looking fatigue, he was on rather good terms with Lin JingYu and so walked over, gently patted Lin JingYu's shoulder.

Lin JingYu looked back, revealed a trace of a smile, opened his mouth to speak but unexpectedly his voice was hoarse, "Senior brother, you are here too..."

Xiao YiCai acknowledged, both eyes met and then looked at the surrounding commoners, both shook their heads and smiled bitterly.

Looking towards the ancient path heading towards the north, looking at it from afar, the sky looked gloomy too, not a single trace of light.

Zhou YiXian, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist were among the crowd, Wild Dog Taoist, because of the large number of Qing Yun disciples and also of his weird facial appearance, covered most of his face with a cloth hat, followed behind Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan. Zhou YiXian walked in the crowd, glancing right and left, frowning tightly, from time to time sighed.

Xiao Huan whispered, "Grandpa, what is it?"

Zhou YiXian shook his head and said, "This war concerns the fate of the people but I'm afraid the probability of the Good Faction at Qing Yun Hill winning this war is not high."

Xiao Huan was silent, knew more or less the reason for Zhou YiXian's words. Ever since the demon beasts appeared in the mortal world, in just a short time, from the southern border to the Central Plains, sweeping away all obstacles, invincible and the strength of a tyranny, brutal and cruel, the damages resulted already surpassed the past disasters and natural calamities. And now, the world's last resistance were mostly gathered at Qing Yun Hill, and most of the people's hope, most likely were on that legendary Qing Yun sect all-conquering Zhu Xian Sword Formation.

Xiao Huan forced a smile and said, "Isn't there still a Zhu Xian Sword Formation, there is still hope."

Zhou YiXian shrugged his shoulders, said, "This...he he, forget it, anyway small commoners like us, we will just resign to fate." Speaking till here, he paused for

a moment and suddenly turned to look at the towering lofty, concealed within the dark clouds, the strange Qing Yun Hill peaks jutting out and looking somehow grim, then slowly said, "But these righteous Good Faction people! Better not start a fire in the backyard ..."

Xiao Huan was startled a bit, said, "What fire in the backyard?"

Zhou YiXian gave a queer laugh, shook his head and did not answer, walked ahead, Xiao Huan glared at him, did not bother to ask further, after all with the current situation, who would be in the mood to worry for the Good Faction. Just that Wild Dog Taoist following behind them, trembled for a moment, the pair of eyes hiding within the shadows under the cloth hat, glimmered unceasingly.

The long snaking queue of commoners walked for a day, Lin JingYu and the other disciples after working hard for the whole day too, watched as most of the people had already left, Lin JingYu then heaved a sigh of relief, truly felt that doing such things, compared to facing three or five ferocious beast demons, were even more tiring. While he was about to take a good rest, a child suddenly walked past, kept staring at Lin JingYu.

Lin JingYu felt strange, looked at the child and saw his tattered clothes, evidently not a child from a rich household but his features were elegant, his eyes bright, extremely adorable.

Lin JingYu smiled, softly said, "Little boy, is anything the matter?"

The child hesitated for a moment, handed a note over, timidly said, "Just now an uncle told me to pass this note to you."

Lin JingYu was surprised, took the note from the child, opened it and saw four words written neatly on the top.

"Fire in one's backyard!"

Lin JingYu frowned, pondered for a moment, spoke to the child, "What does this mean, oh right, where is the person who has given you the note?"

The child turned around and pointed ahead, suddenly a confused look on his face, said: "Yi, gone, just now that uncle who is wearing a hat, asked me to give you this."

Lin JingYu looked at the note in his hands, frowning tightly, looked up after a moment, only saw the sea of people, how could he find the mysterious person wearing a hat that the child talked about?

Qing Yun Hill, Small Bamboo Peak.

[Qiang lang!]

Like a dragon singing, brilliant light filled the house, TianYa Celestial Sword horizontally held in the hand, Lu XueQi's face was expressionless, looking at the sword. On the autumn-waters-like-sword-blade, reflecting her unparalleled face, her skin like snow.

She stared deeply at the sharp blade, TianYa seemed to sense something too, trembled slightly, as if excited.

"What are you thinking?" WenMin's voice was heard from the side, Lu XueQi silently watching the sword in her hand, after a long time said, "In a few days time, on this sword blade, whose blood will flow on it?"

WenMin walked slowly to her side, patted Lu XueQi's shoulder, softly said, "Alright, my good junior sister, the imminent catastrophe is before us, teacher too will not pursue the incident of your disobedience. As long as we do our best in this war, presumably Heaven will not seal off all roads."

Lu XueQi nodded but for some reason, an unshakable gloom lingered in her heart, quietly said, "Yes."

WenMin smiled and said, "That's good, teacher is still waiting for us to go to TongTian Peak! Let's go!"

Lu XueQi nodded again, put away TianYa, took a deep breath and then followed behind WenMin, walked out.

Travelling down the winding corridor, they arrived before the Small Bamboo Peak, ShuiYue Master was already standing there, a few junior Small Bamboo Peak female disciples were standing beside her. WenMin and Lu XueQi walked forward, WenMin spoke first, "Teacher, junior sister XueQi and I have arrived."

ShuiYue Master clasped her hands behind, slowly turned around, after glancing at WenMin, she looked at Lu XueQi. Lu XueQi lowered her head and did not dare to look at her teacher, only softly spoke, "Teacher, I am here. Disciple is unfilial, made you angry."

ShuiYue Master indifferently said, "I don't have the time to be angry."

Lu XueQi's face turned pale slightly, the others beside them did not dare to speak, WenMin shook her head slightly, looked at ShuiYue Master, called out pleadingly, "Teacher..."

ShuiYue Master humphed, then suddenly sighed, said, "Forget it, forget it, leave all these aside temporarily! This war, if we are able to stay alive, we will speak then."

All of the disciples did not dare to acknowledge, ShuiYue Master flung her sleeve, turned and spoke indifferently, "Let's go, Reverend sect head is still waiting for us at TongTian Peak!"

Once she had finished her words, a white light encompassing her figure shot up to the sky. WenMin looked at Lu XueQi, Lu XueQi forced a smile, WenMin whispered, "It's alright, don't think too much."

After speaking, she turned and spoke to the group, "Let's go too!"

For a moment, bright lights dazzled the sky above Small Bamboo Valley, streams of beautiful wondrous lights flew up, towards the heavy dark clouds, adding some colours, just that in the sky full of the dark clouds, in a blink swallowed those colourful lights.

Qing Yun Hill, Big Bamboo Valley.

Song Daren brought five junior brothers and stood outside the Observed Silence Hall, awaiting Tian BuYi and SuRu's appearance, just that time seemed to have passed for a long time, Tian BuYi husband and wife still did not appear.

Sixth disciple, Du BiShu, was feeling impatience, whispered to Song Daren, “Big senior brother, why hasn’t teacher and teacher’s wife appear, what are they doing inside?”

Song Daren glared at Du BiShu, snapped at him, “How would I know, if you want to know it that badly why don’t you go in and take a look!”

Du BiShu met with a rebuff, stammered and shrank back, grumbling, “Alright I know, I know, you couldn’t get your wife, don’t have to vent it on me!”

Song Daren had sharp ears and actually heard it, could not help but flared up, stretched his hand and slapped the back of Du BiShu’s head, angrily said, “What did you say?”

Du BiShu was shocked, he had always been timid, other than in awe of his teacher and his wife, it would be this senior brother but Song Daren usually was very accommodating, however when his marriage proposal with WenMin met with so many obstacles, it was a huge blow to him and he actually lost his temper.

Several junior brothers standing beside were fighting back laughter, glanced sideways at Du BiShu, Du BiShu looked embarrassed, was about to seek help from the other senior brothers, unexpectedly when he looked towards them, He DaZhi, Wu DaYi etc each was either looking at the sky or looking out far at the mountains, a look of reverie, remarkably alike a celestial that did not want to be concern with mortal affairs.

Du BiShu glared hatefully at those traitorous senior brothers, finally could only laughed drily to Song Daren, said, "Big, big senior brother, you don’t have

to rush, after this calamity, junior brother me will immediately go downhill and invite the best matchmaker to help you with your proposal...”

Before he could finish, Song Daren who had turned purple, with one foot kicked over, [pu tong] kicked Du BiShu out far, He DaZhi and the rest beside laughed secretly, each shaking their heads, only Du BiShu looked depressed, sat on the ground.

The faint laughter sounds outside the hall were heard, Tian BuYi and SuRu heard it, a rare trace of smile appeared on SuRu’s solemn face and then sighed, softly said, "BuYi, the disciples are all waiting!”

Tian BuYi dressed in long robe, his face stern, stood before the Observed Silence Hall San Qing deity statues, silently nodded his head. Then he stared at the three statues and took one step forward, picked up three incense sticks from the altar, lighted them up from the candles, solemnly held the incenses and bowed three times to pay his obeisance.

After inserting the incense sticks into the incense burner, Tian BuYi stood silently, SuRu also bowed three times, her expression respectful. When they were ready to turn around, Tian BuYi suddenly thought of something, stopped in his steps, SuRu was startled, looked back and said, “What is it, BuYi?”

Tian BuYi frowned and then suddenly turned and strided, he headed instead to the back of the San Qing deities statues. SuRu’s face changed, she seemed to comprehend something but looking at her expression, she seemed to be a little hesitant but in the end still followed Tian BuYi over.

Behind the statues, there was also another altar table but it was much smaller, beside it there was a yellow cloth curtain hanging down, concealing

half of it. Tian BuYi stood before this small altar, after looking at it for a while, he did not make any move to pray, after a long time, he stretched his hand into the cloth curtain, searched slightly and from the side of the altar, took out a spiritual wooden tablet, on it properly engraved: Senior Brother Wan JianYi Spirit Tablet!

SuRu watched from the side, watched Tian BuYi used his sleeve to gently wipe off the dust from the tablet, the dust was not thick, evidently someone had cleaned it frequently, after wiping it cleanly, Tian BuYi respectfully placed the tablet on the altar, took out three incense and lighted it, again bowed three times to the tablet.

SuRu's face was indifferent, quietly said, "BuYi, why are you doing this, don't tell me at this juncture, you are still hoping Wan senior brother will protect Qing Yun?"

Tian BuYi coldly said, "Wan senior brother after all was from Qing Yun, he had an air full of arrogance but he placed our sect as high importance. If he was to know about today's event, his spirit in Heaven will surely bless Qing Yun."

SuRu was silent, after a long time gently shook her head, sighed.

Tian BuYi again looked at the tablet for a long time then slowly said, "Let's go."

When both of them walked out from Observed Silence Hall, Song Daren and the other disciples had long been waiting outside the door, Tian BuYi, glanced from Song Daren to Du BiShu, nodded his head, he did not know what had happened in-between, from the corner of his eyes saw the quiet disciples' dormitory in the distance, in his eyes there was a trace of helplessness.

Perhaps it was the imminent catastrophe, the big battle that was about to begin! Tian BuYi looked to be in a very bad mood, did not speak much, looked at the disciples who had been waiting for a long time, in the end only just nodded his head, said, "Let's go! To TongTian Peak!"

Different lights flashed, Tian BuYi leading, with SuRu following closely behind him, the Big Bamboo Valley disciples hurried to follow, the horizon with the dark clouds looming, several brilliant lights flashed past again and then disappeared into the clouds.

Xiao YiCai, Lin JingYu and the rest of the Qing Yun disciples were extremely exhausted and finally on this day where the horizon turned dark, the ancient path where it sent all of HeYang City residents to the north, at the same time from outside HeYang City, there was still sporadic commoners streaming in, heading towards the north.

Only in a day's effort, Xiao YiCai, Lin JingYu and the rest of the Qing Yun disciples looked like they had lost weight, extremely fatigue and when each one of them spoke, their voices were all hoarse.

Standing at the city wall, gazing far at the gradually disappearing line of commoners, Xiao YiCai only then felt relieved, bitterly laughed, spoke hoarsely to Lin JingYu, "Finally sent them off."

Lin JingYu also heaved a long sigh, his tense expression also temporarily relaxed but his brows were still frowning, not like Xiao YiCai who was totally relaxed, he seemed to be still worrying about something.

Xiao YiCai was a clever man and soon noticed Lin Jing Yu was still looking worried, with a slight surprised asked, "Why, Lin junior brother do you still feel

that there is still something wrong?"

Lin JingYu was startled, shook his head and said, "Senior brother you have misunderstood, junior brother does not feel that something is wrong, just that facing the imminent calamity, feel uneasy."

Xiao YiCai nodded his head, patted his shoulder, said, "I understand, actually I am too. But as evil will not win the good, Heaven will not seal all doors, you and me are from the Good Faction, for the sake of the common people, the imminent battle, we will just do our best, don't have to think so much."

Lin JingYu smiled and nodded, said, "Senior brother is right."

Xiao YiCai smiled and said, "Then I will go over there and take a look." He left Lin JingYu and walked to the side, initially he intended to take another look in HeYang City, to ensure they did not leave out any commoners, if not once the beast demons arrive, most likely they will not be spared.

Unexpectedly, he had just taken a few steps when suddenly he heard Lin JingYu's quiet mumbling, "Back ... fire ... back ..."

Xiao YiCai was surprised, turned around and saw Lin JingYu frowning tightly, his expression looking perplexed, stood at where he was and mumbling to himself, listening carefully, the words sounded vague, some words came after the word after.

Xiao YiCai's eyebrows jumped, said, "Lin junior brother, what is it about the back of the mountain?"

Lin JingYu was shocked, looked up, "Back of the mountain, what back of the mountain?"

Xiao YiCai was instead stunned by his words, said, "I heard you kept saying something back of the mountain, back of the mountain, I guessed these few years you have been frequently visiting TongTian Peak Founders Ancestral Hall to offer sacrifices and helping to sweep the grounds, I thought something happened at the back of the mountain!"

Lin JingYu looking somehow embarrassed, quickly said, "No, no, I was just absent-mindedly talking to myself, I made senior brother worried."

Xiao YiCai smiled and said, "It's alright if things are well, Lin junior brother, the big battle is approaching soon, you best rest and keep yourself in good condition!"

Lin JingYu smiled and nodded, was about to speak when suddenly from far, a cry was heard from a Qing Yun disciple, Xiao YiCai and Lin JingYu were shocked, almost at the same time leapt up into the air, headed towards where the cry was heard.

The cry was heard from HeYang City southern gate, a few Qing Yun disciples was doing their last round of inspection but right now each of them, like facing a great foe, wielding their weapons, their expressions tensed. On the city wall, a ferocious strange beast with lion head and wolf body, its huge eyes bright and piercing, making a low roar, it was staring at those Qing Yun disciples but it seemed to know those people was not commoners and so for a moment did not make any rash moves.

Xiao YiCai and Lin JingYu landed down, by then the other disciples have also

rushed over, after everyone took a good look, all took a deep breath of cold air, Xiao YiCai heaved a long sigh, whispered, "It's the demon beast."

Suddenly, a Qing Yun disciple beside Lin JingYu shouted out, said, "Outside, outside..."

The cries of fear, everyone heard it and immediately tensed up, almost at the same time looked towards where the Qing Yun disciple pointed somewhere outside HeYang City.

Under that looming dark clouds, in the horizon, rumbling sounds of thunder were heard, the silent flashes of lightning pierced the firmament. The earth trembled slightly, the low, deep thunder like slowly seeping out from the recesses of the nine netherworlds, entered directly deep into the human soul, reverberating unceasingly.

Numerous demon beasts converged into an endless black terrible tide, surged forward from the distance, like a rumbling thunder but the sound had already surpassed the thunder sound in the horizon, the harsh Heaven and Earth, lightning like snakes swarming around. The compelling murderous air although was separated over a far distance, it had already assaulted them in the face.

All of the Qing Yun disciples were looking pale, Xiao YiCai clenched his teeth, loudly said, "Go, quickly go, return to Qing Yun Hill immediately."

By his forceful shout, the group of Qing Yun disciples did not dare to drag, each wielded their celestial sword and flew up to the sky, that lion-head-wolf-body monster on the wall roared loudly, his appearance vicious.

Lin JingYu was the last in the group, looking back from the air, saw the infinite surge of demon beasts, the earth looked like it was a sea of ferocious beasts, not a single sign of human.

This catastrophe, had finally arrived at the most critical time!

After hearing Xiao YiCai and the rest urgent reports, the packed Crystal Hall of Good Faction members at Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, for a moment was speechless.

Silence enveloped the grand hall, what should come, eventually still does.

Reverend DaoXuan slowly got up, his face solemn, slowly said, "Everyone, the world's fate is now here, now that the demon beasts had taken over HeYang City, soon they will attack Qing Yun, I will not say anything more here, everyone please return to have a good rest, in the days to come a battle of life and death with the demon beasts."

Everyone looked at each other, after a moment slowly stood up, whisperings and hush conversations gradually filled the Crystal Hall, and it was also in this muffled din, the crowd began to walk out.

Reverend DaoXuan turned to PuHong Master and Yun YiLan, who were sitting beside him, said, "Both please take a rest, I have something to do, will need to have a discussion with the other Qing Yun sect branch leaders."

PuHong Master and Yun YiLan both stood up, returned the greeting and said, "Reverend please go ahead."

Reverend DaoXuan returned the greeting, called Xiao YiCai, Xiao YiCai quickly

went up and followed Reverend DaoXuan into the inner rooms, at a certain place, the rest of the elders were already waiting there.

Lin JingYu watched them leave and then walked out by himself, walked aimlessly to the railings outside Crystal Hall, gazing out from the railings, the firmament dark like ink, the dark clouds heavy, not a trace of sunlight.

The mountain breeze like knives, [wu wu] whistling, cutting raw across his face.

He stood quietly but in his mind, unexpectedly recalled that mysterious note, and the four unexplainable words on it.

Fire in one's backyard...

Fire in one's backyard, Fire in one's backyard? What fire in one's backyard? Lin JingYu's mind kept turning, finally, his thoughts slowly gathered to one point, Xiao YiCai's stunned words resounded beside his ear: "Lin junior brother, what is it about the back of the mountain..."

Back of the mountain?

Lin JingYu again frowned, although his eyes were piercing but he was slowly shaking his head, feeling puzzled again. The contemplation again took a long time, until when he finally came out of his thoughts, he discovered that there was already nobody around. Lin JingYu sighed, slowly walked down the steps.

Ever since the appearance of the demon beasts, Qing Yun sect increased the defence around Qing Yun Hill in full force, especially the mountain ahead,

nobody knew when those innumerable vicious beasts would charge up. But Qing Yun Hill had always been precipitous, especially TongTian Peak which was even more lofty and pierced through the clouds, easy to guard and hard to attack, but for those cultivated martial artists, that was not a big obstacle but to the majority demon beasts which could not fly, it was an excellent defence.

Just that all along, the places where the demon beasts traversed were all flattened, numerous rumours also carried terrifying news, nobody could be sure that those demon beasts would not come up with unexpected ways of attack, and furthermore, the legendary Beast Deity until now, nobody knew his exact details, adding further to the people's fear.

Compared to the front of Qing Yun Hill, the back of Qing Yun Hill seemed to be totally sheer cliffs and precipitous rock faces, apes and monkeys would find it hard to cross, even though it was so, Qing Yun sect still arranged quite a number of disciples to patrol the skies, to guard against the unexpected. Just that there was one strange thing, at Qing Yun sect restricted Illusory Moon Cave and at the area around the Founders Ancestral Hall at the edge of the restricted area, the number of Qing Yun disciples was extremely little, almost as if Qing Yun sect was not at all worried about these two places.

And right now, the dim dark night had just passed, the dawn was just breaking, the lofty TongTian Peak towering into the sky, on the small path leading to the Founders Ancestral Hall and Illusory Moon Cave restricted areas, faint mist filled the air, following the gentle drift of the mountain breeze, lingered between the pine trees lining the path.

At this moment, not even the birds cries were heard, the damp air condensed into crystal beads, flowing down the green leaves, quietly dripping.

Not a trace of human figure!

Suddenly, a figure appeared on this path, it was Ghost Li.

He looked indifferent, couldn't tell any signs of fear and worry of being in the enemy's territory, also not any tension of being near the restricted area, only expressionlessly slowly walked on.

This path, he had once walked, a decade ago...

Ten years later, as if the scenery remained the same, nothing had changed, the evergreen pine and cypress, the exuberant grasses and trees, even the earth he was stepping on, seemed to be as soft and wet as that time.

Just that, he was the one who had changed.

The mountain breeze traversed the trees branches and blew his clothes, ruffled his hair, Xiao Hui who was crouching on his shoulder looked to be still sleepy, its eyes drooping, its tail coiled around Ghost Li's arm. However Ghost Li's eyes, was strangely bright.

This small meandering path, headed deep into the mountains, the faint mist gently spread opened in front of him and quietly closed up behind him, walking in this haze, he only walked forward, never looking back.

Walking along the path, he soon arrived at that three-ways split road, slightly to the left was still that deep, serene small path, and to the right, behind the forest, indistinctly revealed a few houses roof eaves.

That should be the Founders Ancestral Hall, Ghost Li thought in his mind. Ten years ago, he with Lin JingYu together fought against the Evil sect powerful

enemy, and it was also here, Lu XueQi confrontation with him.

And now, he with those times, those old friends, like strangers.

[Rustle, rustle ...]

The faint sounds were heard coming out from the forest, seemed like someone was up early sweeping, a melodious sound, Ghost Li stood quietly listening, out of trance, as if time, actually at these faint [rustle] sounds, quietly rippling echoing, quietly slipping away.

Suddenly like waking up from a dream, he abruptly turned back, the quiet atmosphere instantly as if congealed, even the distant faint rustling sounds, seemed to pause, silent.

Behind him, unknown since when, stood a person in black, a black veil covering his face - Mr Ghost.

Ghost Li's pupils slightly contracted, in a deep voice said, "You have come too."

Mr Ghost quietly said, "Yes."

Ghost Li said, "What are you here for?"

Mr Ghost shook his head and said, "I am here to lend you a hand."

Ghost Li sneered, said, "What did you say?"

Mr Ghost lightly said, "You don't have to doubt, there are some things you do not know, I have come specifically to let you know. There is no trap outside the Illusory Moon Cave but in it, there is a high-quality formation, it is the spirit guarding the Zhu Xian ancient sword, the source of it is no different than Zhu Xian Sword Formation. If outsiders wish to force their way in, it will activate the formation and at the same time alarm the Zhu Xian Sword Formation, then the consequences will be only death, if you are confident that you can defeat that Zhu Xian ancient sword, then I have nothing to say."

Ghost Li's pupils contracted, and in the distant haze, that faint mist seemed to tremble.

Mr Ghost looked at Ghost Li, said, "Originally it is extremely difficult for our Evil Sect people to enter this Illusory Moon Cave, but you are an exception, looking at the whole world, other than Qing Yun sect head and elders, only you will be able to enter."

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, coldly said, "What do you mean?"

Mr Ghost said, "This formation will surely use Qing Yun sect handed-down-generations Tai Ji Xuan Qing Way Shang Qing Realm as key, once you know the mechanism well, you can enter it, and after entering it, the illusions will fall like rain, whether you are able to remain steadfast, it will depend on yourself."

Ghost Li looked deeply at the black figure, was silent for a long time, said, "Why are you telling me so much?"

Mr. Ghost smiled, the black figure in the mist appeared to be swaying, like a spirit, faintly said, "You don't have to care so much, anyway I have finished my

words, believe it or not is up to you."

The mountain before Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, a young Qing Yun disciple who was sweeping the fallen leaves aside, was about to take a break when he saw a figure walking up slowly from the stairs at the foot of the mountain and dressed in Qing Yun robes, although there were many Qing Yun disciples but this person for the past ten years had traversed this place innumerable times, they had long been familiar with him.

"Lin senior brother." The young child with a tender voice, smiled and came up to him, said, "You are here so early! Are you going to the Founders Ancestral Hall at the back of the mountain again?"

Lin JingYu smiled and nodded, "Yes! Last night I didn't sleep well at all, my heart keeps feeling stuffy, as if something will happen so came up earlier today."

The other children who were also cleaning the area also gathered over, one of them asked, "Lin junior brother, heard that the demon beasts have already reached HeYang City at the foot of the mountain, will they attacked up here?"

The other children immediately started to add in but they were after all still young, not as worried as those well-known figures, although they were also worried about the demon beasts but they were much more optimistic.

Influence by their optimism, Lin JingYu's mood improved a lot, he smiled and said, "Oh, the demon beasts are fierce and vicious, presumably they will come attack Qing Yun."

"What?" like a pot exploded, the children started to make a racket.

Lin JingYu smiled and comforted them, motioned to them to quieten down and then said, "But don't we right now have the elders and seniors here at Qing Yun Hill, their skills are powerful and cultivation profound, definitely not afraid of the demon beasts. Beside, " Lin JingYu's face revealed a trace of mysterious, said, "We still have the invincible Zhu Xian Sword Formation! Have you forgotten?"

The children became excited, [he he] laughed, said, "Yes! Yes! We have Zhu Xian Sword Formation, we will surely win!"

"Precisely, when the demon beasts come, let them all die under our founder's sword formation, seek revenge for all of the commoners!"

Listening to their words, Lin JingYu with a smile, nodded, at the end, he gave them some instructions and then continued walking to the mountain rear. Leaving those carefree children, his expression suddenly looked solemn, walked silently, after a long while, he suddenly sighed, shook his head, mumbled to himself, "Better hurry to the back and seek guidance from senior!"

While speaking, he hastened his pace, headed towards the Founders Ancestral Hall behind TongTian Peak.

And while he was walking with his head bowed low, the layers of hazy mist at the back of the mountain, floated gently, like a dream that was never awakened from last night.

The three-way junction, Ghost Li and Mr Ghost stared at each other for a long

time, strange glints moved in their eyes, Mr Ghost also did not back away, looked directly at him.

After a long while, Ghost Li without speaking, suddenly turned and walked toward that deep and serene small path, Mr Ghost behind him, watched him go.

But at this time, suddenly, an old voice from the path to the Founders Ancestral Hall, floated out from the white haze, an indescribable tired, vicissitudes tone, an old man's voice, "Both, where are you planning to go?"

Ghost Li and Mr Ghost were startled, turned around and looked, the mist separated on the path, a bended figure slowly walked out. He was slightly bent over, as though as if the years were pressing and suffocating him, knife-like wrinkles on in his face, as if recounting the time wasted. Even the broom in his hands, at the moment it seemed to be as dilapidated as the owner.

Just that, this old man slowly walked on, about six chi away from Ghost Li and Mr Ghost, facing these two figures, this slightly tired old man, when he slowly lifted his head, his bright, piercing gaze, stared ahead.

"The early morning is chilly, the sleepy birds have not awaken, both willing to have a bowl of hot tea with this old man?"

, , , , , , , , , ,

Chapter 164 - Plotting

Morning, a cool wind gently blowing at Qing Yun Hill, causing the mountain mist to slowly turn, like a thin gauze floating in the dense forest. The three-way intersection outside the Founder Ancestral Hall, Ghost Li, Mr Ghost and the cleaner elder stood in a triangle, facing each other in a delicate atmosphere.

The wrinkles on the old man's face moved, speaking slowly in a husky voice, "Both are not from Qing Yun Hill, why did you come secretly to this sacred Qing Yun place, and for what reason?"

Ghost Li was silent, his eyes assessed the old man for a moment. Mr Ghost stood six feet from him, with both of their skills, they need not fear anyone but between them, very obviously neither trusted the other.

However at this moment, Mr Ghost's eyes, hidden behind the black veil, had been staring at the old man, his eyes bright and piercing, looked like it had another strange feeling.

That old man seemed to sense something, turned shakily around and looked at Mr Ghost, said, "This master, you have been staring at this senile, do you perhaps have any words to say?"

Mr Ghost suddenly laughed and said, "You are just an old man guarding Qing Yun Hill Founders Ancestral Hall, why did you have to meddle, this young man here..." He pointed at Ghost Li, said, "He has long heard of Qing Yu Hill Illusory Moon Cave and wants to go in and take a look, will this old gentleman let him pass?"

Ghost Li standing at a distance, suddenly coldly sneered, said, “Before coming up, you and I have already agreed, I will enter Illusory Moon Cave to distract Qing Yun Sect while you will take the opportunity to sneak into Qing Yun Founders Ancestral Hall, destroy all of Qing Yun sect ancestors spirit tablets and humiliate Qing Yun sect, why is it that when we are here, you are still not going in?”

Mr Ghost stifled, looked at Ghost Li, Ghost Li’s face was solemn, his expression serious and stern, even if he was to refute his words, it would also be hard for others to believe, Mr Ghost looked at him for a long time, as though giving a wry smile, slightly shook his head.

The old man looked at Ghost Li and looked at Mr Ghost again, his face gradually turned cold, the sharp gaze in his eyes slowly turned bright, indifferently said, “It seems like no matter what, both have ill intentions against Qing Yun. Just that Qing Yun sacred ground, senile me have been looking after for many years, if both intend to wreak havoc, will have to be first over my body.”

He said it so indifferently, facing the two mysterious and unfamiliar characters, slowly straightened his body.

In the dense forest after the early morning, the distant sounds of crisp bird cries, suddenly paused and disappeared, only the mountain mist which filled the mountain was still drifting, lingering around them.

Decades of time in life, seemed to quietly flow past in this stillness, became the crow’s feet at one’s eyes.

Mr Ghost suddenly said, “How is your left hand, still good?”

Ghost Li and the old man were stunned at the same time, Ghost Li naturally did not understand the reason for Mr Ghost’s sudden words but the old man obviously trembled, both of his eyes staring at Mr Ghost, unable to move.

In the early morning, in the mist, the old man stared for a long time, suddenly heaved a long sigh, the stunned expression slowly disappeared, unhurriedly said, “It’s you?”

Mr Ghost smiled and said, “It’s me.”

He paused, his eyes looking at the old man's face, even his voice carried some emotion, said, “These past few years, why did you age so much? Look at you like this, who would still recognize you as the once famous Qing Yun sect Wan JianYi!”

The old man heard the words, ‘Wan JianYi’, his body suddenly trembled, as if the three words were like sharp knives, one by one stabbed into his heart, even his aged-scarred face, revealed agitation rarely seen.

“Wan JianYi, he he, Wan JianYi...”

He muttered the name, complicated and anguish expressions appeared on his face.

Ghost Li frowned, Wan JianYi this name, he had heard it before when he was still Qing Yun sect disciple, just that he never expected this legendary presumed dead for many years figure would still be alive, and that the one which caused

an internal strife among the Qing Yun various branch leaders and Taoist Cang Song who because of that person, betrayed Qing Yun, would actually turned into such a humble old man.

The cold wind blew past, brushed past the clothes of the three people, in this misty surreal mountain, the past seemed to reverberate around here too.

Until, the once Wan JianYi, once viewed the world with arrogance, now instead a wrinkled old man, slowly looked up.

[Pei] a light sound, issued from his hands. Ghost Li and Mr Ghost both looked over at the same time, saw light gray powder streaming down, the decrepit broom in Wan JianYi's hand, in his agitated mood, was crushed into powder, scattered onto the ground.

The mountain breeze blew, blowing away the powder on the ground little by little, Wan JianYi stared at the residue in his hand but now disappeared without a trace. Following which, he lifted his head and stared at Mr Ghost, word by word said, "If it wasn't for you that time, I would have become an invalid, I am indebted to you and I have always remembered it."

Mr Ghost lightly said, "You and I felt like old friends at the first meeting, at northwest wildlands and that PuZhi monk..."

Ghost Li who had been standing silently by the side suddenly shook, his eyes glimmered brightly.

Mr Ghost and Wan JianYi did not notice Ghost Li's expression change, continued, "Although the three of us were from different sects but at least we

have made acquaintance once. Now that PuZhi has passed away for many years and there wasn't any news of you for a long time, unexpectedly we can still meet today, my trip to Qing Yun is considered not in vain." His words of feelings, conveyed his emotions.

The tensed expression on Wan JianYi, gradually relaxed, sighed and said, "Yes, I never thought that, I can still meet old friends...stop there!"

Halfway through his words, he voice suddenly turned urgent, broke off with a shout, it was Ghost Li who had silently turned around, unwilling to listen to the two of them speaking about the past, walked off by himself towards the Illusory Moon Cave.

Wan JianYi sneered, he only raised a hand, his withered palm out of a sudden seemed to become bigger and longer like a thousand times, grabbed from the back like a giant claw.

Ghost Li paused his footsteps, did not even turn back, the spot where his wrist was shaking, a flash at the top of his head, a circular image drawn in the air, instantly surged with light, it was TaiJi image, dark-green light glimmering. Wan JianYi's giant claw was held up by the light, immediately deflected back but in just this short time, Wan JianYi's withered body was already before Ghost Li, a shocked expression once again appeared on his face, said, "Tai Ji Xuan Qing Way? Who exactly are you?"

Mr Ghost's voice was heard from behind, said, "He is an important figure at the current Evil Sect Ghost King Sect!"

Ghost Li frowned but still did not speak.

Wan JianYi assessed him with a few glances, nodded his head and said, “So you are the Zhang Xiao Fan who was cast out of Qing Yun sect ten years ago and joined the Evil Sect?”

Ghost Li’s face like frost, coldly said, “Move.”

Wan JianYi did not have the slightest intention to give way but after assessing Ghost Li, suddenly sighed and said, “Tian junior brother is actually able to cultivate out a disciple like you, it is really great.”

Ghost Li’s expression changed but immediately snorted, his face showing even some arrogance, as if regarding this celebrated Wan JianYi as nothing, strided and walked. Wan JianYi straightened his body, clasped his hands behind, showed not a sign of avoiding.

Watching as the two approached nearer, Wan JianYi suddenly frowned, his body rose sharply from the ground, almost at the same time, the ground below him groaned, instantly cracked, flashing with cold dark-green light from the Soul-Devouring, shooting sharply out.

Wan JianYi in the air, his body swayed, suddenly with a loud shout, shook the surroundings, he actually bare-handedly grabbed towards the Soul-Devouring which was pursuing over. The Sinister Orb at the tip of the Soul-Devouring immediately glowed brightly red, lines of dark red strands all lighted up, mixed in the black light, even without hesitation, charged straight ahead.

Black gases surged and rolled, red lights flashed darkly, in an instant all around them darkened down but Wan JianYi unexpectedly charged down, as if the unearthly harsh atmosphere had no effect on him. Ghost Li’s countenance changed, this level of cultivation and skills, it could be said this was his first time

seeing it.

Looking like Wan JianYi was about to grab this ominous object in his hands, but in this short moment, suddenly in the black red light, on the Sinister Orb, a strange pattern surfaced out deep from within, from small to big, from dark to bright, in an instant standing out from the black air and strange lights, brilliant golden light, it was a Buddhist incantation, '卐', a burst of vigorous and pure force, within it a certain strangeness, hit back at Wan JianYi's palm.

.

Wan JianYi and Ghost Li moved backwards at the same time, the Soul-Devouring magical weapon in the air also flew back to Ghost Li's hand.

Wan JianYi paused in mid-air, his face slightly pale, staring at Ghost Li, spoke word by word, "The Great Brahman Wisdom!"

Ghost Li expressionless but he was stunned secretly, the level of cultivation of this person in front of him, was really unfathomable, these ten over years, this was the first time he saw someone who was able to resist Soul-devouring evil power bare-handedly.

While he was secretly shocked, he did not know the shock that Wan JianYi had. Wan JianYi at that time was already an exceptional rare talent, his skills far surpassed his fellow sect's disciples, other than Reverend DaoXuan who was comparable to him, he viewed the rest with disdain. Later on although he met with misfortune one after another, his fate bumpy and rough but this day facing this junior, that innate air of arrogance in him was still as before.

Just that after exchanging moves with Ghost Li, he was really surprised, the evil power of the Sinister Orb was strange and ferocious, although he looked unharmed but it had already influence the agitation of his body's blood. And

when Ghost Li displayed the Buddhism True Way the Great Brahman Wisdom, merging Taoism and Evil sect true ways together as one, perfectly, even him with his level of skills, was at his wits' end, forced to retreat, he could not help but was greatly shocked.

The cold wind [suo suo], blowing past the scene, the mist gently drifted, looking like it was about to disperse.

Wan JianYi looked at Ghost Li for a long while, nodded his head and said, "It really is every JiangShan generation has its talent, didn't expect that in my remaining years, this old man can still meet someone like you, considered at least Heaven did not let me down."

Ghost Li frowned, did not quite understand the meaning of his words. Only Mr Ghost who was standing at the back, softly sighed once, seemed to be feel the old friend he once had, after many years, that arrogant and obstinate spirit still had not change. But just when he was sighing, that pair of eyes glimmered with strange glint, staring intently at Wan JianYi.

Ghost Li coldly said, "Make way."

Wan JianYi looked at him, that young man in front of him, cold and arrogant, that expression, suddenly looked so familiar. He suddenly laughed out loud, his expression had that slight bit of forlorn but soon replaced by lofty sentiments, gave a long laugh and said, "Good, good, good, as expected a young man. The mortals in the world by right should be disregarded! But if you want to cross, then you have to depend on your own ability!"

Ghost Li with a long whistle, did not speak much, leapt up. Wan JianYi's pupils contracted, suddenly moved back, his body flew to the edge of the dense forest, his right hand grabbed one pine tree which a person could wrap one's

arms around, with a loud shout, in that instant the surroundings quaked, in the rumbling sounds, the huge pine tree was uprooted, like a giant arm horizontally in the air.

Wan JianYi's hand propping up the giant tree, standing imposingly in mid-air, where was that once wretched stooped appearance? Looking at him, highly-spirited and vigorous, his face excited, his features wide opened, it was that unparalleled look of that time.

"Come, " Wan JianYi shouted loudly, like a thunder passing by, "You have the Sinister Orb, come take a look at my Qing Yun giant tree?"

His body wavered, in that instant the tree moved, [wu wu] a sound, in a blink turned extremely swift, the sky was all of the tree's shadow, blotting out the sky and covering the earth charging over, the urgent sound of the wind, there was no longer other sounds.

Ghost Li's face changed greatly, flipped in the tree's shadow, that giant tree was like a giant surging wave, and also like an endless tide, waves after waves, each higher than another, pursuing under the clear sky, the mountain mists also seemed to tremble.

The wind passed through the trees, turned into a violent wind, evolved into a vortex in the air, swallowing up the world, Ghost Li was in the heart of the vortex, surrounding him were the dancing shadows of trees, the strong wind cut his face like knives, it was as if if he wasn't careful, he would be cut to pieces by this sharp object.

Wan JianYi was laughing wildly non-stopped, as if once again he was back to the time where he ruled the world, his face expression looking even more

excited, all of his attention on Ghost Li. Ghost Li in whirlwind, suddenly clenched his teeth, the tree shadow like a mountain looming nearing, this time he did not dodge, raising his right hand, the Soul-devouring glimmering with eerie dark red light flew out, in the hundreds of trees shadows, with a [pu] sound, accurately nailed itself on the tree, in that instant demonic power danced, streams of red lights leapt up from the Sinister Orb, winding past the trunk, where it passed by, the bark split and cracked, broken debris flew up.

In that instant, one third of the tree trunk was already devoured by this evil power but Wan JianYi was not surprised, instead he laughed, with a long laugh, chopped down with his left hand, the tree trunk brushed past by the invisible wind, immediately like tofu, was cut off. The front part of the trunk enveloped by the red light, issued a moan and dissolved into powder, scattered into the wind.

But Wan JianYi who was in front, propped up the trunk remnant, like propping the sky, his might and power unexcelled in the world. The sky filled with trees shadows immediately disappeared, the storm ceased, the violent wind stopped, the entire world seemed to pause in their breaths, all watching that figure flying in the air!

He descended from the sky, with a loud shout, raising the trunk rumbled down.

The forceful wind shrieked, rushing over with a piercing sound, three zhangs radius on the ground, with a crashing sound, stones and sands instantly flew out, only Ghost Li alone with his clothes flapping in the wind, his face pale, staring intently at the giant tree descending from the sky.

That strange whistle was like thunder shocking the ears, in a blink arrived, Ghost Li clenching his teeth tight, suddenly both of his hands waved around,

TaiJi image spinning rapidly, rising abruptly up from the top of his head, blocking in front of the thunderous tree trunk.

The two great forces collided with a crash in mid-air, even the land and mountains around them also seemed to shake, the ground below Ghost Li, his feet had already sank in.

The front part of trunk was compressed by the great force of the TaiJi Xuan Qing Way Road, splitted completely, the wood splinters flew out everywhere, in a blink again turned into powder, scattered without a trace. But the trunk still pressed on, stabbing down inch by inch on the TaiJi image glimmering in the dark green light. Ghost Li's face turned paler, the demonic light of the Soul-devouring surged brighter, the Buddhist incantation again appeared, below the TaiJi image, golden light shining, laying down another layer.

The violent wind whistling, almost nobody could breathe, the wild wind ravaged, the two men in the green dense forest mountain fought each other oblivious of everything, each refusing to give way, except that dark figure flickering indistinctly.

Wan JianYi with an impassioned look, even the deep wrinkles right now had all disappeared, as if his time during his youth many years ago, all returned to his body at this moment.

That period of once endless excitement, haughty laughing at the world!

He made a long cry to the sky, like a dragon making a roar, that feeling of the violent wind hitting his face, like his entire body blood burning!

He laughed loudly and dashed down, all of his entire acquired skills burst forth onto that trunk, his entire lifetime of cultivation like a fire flame, rumbled out.

The Buddhist incantation instantly dispersed!

Layers of heavy pressure, like toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, pressed down, blood trickled out of Ghost Li's lips, his pale face suddenly another flush of red, spat out a mouthful of fresh red blood, spraying onto the Soul-devouring.

Fresh blood dripping, quietly merging in, the icy-cold breath, reverberated deep from the heart.

Both of his eyes turned blood red!

By a hair's breath, suddenly, the howling violent wind in the sky stopped, the Gods-shocking-ghosts-worrying malevolent atmosphere disappeared, the figure like a celestial figure so mighty and powerful, suddenly started to waver, gradually losing strength.

A dark shadow, swiftly brushed past behind Wan JianYi and Ghost Li's true ways which had long been amassed, suddenly without the pressing power, immediately burst forth, dark green and golden lights, dark red demonic power, the three true ways merging into one great force instantly burst up into the sky, hitting squarely onto Wan JianYi's chest, in that instant, sounds of bone breaking like beads falling, [pi pi pa pa] sounded ceaselessly. Wan JianYi paused in mid-air, did not flew out, only that his body out of a sudden slacked down, starting from the chest, his entire body muscles seemed to lose their support, started an irreversible shrinking.

Ghost Li was stunned, the next moment, he subconsciously caught Wan JianYi's body, when his body landed in his hands, that aged body again told him, this was such a fragile old man. When the body was flipping down, he clearly saw, a black palm print at the back of Wan JianYi's body.

Ghost Li carrying Wan JianYi's body, landed, he and the breathless Wan JianYi at the same time turned back, the black figure standing among the mist which had not dispersed, it was Mr Ghost.

The glint in Ghost Li's eyes were like demonic fire, burning fiercely, he coldly said, "What did you do?"

Mr Ghost ignored him and instead looked at Wan JianYi, that old man at the brink of death, was also staring at him, just that, the expression in his eyes looked a lot more complicated.

The veil on Mr Ghost's face fluttered gently, not knowing whether was it also the agitation of his state of mind, only his voice, was still that emotionless, "After all these years, are you still like this? Still so trusting towards friends, not a slightest wary?"

Wan JianYi opened his mouth, looked as if he wanted to speak but when his mouth was opened, he vomited out a mouthful of fresh blood. His face turned rapidly pale, as if life was also quietly slipping away from him.

Then, he gently smiled, in the blood and pain, faintly smiled once, turned his head and looked at Ghost Li.

That look, for some reason at the moment, was instead gentle.

Ghost Li inhaled deeply, suddenly the rim of his eyes felt hot, this old man whom a moment ago, was still fighting till life and death, right now instead he did not dare to look directly at him in the eyes. He silently placed the old man down, stood up, quietly said, "If you have the Dragon Slayer Sword in your hand, I am definitely not your match."

Wan JianYi looked at this young man, both of his hands tightly clutching, his body seemed to be slightly trembling. Then, Ghost Li turned, stared at Mr Ghost. Mr Ghost did not avoid his stare, even the despise, disgust and abhor look which Ghost Li did not bother to conceal, he did not seem to care.

Ghost Li silently stared at him for a while and then without speaking, turned around and walked towards the mountain trail to Illusory Moon Cave, soon his figure disappeared.

Leaving only two people at the scene.

Mr Ghost slowly walked to Wan JianYi. The helpless old man lay on the ground, slowly raised his eyes, looked at him, blood continued to flow out from his mouth.

At this moment, suddenly, footsteps sound was heard from a distance, it was someone coming up, travelling through the mist, looked like the person would soon arrive.

Mr Ghost's countenance changed, black shadow swayed, in a blink disappeared into the mist.

A moment later, Lin JingYu figure flashed out from the mist, arrived at the scene and saw everything clearly.

The faint smile instantly froze, an incredulous expression in his eyes, that old man who had for the past decade lived with him, was covered in blood and lying weakly on the ground.

“Ah!...”

Lin JingYu dashed over, a look of despair on his face and he totally did not discovered, behind him, a black shadow flashed past.

，，

Chapter 165 - Illusory Moon

“Senior, senior, what happened to you? What has happened?...”

Lin JingYu rushed to Wan JianYi, kneeled down, both of his hands trembling and trying to support him up but where his hands touched, were all softness, a chill went through his heart, Lin JingYu, like in a bottomless ice pit, felt not a single area on this elder’s body where his bones were whole.

“Who is it, who is it?” Lin JingYu's voice suddenly turned hoarse, his teeth biting down hard on his lips, blood flowed instantly, even his eyes were cracking with anger and despair.

“Senior, senior...”

He cried out softly, choking, and finally cried. He never knew that he could cry, before this weak old man, the despair ten years old seemed to envelop him once again.

Wan JianYi weakly looked at the young man, looking at him in despair and in grief, to the extent where it could not be fake, maybe, after all there was still someone who was sincere to me, Wan JianYi thought to himself.

His fingers moved and then, as if the gods took pity on him, he raised his hand shakily.

Lin JingYu was shocked, grabbed his hand, anxiously said, “Senior, senior, do you have something to say, who made you like this, I, I will seek revenge for you, who, who is it?”

Wan JianYi’s face turned more and more pale, even his breathing slowly turned low but for some reason, his eyes turned sharper, his hand in Lin JingYu’s palm, his finger slightly moving...

Lin JingYu was startled for a moment, looked down, in the centre of his palm, that weak old finger, stained with blood, gently scrawled to sketch out the strokes: “Be...careful...”

Suddenly, behind Lin JingYu, in the stretch of mist, a black shadow flashed, Mr Ghost with his eyes glowing, stared over. Lin JingYu was back-facing Mr Ghost and fully concentrating on Wan JianYi’s finger, sensed nothing at all. However, Wan JianYi saw, his gaze silently met Mr Ghost’s across the distance, as if a hundred years of time had passed by.

The vicissitudes of life that once...

Wan JianYi suddenly smiled, a smile of blood, facing Mr Ghost, then he shook his head.

Lin JingYu waited for a long time but Wan JianYi did not continue, he lifted his head in shock, Wan JianYi’s head drooped to the side, he had already stopped breathing. Lin JingYu’s body shook, both of his hands trembled, staring disbelievingly at the face which had lost its life, after a long while, he cried out loudly, “Senior...”

The anguish cries, were heard from him who had thrown himself on the old man.

Mr Ghost stood quietly behind him, staring at the aged old face of Wan JianYi, after a long time, quietly retreated, disappeared into the mist, from a far distance, a faint sigh was heard.

Wolves howled from the foot of the mountain, carried by the wind, sharp, vicious roars continued unceasingly.

At the summit of Qing Yun mountain, the crowd of human heads and shoulders stirred, the Good Faction members had gathered at TongTian Peak summit, standing at the forefront was Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong Master and Yun YiLan etc, their faces solemn, frowning tightly, gazing down towards the foot of Qing Yun mountain.

The faint smell of blood, could be detected indistinctly in the wind, invoking thoughts of the innumerable cruel and vicious demon beasts below the mountain. Nobody knew, after this calamity, what would be the result?

At the public square outside Crystal Hall, the crowd stirred but was silent, everyone looked solemn.

It was also at this quiet moment, suddenly, a long whistle rushing to the sky was heard from a distance, like a wolf howl, like a ghost wail, sharp and piercing the sky, pressing from afar.

Following the source of the sound, it seemed to be from the foot of the mountain but the the sharp cry penetrated into the clouds, for a moment

everyone turned pale. The sharp cry circled and reverberated around, made a few turns at the precipitous summit in the white clouds, then slowly lowered. But when it was about to cease, abruptly below the mountain, ten thousands of the beasts roared in unison, the numerous roars towards the sky, converged as one like an avalanche, Heaven and Earth changed countenance, rumbling over.

The clouds with a rumble dispersed, the steep mountain peak, a mass of black gas rose from the foot of the mountain, gathering more and more, turning denser and denser, accumulated at the sky opposite TongTian Peak, until it blocked out the sunlight. The black clouds gradually drifted to this paradise-like place.

Not sure who was the first to shout out, everyone turned over, deep inside the dark clouds, in the whipping wind, a young man dressed in bright silk clothing, stood standing with his hands clasped behind, his face expressionless, indifferently watching the people at this mountain.

In the eyes of the Heaven and Earth, what is this thing called human?

He waved gently, his stare seemed to pass through this mountain.

At the foot of the mountain, the thousands of beasts roared, the bloody smell came in waves, the miserable cries, finally arrived...

As if he had sensed something, Ghost Li paused, frowned slightly and turned, facing towards the mountain before TongTian Peak, heavy dark clouds in the horizon, the violent winds howled, although not very far away but the weather was completely different from the mountain behind him.

The warm sunlight, spilled down from the sky, shone onto his clothes.

Ghost Li slowly looked away, subconsciously looked to his shoulder but Xiao Hui was not there. This trip to the Illusory Moon Cave, he deliberately did not bring Xiao Hui, the dangers involved were obvious, he himself was not confident too. The fight with that mysterious old man just now, although Mr Ghost lent a hand but Ghost Li felt an inexplicable feeling towards that old man. The thousands years of Qing Yun sect history, it was really a place of crouching tigers and hidden dragons.

Not long ago, wasn't he also a part of it?

He pursed his lips with an indifferent expression, again started to walk ahead.

The strips of lands beside the small path were similar to the previous path, dense woods everywhere, evergreen pine and coniferous, thick vegetation, only this mountain trail meandered forward, leading to the unknown mystery.

Deep inside the woods, faint crisp sounds of the birds' cries could still be heard indistinctly, it seemed that scene of catastrophe at the mountain ahead did not have the slightest impact on this mountain, peaceful atmosphere filled the place, even the air was still permeated with a clear cold taste.

Ghost Li initially had a hint of anxiety, in this tranquil environment, very quickly his emotions became calm, to the extent that when he first lifted his head and saw 'Illusory Moon Cave' the four words, facing one of the world's famous place, he instead did not have any slightest expression, as if looking at an ordinary mountain cave.

And In fact, in front of him, it did look like an ordinary cave.

Taller than half of the average person, the entrance was about seven chi wide, appeared on a gentle hillside, next to it was green vines and thorns, some drooped over the entrance, when the mountain breeze blew over, the vines gently swayed. And underneath the green vines, on the stone above the entrance, engraved with four words:

Illusory Moon Cave.

Other than the meaning of these four words itself, the entire surroundings including these four words, were so unostentatious, could it be that this, was the origin of Qing Yun sect for two thousands years?

The book that contributed to numerous outstanding talents and heroes, including Qing YunZi and Qing Ye Founder's nameless ancient book, was it just quietly lying in here?

And that world-stunning ancient sword!

Ghost Li silently looked at the four words, the time and weather-battered words seemed to be also silently staring at him.

He did not speak, and did not heave any sigh, the next moment, he walked in, as if, stepping into the past...

It was not as deep and secluded as he had imagined, appearing before him was a simple stone room, one glance and he could clearly see all of the furnishings in the room. A few stones piled at a corner, the slightly damp corners of the walls had indistinct mosses, the only difference with the outside was that, it was especially quiet in here, entering the cave, it was as if

everything suddenly turned quiet, like being cut off from the outside.

Looking away from the surroundings, Ghost Li's eyes landed on the stone wall facing the cave entrance. On the flat stone wall, a slabstone of Tai Ji diagram was inlaid, this was the only object which could be associated with Qing Yun sect in this cave.

Ghost Li deeply inhaled, went up, stopped in front of the Tai Ji diagram. There were many marks on the diagram, most of the places had signs of damage, evidently from ages ago. Ghost Li silently looked at this thing, the words of Mr Ghost slowly reverberating in his mind.

The next moment, he gently placed his hand on the Tai Ji diagram, faint dark-green light, emitted from his palm. Ghost Li expressionlessly looked at the light from his hand, felt the familiar Tai Ji Xuan Qing Way energy flowing in his body meridians, the energy that once belonged to this mountain!

Like being awakened from a slumber, the peaceful atmosphere in the room was broken by a faint sound, like the entire cave dwelling was softly sighing, something started to rotate, and then, the Tai Ji diagram also started to light up with dark-green light, at the same time, the diagram started to turn.

From left to right exactly one round, the stone walls with a sound of [ka], everything stopped. Ghost Li took back his hand and quietly waited.

The moment of silence disappeared instantly, deep rumbling sounds were heard from the cave, at the right hand side of the diagram, the perfect whole stone walls had cracks forming a ring and then it slowly rotated to the side, opening up, revealing a secret entrance. But this entrance had a greyish-white mist-like thing floating in it, it looked like mist and also seemed to be water

ripples, revolving non-stop, in it it looked hazy and surreal.

Ghost Li looked at the water mist, Mr Ghost after all did not lie to him. But in this mysterious water mist, who knows what was in it?

He did not hesitate, like he did not even contemplate, strided in.

Water mist enveloped him, his figure soon disappeared and that two stone walls quietly rotated back this time, gently closed up, revealing not a single mark.

In a trance, in the haze, in the deep firmament, a flash of lightning passed, stunningly struck across the long dark night, turning into a huge lightsaber from Heaven, so dazzling bright, nobody could watch it directly, stabbing deep and straight into the heart.

Then, from the pitch-dark firmament sky, a strange moon glimmering with unusual silver light rose, hung high in the horizon.

At that moment, the mind was blank, everything was forgotten, only the eyes still staring ahead, behind that white light.

There seemed to be sound of deep, hidden bitterness, someone was softly weeping but then there was a familiar laughter, [wa] an immature cry and finally started crying.

For some reason, he held his breath!

An inexplicable tension, his heart palpitated, wind seemed to blow past his ears but he could not feel his own presence, like a pair of eyes searching for something, finally saw...

That tiny small village, and that dilapidated thatched temple behind the village.

“Delivered yet?” A man's voice asked anxiously.

“Delivered already! Mother and child are safe, it is a boy!” The midwife’s voice carried delight, loudly said, “Congratulations!”

“He he, he he...” The honest man good-naturedly laughed, the genuine feelings had some relief and rejoice. The next moment, he saw the crying infant boy, the infant who was still nestled in the arms of his parents.

“What shall we name him? The father of the child!” The mother, sounding weak but still had a smile of happiness on her face.

The father thought for a while, said, “We are illiterate, I would say the most learned person in this village will be the school teacher, Mr Lin, at the east of the village, whenever the village has a child, isn’t their names given by him, why don’t we go request him to name?”

The mother nodded and the father went out. After a while, he walked back in, carrying a smile on his face, holding a note, said, “Mr Lin said, people like us, the most important thing is to be safe and not to forget our place, and to just live our lives well, so he gave three characters, written on this.”

The mother joyfully said, “Oh, a learned person is really different, what name did he give our son?”

The father with his rough hands brought the note to the mother and hugged mother and the sound-asleep infant with his arm, lowered his voice, as if he had utmost reverence and tenderness for those three words, quietly said,

“Zhang, Xiao, Fan...”

[Rumble]

A shock of thunder suddenly was heard from the firmament, the sky actually rained, his whole body suddenly shivered, breathing hard!

The rain outside the house, the sky like ink, the Qing Yun mountains in the distant looked savage, in the wailing wind and weeping rain, the father and mother hugged together, their serene faces smiling, gazing at the infant in their arms...

He wanted to shout out loud but he could not make any sound, thousands and thousands of words spinned rapidly in his mind and in the end they only formed two words:

“Father, mother!”

The rain full of sky, all seemed to fall onto his face, the coldness penetrating into the bones.

The illusory moon glimmering with faint light in the horizon.

[Pong!]

A stone thrown from the sky, it seemed to pass through his body and landed behind, the sky had unknowingly turned clear, a group of children was running around the village, playing and laughing out loud.

The ordinary-looking boy was running with his might at the fore, some bigger-looking boys leading a group of kids was chasing him and shouting loudly, “Zhang XiaoFan, stop if you have guts!”

The child at the fore with a sound of [pei], replied while running, “You think I am an idiot!” and instead ran even faster.

Chasing all the way, those children soon approached that thatched dilapidated temple at the east of the village. Looking from the outside, the temple was in ruins, not knowing how many centuries of weather it had bore.

Zhang Xiao Fan was the first to dash in, the rest of the children soon followed in, in that dilapidated small temple, the voices of children were heard.

He stared, his mind suddenly another blank, a feeling of inexplicable fear, its tendrils snaking out buried deep in his heart, filling up his mind.

One step, another step, he quietly approached the thatched temple, went near the nightmare that seemed to have disappeared a long time ago.

A bigger, young boy with delicate features was riding on Zhang Xiao Fan's body, his face showing conceit, smiled and said, "Caught you, this time you have nothing to say right?"

Zhang Xiao Fan rolled his eyes, said, "Doesn't count, doesn't count, you made a sneak attack on me, how can that count?"

The boy was surprised, bewilderedly said, "When did I sneak attack you?"

Zhang Xiao Fan said, "Lin JingYu you are good, you dare say this door plank is not placed by you here?"

The boy who was called Lin JingYu loudly said, "There is no such thing!"

Zhang Xiao Fan pursed his lips, cocked his head, a look of determination not to yield, not to submit.

Lin JingYu was angry, with one hand strangled his neck, angrily said, "We agreed that to admit defeat once caught, do you submit?"

Zhang Xiao Fan ignored him.

Lin JingYu with his face red, increased the force in his hands, loudly said, "Submit or not?"

Zhang Xiao Fan's throat was choked by him, his breathing gradually turned difficult, slowly his face also started to turn red but even at his immature age, he was very obstinate, refused to make a sound.

Lin JingYu became even angrier, increased his force, kept repeating, "Submit or not, submit or not, submit or not?"

Submit or not...submit or not...this voice suddenly like an avalanche, reverberated in his head, the years of heartache, in this incessant shouts, gushed up his heart.

Then, like he had once anticipated, and also like he was unprepared - the hand that quietly stretched out in time, withered and full of wrinkles, so familiar, so intimate but not so long ago, it was that shocking, with boundless hatred!

The old monk, smiling, still that amiable and kind, stood in front. The next moment, his world was completely blank, the rest of it, the village, children, disputes, all suddenly disappeared, only that compassionate and gentle old monk, smiled at him, like a painting that never faded in the distant time.

His entire body trembled, an indescribable grief and indignation deep from within his heart surged up his heart, he could not control and howled long at the sky.

The sky, when did it turn dark again?

There was wind and rain, quietly falling!

Chapter 166 - Intense Fight

The thick stench of blood, enveloped TongTian Peak of Qing Yun Hill, even the spiritual water Kylin guardian who was usually languid, at the moment also appeared restless, constantly swimming back and forth in the ice pool and making low roars. And the various Good Faction people who were in the Crystal Hall, every one of them looked grim and looking down to the foot of the mountain. After the Rainbow Bridge was the huge YunHai public square, at this moment, a fierce and brutal fight had been going on for a day and night.

[Translator's note: YunHai literally means a sea of clouds. I am not sure which one it meant so I used YunHai for now.]

Even though they had already expected the horror and cruelty from this fight with the demonic beasts but the harsh reality of the scene still struck a chill into many Good Faction members' hearts. The demon beasts attacked up the mountain, like a gale of storm sweeping across, although the Good Faction members continued to make attacks from the sides but the enormous torrent formed by the innumerable beasts did not care about the small number of enemies making sneak attacks, like a thunder rumbling, like an angry tide, sweeping up, routing whoever instantly. And those people who was trying to obstruct and attack, felt helpless, facing the black masses, killing one or two or even a dozen demons, it almost did not amount to anything!

And like that, their original strategy of using the mountain's' natural defenses to slow down the beasts, in a blink, were damaged beyond repair by those brutal beasts. The Good Faction men were forced to retreat up TongTian Peak, until the beasts reached YunHai public square, Reverend DaoXuan and the rest acted decisively, gathered and concentrated most of the Good Faction strength, to face the enemy at the public square, at that moment, brilliant lights from the

hovering magical weapons in the sky, above TongTian Peak YunHai, flesh and blood sprayed, miserable cries heard incessantly.

The dark tide, waves after waves crashed over frenziedly, and before them, hundreds of Good Faction people, half stood on the ground, half in the air, numerous colorful brilliant lights created a colourful cold city wall, emitting ice cold light.

The demon beasts, as if they knew not pain or fear, like a huge tide surged over, at the almost several miles wide light wall, crashed onto it with their bodies, in that instant, the dazzling gleam quivered, lights flashed crazily, the chilling cries like a dense shower of rain instantly swept past TongTian Peak summit, piercing directly deep into the heart.

The several hundreds beasts at the forefront at that instant were turned into minced meat and blood by the cold brilliant light, the thick blood stench like a violent wind, [woo] brushed past the ears, the sky of blood rain burst opened with a crashing sound and slowly fell, little by little, landed on the Good Faction people's faces, hands.

Making one nausea upon smelling!

Before they could compose themselves, another wave of beasts had arrived, the initial smooth light wall immediately received an enormous crushing force, a number of areas were pressed in, creating an irregular crooked sight. And there were even a few areas, disciples with slightly weaker power, undetermined will who did not hold their weapons properly, with the huge impact, in the loud roars, instantly when the beasts charged up, several fell onto the ground, in the tragic cries, no one again saw them.

Outside Crystal Hall, Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong Master, as well as Yun YiLan looked grim. Reverend DaoXuan glanced at the both of them, both nodded at the same time.

Yun YiLan said, "We will follow senior brother's lead."

Reverend DaoXuan expressionlessly turned back, looked down at the foot of the mountain for a while, saw above YunHai, that screen of light was pressed tightly by a huge wave of black, among the people, a few of the weaker ones was swaying in their places, looked like they could not hold on much longer, at times miserable cries were heard, and the smell of blood in the air was turning more and more intense.

His brows wrinkled, abruptly looked up, saw high above the sky, the dark clouds loomed, in the horizon where the wind and clouds scurried across, there seemed to be an indistinct mysterious figure. Reverend DaoXuan stared deeply, after a moment, turned around, Xiao YiCai who had been following behind him, stepped forward, Reverend DaoXuan indifferently said, "You can go!"

Xiao YiCai acknowledged and quickly turned around, waved his right hand and flew up first, following behind him was close to a hundred Good Faction people, although the number of people was not as much as the people at the square but the brilliant lights from their magical weapons were dazzling, far surpassing the disciples below, at one glance, obviously they were all elite disciples of the various Good Factions branches and some independent immortals, under the leadership of Xiao YiCai, the group of people flew down to the critical fight in the square.

The clash of thunders, lightnings scurried around randomly in the sky, it looked as if they were back to that storm many years ago. Just that for some reason, even though the sky was raining, there was still an unusual bright moon

in the horizon, very bright and very white.

The feeling of rain hitting upon the face, so cooling...

Zhang Xiao Fan woodenly looked back, the wind and rain whistled, that tiny small village, finally quietly faded. He could not help but reached out and tried to catch something but only empty air. Just that behind him, PuZhi that pair of eyes, quietly looking at his figure.

The next moment, he was already in that familiar room, the unique smell of the Big Bamboo Valley, as the surroundings surfaced, so familiar and intimate. Distantly he could hear his senior brothers' chats and faint laughs, and Da Huang and Xiao Hui's frolicking sounds, and that so familiar footsteps sounds, a young girl smiling like a flower, burst into the room, laughed and shouted, "Big lazy bum, quickly get up, go up the mountain and do your homework of chopping the bamboos..."

His body trembled, suddenly, the wall of defense he had built up in his heart for several years shattered, collapsed.

Tears flowed down his face!

The withered palm stretched out from behind, tapping him gently on the shoulder, that kind voice whispered, "What's the matter, boy, why are you crying?"

Zhang Xiao Fan whipped around, looked at the compassionate face, his body could not help but tensed. He stared deep into the eyes in front of him, longing to see deep inside this kind old monk's heart but PuZhi's gaze had always been

so calm and deep, no matter how hard he tried, he was unable to see.

One word by one word, as if he was growling, asked, "Why, did, you, why, did, you choose me, why must you do that?"

PuZhi did not answer, still looking that compassionately at Zhang Xiao Fan, other than benevolence, it was still calmness, there was no agitation of emotions, not to say any regrets!

Everything around him disappeared again, leaving only the two of them in the whole world. Zhang Xiao Fan, no, looking at him right now he seemed to have transformed into the devil, fierce blood-red gaze once again took over his eyes, from head to toe emitting an aura of killing intention, [pu] a light sound, his clothes splitted opened at the front, the Soul-devouring evil stick glimmering with faint dark red light rose up, horizontally in front of his chest.

PuZhi's eyes finally was shocked for a moment, slowly looked to that ominous object. At the top of the stick, that Sinister's Orb that was glowing brightly right now, lines of dark red covered the entire orb, as if it was also staring at him, with a feeling of sneer.

The heavy choking stench of blood, appeared suddenly before Ghost Li out of thin air and then it rushed over like an avalanche, like a violent gale blowing, PuZhi's monk robes flapped in the wind, staring blankly, that vicious red light with a trace of despair, like a trapped animal, charged over.

He did not show the slightest intention to evade, standing there, motionless, the next moment, that despair and fierce red light passed through his body, stopped slowly behind him, condensed to form Ghost Li's figure.

The old monk slowly lowered his head, slowly looked at his body, and then, he sighed, his head hung down, his body slowly fell to the side. Behind him, Ghost Li abruptly turned around, looked at PuZhi, the expression on his face like a violent storm, rapidly changed, gradually, the ferocious look quietly faded, the anguish look again surfaced, the red light in his eyes dimmed, he stared woodenly at that body which was slowly losing life, in that instant, made a heart-wrenching scream!

"Ah!..."

The black stick fell to the ground, he seemed to lose all of his strength in an instant. Thunders exploded in waves in the sky, thunder rumbled and lightning flashed, in the whistling wind, a chill landed in his heart.

He stumbled to PuZhi, the soil underneath his feet seemed to have become muddy, every step consumed a great amount of his energy, he kept falling and climbing up again, using all of his strength he crawled to that withered body, and finally, he struggled to PuZhi's side.

With one grab, he firmly grasped the withered hand, these past several years, this, the most intimate palm grasped in his hand, his eyes were already wet.

"Teacher...teacher..." He choked back, quietly crying, tears streaming down his face, with some hysteria, "Why, why, what exactly is this for?"

PuZhi struggled to turn around, looked at this man who as if had once again became that helpless young man, his face was so pale, his lips trembling, however, eventually he did not say anything.

The withered palm, slowly raised, stretched out in front of the young man's face, shaking non-stopped in the storm, all of the wind and rain seemed to fall into his hand. Zhang Xiao Fan stopped crying, raised his head and looked at him.

Both of their eyes met in the storm, both stared at each other, froze, became still, turned unfamiliar and distanced...

PuZhi's lips moved, as if he wanted to say something, but he did not, following which, his hand gently fell, without the slightest sound.

Life, seemed to have left in that instant!

The young man was stunned, his entire body seemed to have turned rigid, slowly bent his head, looked at his hands, "I killed him, I killed him..."

Then like the surrounding strange atmosphere, a strange change suddenly happened in his body, the next moment, his face revealed a ferocious vicious look, turned into Ghost Li, the next moment, appeared extremely in pain, as if he had turned into that once simple Qing Yun disciple Zhang Xiao Fan. Just beside the body of PuZhi, he struggled in pain.

In the sky, under the firmament, the wind and rain still howling, a scene of desolation!

Xiao YiCai and the other elite disciples joined the battle, immediately controlled the situation. And this group of disciples obviously already had an understanding among themselves, forming into small groups, they flew straight to the most intensive part of the battlefield, the gaps which had been attacked by the beasts, suddenly received backup from these new forces, immediately

bounced back, those beasts which were attacking, in a blink of an eye, beheaded and reduced to nothing, the entire screen also turned brighter and more solidified, indestructible.

Among the crowd, the most dazzling place, would be the centre of the screen, Lu XueQi holding TianYa Celestial Sword, like a fairy from the Nine Heavens stood proudly in the clouds, in the thousands rays of light, TianYa like a bloody knife of massacre, rains of blood sprayed wherever it went, broken fragments of bones, piled up to a small hill under her feet.

As the time wore on, not to mention those ferocious beasts having some apprehension towards this cold beautiful girl whose clothes had turned from white to pink, even the Good Faction members behind Lu XueQi, were all shocked. At this battlefield of life and death, Lu Xueqi did not care for life or death, sweeping the length and breadth, often charging into the mass of beasts within a hair's breadth apart, raising showers and showers of blood of rain and wind.

But, on her face, there was not an expression at all, there was no fear or pain, no shock or abhor, even the bloody stench of the beasts' blood which had spilled onto her, she who had always loved cleanliness, Lu XueQi did not have any reaction. She only fought on, using all of her strength, in the rain of blood and wind, her cold yet beautiful face, seemed exceptionally touching, shocking the rest and no one dared to go near.

An hour passed by quietly, the black torrent was still pressing against that light screen but in the end did not break through it. The public square which was once like a paradise, had lifeless bodies and stains of bloods turning into rivers, in the dark sky, the dark clouds loomed low, coldly watching it all.

Suddenly, deep from within the beasts, from an unknown place suddenly a

strange sound rang out, like a horn but also like a howl, the sound seemed mournful and forlorn, as if on the night of the full moon, there were lone wolves howling to the moon. Following the sound, the masses of beasts which had pounced forward one after another, unafraid of death, suddenly stopped, stopped their attacks and then slowly retreated, creating a distance from the Good Faction.

And over at the Good Faction side, the light curtain following the temporary ceasefire, also started to dim down, and in the next instant, filling above the sea of clouds, was the heavy panting sound of countless people.

On each and every one's body, seemed to be stained with blood, the desolate and strange colour of blood dyed the entire sea of clouds, on the stretch of open space created between both sides, there were bodies everywhere, some demons, some humans.

Most of the Good Faction disciples whom were in the air had descended, seizing the time to catch their breaths, who knows when those barbaric beasts would attack again. Only a few highly skilled disciples was still flying vigilantly in the air, watching the front.

Xiao YiCai frowned tightly, looked away from the distance, the demon beasts a stretch of masses, black and pressing, unable to see the last of them with a glance, at this battlefield of life and death, they were still unable to see the end of it. He gently sighed in the heart, turned around, suddenly was stunned, saw not far from him, Lu XueQi was quietly standing in mid-air, the stench of blood blew over, the clothes dyed red by the blood gently fluttered.

On that unparalleled face, there wasn't any trace of anger, only staring ahead, at that mass of black.

Xiao YiCai's brows wrinkled, intuitively felt something was very wrong with Lu XueQi's emotions, was going to go up and ask when suddenly in the mass of beasts, a roar was heard once again, the next moment, like the sound of thunder rumbling, the galloping sound of footsteps, the black torrent like an unceasing tsunami, again charged over. And this time, among the beasts, other than those ferocious ones, there were giant demons, baring fangs and brandishing claws, heading over.

In that instant, the Good Faction people each started to stand up, the brilliant lights of the weapons flew up dancing to the sky, once again forming an enormous curtain wall.

Xiao YiCai was immediately distracted, the momentarily uncertainty of Lu XueQi, he had cleanly forgotten. At the moment, in everyone's eyes, was only that black tide, from far approaching, galloping and howling, carrying the breath of death, surging over.

Like a thunder in the silence, tearing the Heavens and Earth, the deafening sound this time, was from the crash of the black tide against the light screen. The pressure of death seemed to have instantly increased, the broken bodies and bones once again fell upon like showers of rain, bodies torn up were thrown into the air, piercing onto the sharp claws.

The giant demons which had joined the battle far exceeded the ordinary beasts, most of the Good Faction's weapons had no effect on their bodies. And when those creatures' sharp claws swiped past, instantly it would be a scene of blood rain and wind. In a blink of an eye, the Good Faction who was caught off guard by these seven, eight giant demons, a few gaps appeared in the light screen, the entire light screen immediately wavered, struggling to stay up.

High up above, Yun YiLan, PuHong Master and the others' countenances changed, Yun YiLan frowned and looked to Reverend DaoXuan but saw him looking grim, the tragical cries below the mountain travelled over, the corner of his eyes seemed to be twitching but for some reason, the distinct ordinary-looking face did not have any expression, not a word or gesture too.

Yun YiLan looked away, was silent for a moment and once again looked down to the foot of the mountain.

The fights turned more and more intense, the Good Faction disciples at YunHai all knew the fight had reached its critical phase, everyone was desperately fighting, using all of their strength, even to the extent that most of them at this moment, made hysterical howls, no different from those beasts, maybe, even if they were Good Faction people, in the face of life and death, probably not much difference from those demonic beasts?

, , , , ,

Chapter 167 - Forbidden Place

The flood of demon beasts looked infinite, wave and wave crashed over crazily, with those gigantic demons as the arrow's head, viciously smashed onto the Good Faction's light screen. The light screen wavered and looked shaky, the young disciples started to look afraid, Xiao YiCai frowned, he knew that if they do not repulse those gigantic demons, most likely the situation would get out of control.

Xiao YiCai gave a shout, called out to the surrounding disciples and took the lead to charge to the gigantic demon which was nearby, just when his figure moved, a gust of strong wind blew from behind out of a sudden, a figure flashed past him like lightning, heading towards that demon.

Xiao YiCai looked at that figure and was startled a moment, although the figure's clothes was dyed red with blood but the figure was graceful, cold and beautiful, it was Lu XueQi. Above the innumerable black demons and Good Faction's light screen, Lu XueQi, going against the wind, headed straight up, towards that demon which was several times larger than her.

A figure appeared beside him, it was Zeng ShuShu, he who had always been fine and delicate was also covered with blood and dirt, urgently said to Xiao YiCai, "Xiao senior brother, let's quickly go help her."

Xiao YiCai quickly nodded and rushed up. The gigantic demon that they were heading to, was that white-boned demon snake which once appeared in southern border Miao tribe's Seven Mile Cave, under the dark clouds, its skeleton was cast a strange pale color and the three pairs of brightly coloured

wings connected directly on its bones, beat non-stopped, looking even more strange.

Right now, the snake coiled its almost three zhangs long huge body up, flapped its wings behind, its tongue constantly flicking, emitting gases of black air, glaring at the light screen. Every time its giant head brushed past, immediately some Good Faction disciples who were slightly lower-skilled, died a violent death, either bitten to death by the huge mouth or poisoned by the black poisonous gas, perished when the poison reached their hearts.

The white-boned snake killed many in succession, looking at the Good Faction disciples scattering away before it, its giant mouth opened and closed, although there was no telling its expression from its flesh-less face but evidently it was extremely contemptuous. And just when it was at the peak of its contempt, a white shadow suddenly flashed before it, there seemed to be a light shout, a cold clear voice, a beautiful woman appeared out of thin air, the blue celestial sword in her hands flashing with a brilliant light, striking down from the air.

A roar was heard from the white-boned snake's skeleton, it did not have the slightest intention to avoid, ignoring that TianYa celestial sword, it opened its giant mouth, revealing two white eerie giant fangs, biting down towards Lu XueQi.

That bigger-than-human fangs glimmering with cold white light, descended from the sky, Lu XueQi facing that terrible scene, her face's expression unchanging, ignored that demon snake, TianYa celestial light shining even brighter, charging up to the sky, in the blanket of black gases, like a phoenix cry in the Nine Heavens, that instant it severed the black gases, split the dark clouds, before the demon snake could react, chopped down three chi below the white-boned snake's head.

[Si...ka!]

The deep, low muffled sound seemed to emit from deep within its body, initially it was a deep low sound, in a blink it seemed to be the roar of a wild beast. The white-boned demon snake was stunned for a moment, momentarily ceased its attacks, looked down and saw on its chest bones where TianYa had struck, a faint crack suddenly appeared, growing bigger rapidly, the next moment an explosive crackling sound was heard, smashed bones splattering.

TianYa Celestial Sword was a Nine Heavens celestial weapon, even though it was an unparalleled evil animal, it was also hurt by the TianYa sword.

The demon snake made an earth-shattering wild cry, two balls of fire like unearthly fire suddenly erupted from its deeply-sunken eyes sockets, evidently extremely incensed, immediately ignoring the rest of the people, shaking its huge head, lunged straight towards Lu XueQi.

And at this moment, Xiao YiCai, Zeng ShuShu etc had already arrived, shouting in unison, their magical weapons flying up at the same time, with Lu XueQi's TianYa celestial sword blocked the blow which was as powerful as a thunderbolt.

But only deafening crashing sounds were heard, the light beams flashed crazily, Xiao YiCai and the others felt a great jolt to their bodies, almost fell from the air, fortunately they were all outstanding talents from the young generation, their skills level were not low, each stabilized their body but looking at each other, they looked pale, this level of terrible monster, the powerful strength of the demon was really unexpected, it was an effort even when they combined their strengths, not to mention behind it, that mysterious Beast Deity.

Although they repulsed the snake but the people was not to be trifled with, not one of their weapons was mediocre, several blue, white, yellow lights shot up, landed heavily on the snake's skull, one even cracked a small piece of bone. The demon snake again roared, the unearthly fires in its eyes surged, almost without any moment to rest, again madly attacked, obviously abhorred this group of people.

Xiao YiCai, Lu XueQi, Zeng ShuShu all flew up, the demon snake's attacks were too fierce, in any case they could not block it and following its gigantic mouth attack, thick black poisonous gases shot out, a feeling of nausea even from afar, without any choice, the group with their agile reflexes, surrounded this huge snake and started to besiege it.

At the scene, there were a total of six gigantic beasts but after the initial panic, with the elite disciples led by Xiao YiCai, ranging from some to several people, contained these beasts, although the demons were powerful and not only they were unable to gain victory, it caused a strain on them but eventually they controlled the situation, the light screen once again started to become firm.

Outside the Crystal Hall, Reverend DaoXuan and the rest were looking solemn, their brows frowning tightly, the battle was turning intense, there was no telling how many number of livings in that wind and rain reeking of blood, had instantly lost their lives. Reverend DaoXuan watched the situation below, in the crowd, without even mentioning the innumerable black suppressing beasts, that six gigantic demons, right now seemed to gaining morale, with Xiao YiCai and the elite disciples fighting many to one, at the moment were all slowly showing weakness, looking like they could not hold on much longer.

Reverend DaoXuan with his solemn face, looked for another moment and

then again to the sky, that infinite dark clouds in the firmament, rolling and surging, getting lower and lower.

Yun YiLan coughed once beside him, quietly said, "DaoXuan senior brother, the situation now, is it..."

He did not continue on but Reverend DaoXuan was not a slow person, naturally understood and right now the situation was indeed turning dangerous, he turned his head to Yun YiLan, nodded his head, said, "Valley master don't worry."

After speaking, he looked behind him, behind the three of them, several branch elders were standing behind them, they were either grey-haired or carried celestial-demeanour, it could be said these Qing Yun sect elders and the other seniors of the other branches, were already the last strength of the Good Faction.

Reverend DaoXuan was silent for a long time, finally slowly said, "Everyone, head down!"

Nobody spoke, after Reverend's words, the last several of them, some slightly nodded or cupped their hands in return gestures, light beams instantly scurried across, the last several elders of Good Faction leapt up at the same time, headed towards the foot of the mountain.

And outside Crystal Hall, other than Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong and Yun YiLan, there were still six people, it was the other branches' leaders of Qing Yun sect other than TongTian Peak, for some reason, surprisingly they did not enter the battle.

Reverend DaoXuan faced them, nodded his head and said, "Everyone, seems like the situation is at its critical juncture, that matter in the original plan, will have to depend on all of you."

Among the six leaders, QiHao and the other newly appointed young juniors came forward to pay their respect, only Tian BuYi, Zeng ShuChang and ShuiYue Master, the three of them looked calm, after listening to Reverend DaoXuan's instructions, the rest of them also seemed to be aware of the matter, their faces did not reveal surprise, only an indistinct hazy look seemed to flash past Tian BuYi's face.

Immediately the six people made a bow to Reverend DaoXuan and then flew up, however they all headed to different directions, seemed like they were all flying to their own mountains. Only Tian BuYi for some reason, paused and turned to look at Reverend DaoXuan.

Reverend DaoXuan was surprised, said, "Tian junior brother, what is it?"

Tian BuYi hesitated a moment, lowered his voice, said, "Sect Head senior brother, after the Heaven Secret Seal is opened, the vicious energy of Zhu Xian Ancient Sword will increase greatly, the backlash of the power is an impossible force, you must be extremely careful, do not, do not lose your integrity..."

Reverend DaoXuan was silent for a moment, looking solemn, nodded his head and said, "Tian junior brother, we have known each other for many years, I know what you mean. Don't worry, even if there is to be any incidents, for the common people, I can't care that much too!"

Tian BuYi's facial muscles twitched but in the end did not say anything more, he looked at Reverend DaoXuan's face, nodded, shook his sleeve, red yellow

light flashed, supporting him and flew up the sky, heading towards Big Bamboo Valley.

Intense fighting sounds were heard indistinctly from the mountain ahead, until it reached the rear of TongTian Peak, it was already inaudible, the faint mist dispersed, faint birds cries, this place was like another realm. Just that what was similar was, in this tranquil place, there was still shadows of swords' glints, bloody covert fightings.

The dark-green Dragon Slayer Sword glimmering with faint light, the sword body seemed to be trembling too, as if in mourning. The old man had lost his life, quietly lay on the ground, his head lying skewed. Kneeling beside him Lin JingYu's face was a terrifying red, a pair of eyes changing with different colours of fury, clenching his teeth tightly, although he was still but in the stillness, indistinctly there was some madness.

In the shadows of the woods, the black Mr Ghost was still there, like a spirit watching Lin JingYu from the back, his eyes from the fallen Wan JianYi to Lin JingYu and in the end, on that Dragon Slayer Sword. Then, he suddenly seemed to recall something, turned his head and looked towards the direction where the Illusory Moon Cave was.

That path, cold and lonely, solitary extending ahead, not a single movement seen.

Under the black veil, nobody could see Mr Ghost's expression.

Lin JingYu's mind right now was in a mess, the sudden murder of Wan JianYi, made him fell into a near-madness state of mind. Ever since that upheaval in Qing Yun ten years ago, his mentor teacher Taoist CangSong betraying Qing

Yun, the sudden appearance of Wan JianYi, his breadth of knowledge and bearing, all became the person that Lin JingYu revered. For ten years, he trained hard under the guidance of Wan JianYi, in his heart he had already regarded this enigma old man to be his teacher and father, had the utmost respect for him.

And at this moment, the person that he most revered had become a corpse, lying in front of him, and he did not even know who the murderer was, not to say avenging him. Sorrow, pain and despair, agitated Lin JingYu's somewhat quick-temper character, making him looked as if he was closer and closer to madness.

At this time, suddenly from the woods behind, a sound was heard.

Lin JingYu was shocked, whipped his body around, saw movements in the woods, a figure suddenly appeared and then quickly, like lightning, ran out. The speed was astonishing, with Lin JingYu's level of skills, even he could only see a fuzzy shadow.

At this time and place, the sudden appearance of this mysterious figure, what did it mean?

Lin JingYu's body reacted faster than his brain, almost at the same time, he seized his sword, as swift as the wind and quick as lightning pursued, he did not consider once that if this person was really the murderer and with his level of skills to be able to kill Wan JianYi, how terrifying this person could be. In Lin JingYu's heart right now, other than revenge he had no other thoughts. And the ten years of time that Wan JianYi taught him, the Dragon Slayer Sword had always been moving forward courageously, retreat was not even an option, like their lives!

That black shadow was extremely fast, it had already left the Founders

Ancestral Hall, pausing slightly at the three-ways junction, with a [sou] sound, headed towards the Illusory Moon Cave. Lin JingYu immediately pursued, his eyes looked as if fire was about to be breathe out, looking at that indistinct figure, he did not even contemplate, his figure like lightning, instantly entered the small path which was forbidden to Qing Yun disciples, toward the direction of the cave.

The mountain breeze blew over, the branches gently shook, making a rustling sound, soon the place fell into silence, only that desolate old man, lay quietly on the ground, looking at the clouds and sky, quietly passing by.

Although Lin JingYu used all of his strength but he was still unable to catch up with that figure. The two rows of trees beside the path whizzed past but that figure ahead was still faintly indiscernible, Lin JingYu's initial anger had receded slightly and he could not help but secretly felt alarmed.

That mysterious figure's level of skill, he could imagined it but despite that, Lin JingYu still did not slow down the slightest, still using all of his efforts to pursue, just that at the corner ahead, that indistinct figure suddenly sped forward, entered into the dead end of the mountain topography, disappearing in sight.

Lin JingYu was anxious and angry, he used all of his strength, his entire body like an arrow leaving the bow, taut and tight, [suo] a sound and flew straight ahead, due to the speed and force, a sharp whistling sound was heard. When he reached that corner, although it was only a moment later, that black shadow had already disappeared, presented in front of him was, an ordinary cave, four characters engraved at the entrance: Illusory Moon Cave!

Lin JingYu was startled, paused his steps. He had joined Qing Yun sect for many years, naturally he wouldn't not know that this was a forbidden place and

disciples were not allowed in, now that he had trespassed, it was already a serious offence. But he looked around, saw the dense ancient woods, other than this entrance there was no other unusual spots, that human figure had disappeared like that.

His face had conflicting expressions, hesitation flashed past but a strange glint was flashing in his eyes, anger eventually won. He lifted his feet, looking somehow hesitant but the next moment, he took the first step forward, towards the cave and walked.

Contrary to the chase earlier, Lin JingYu instead walked very slowly, as if the ordinary cave had something that made him hesitate but even it was so, he soon arrived at the cave entrance, inhaled deeply, clenched his teeth and walked in.

The cave was very small, at one glance he saw everything, there was no traces of the human figure.

Lin JingYu was stunned for a moment, disappointment flitted past his face but then his gaze fell onto most glaring spot of the cave: the pattern of TaiJi engraved onto the stone wall.

The TaiJi drawing reflected in his eyes, as if it was narrating the vicissitudes of the passage of time, the dilapidated fringe emitted an ancient scent. Lin JingYu stared intently at this drawing, after a long while, he slowly stretched out his hand, placed on the TaiJi drawing.

The material which was neither stone or jade, had a rough feeling of a whetstone sharpening the edges of his palm, there was no response. Lin JingYu's eyes piercing, used force to try and turn to the side.

Without any warning, even the stone wall itself did not show the slightest change, suddenly a burning heat radiated from that drawing, instantly attacked Lin JingYu's arm. Before Lin JingYu could react, his entire arm seemed to be roasting in burning flames, the blood in his body boiled, immediately his face turned red, his forehead covered with sweat.

Unexpectedly such an ordinary TaiJi drawing concealed such terrifying power shield, Lin JingYu was shocked, subconsciously wanted to retract his arm, unexpectedly his arm was firmly held on by some kind of invisible force, unable to withdraw his hand. At the same time, the cave walls around him suddenly began to issue a dull sound, like being awakened from a deep slumber.

The eccentric sounds became louder and louder, gradually gathering towards Lin JingYu, and in just a blink, where his palm was, had turned unbearably hot. Lin JingYu panicked, clenched his teeth, his body felt like bursting from the hot energy, he could only use all of his skills to resist, used his lifetime of training of Qing Yun sect TaiJi Xuan Qing Way and channelled it with all of his strength to his palm, hoping to resist that mysterious heat.

Just when Lin JingYu was feeling dizzy, his body heated up to a critical point, suddenly, the heat receded, and extremely fast, like a tide instantly disappearing from his body, to the point where Lin JingYu had not recover his senses.

Then, as if the surrounding strange noises were being appeased, it too slowly calmed down, the cave again resumed back its tranquility. The stunned Lin JingYu withdrew his hand, that TaiJi drawing at the same time turned, a lighter and different sound from before, was heard from the walls.

In front of Lin JingYu's surprised eyes, the perfect stone walls, opened up to two sides, revealing an extremely strange hole, and in the hole, a mist-like gas was rapidly spinning, in there everything was hazy, mysterious and unfathomable.

, , , , ,

Chapter 168 - Bonds of the world

Like the lightning tearing apart the black night, descended upon the mortal world, this light beam which gathered the powerful force of the true way, descended with a rumble from the sky, coming straight down towards the white-boned demon snake, passing straight in from the top of the head. In that instant, a powerful force burst forth from that gigantic body, the surrounding Qing Yun disciples were pushed a distance away from the invisible air impact.

The demon snake let out a long howl to the sky, its sound shrill, the huge skeleton which supported its body, from the top to bottom, suddenly began to emit a strange light, the next moment, tiny sounds of [ka ka] were heard from numerous parts of its body, beams of light shot out from its bones. Then, following a loud sound, the demon snake's colossal body came crashing down, creating a deep pit on the white jade stone slabs underneath its body, after struggling on the ground for a few times, it finally stopped moving.

The dazzling light beam slowly dispersed, revealing the seven elders, Lu XueQi, Xiao YiCai and the others in the horizon, beneath them, beside that colossal demon monster's body, corpses lay everywhere, among them were four Qing Yun elders lying forever in eternity. And those that were still alive, many were wounded, in the younger generation, Lu XueQi, her face cold as frost but half of her clothes were already dyed red, Xiao YiCai fared better, looked fairly good, only Zeng ShuShu was making an effort to hold on, after witnessing this monster's death, he heaved a sigh of relief and suddenly his head slanted, fell down unconscious.

Everyone got a shock but fortunately Xiao YiCai was just beside him, caught his body, after checking on him, was relieved and informed the rest, the others

then felt relieved and following which they continued to join in the battle.

Ever since the several elders joined the battle, for the first time this great battle finally started to swing towards the Good Faction. Those elders' skills far exceeded the ordinary disciples, although their numbers was small but their impacts were great. With the combined efforts of the elders, Xiao YiCai, Lu XueQi, Zeng ShuShu and the other younger disciples, those few demons although were powerful but were suppressed by those people and finally killed. However, those demons were after all brutal and vicious, the Good Faction also paid a heavy price.

However in such reign of terror, who would remember the dead comrades?

At the moment where the giant snake's body collapsed, the people hovering high up in the sky had already turned around, expressionlessly heading towards the other parts of the battle, to continue the fight and massacre. Xiao YiCai flew to the rear, placed Zeng ShuShu at a secluded area and quickly came back, unexpectedly the next moment, from the corner of his eyes he saw Lu XueQi in a daze at where they were previously, staring blankly at that demon corpse, her face pale.

Xiao YiCai was puzzled, called out, "Lu junior sister, what happened to you?"

Lu XueQi was startled, like being startled from a dream, turned and looked over, her lips moved, as if she wanted to say something but when she saw that it was Xiao YiCai, she closed her lips, took a deep breath and then wielded her sword and flew off, joining the battle again. Xiao YiCai was bewildered, felt that Lu XueQi was very strange today but thinking back, this celestial-like junior sister had always been aloof and now that it was the crucial time of the the battle, he thought for a while and decided to again leave those thoughts behind, headed into the fight again.

The dark clouds rolled over, surging and turbulent, under the dark clouds, those wild beasts and people both fiercely battled. Just that this war, eventually was turning more and more favorable, and standing at a vantage point, those three Good Faction's heavyweights, their initial tense expressions had right now gradually relaxed.

Despite paying a heavy price, after the elders joined the war, the six all-powerful colossal demons were immediately besieged and gradually suppressed, with everyone's combined forces, first was the white-boned snake, then the other two gigantic demons were killed one after another.

Even when they were putting those giant demons down, including the elders, the Good Faction also suffered heavy casualties, however the momentum of the fight, after all, was being turned around bit by bit. The ordinary demon beasts although were innumerable but following the deaths of the gigantic demons, their vigors were also immediately weakened. The ordinary Qing Yun disciples although were not as skilled as the outstanding ones but were more than enough to handle those, at the same time the people joined together as one, the light screen turned even more indestructible.

After taking care of about half of the giant demons, more skilled masters headed for the remaining three demons and besieged them, anyone could see that, those giant demons were the war spirits of the demon beasts. And under the besiege of those highly skilled Good Faction elders with the younger generations, in the sky full of brilliant lights and rare, unusual weapons' sharp beams, the remaining three giant demons finally were unable to sustain, in the sharp angry shrills and mournful howls, one by one they collapsed.

The demon beasts were in a chaos, it was clear that even those ignorant beasts also felt something was not right with the current situation. On the contrary, the Good Faction felt a boost of morale, finally that resplendent light screen increased its brilliance, spread out and immediately flesh and blood

sprayed and flew, pressing towards the demon beasts.

Panic screams filled the air, numerous demon beasts howled to the sky, their sounds mournful, the merciless light curtain arrived with a loud crash, what kind of bloody scene and desolation will it spray out?

Then in the numerous roars and howls, in the sky, in the firmament, those billowing black clouds abruptly became still, as if, the world suddenly froze, and then, there was a shimmer, from the dark and quiet clouds, shone out!

A white, tiny light!

The next moment, the dark clouds scattered, like a tornado sweeping through the sky and earth, blowing past the sky of wind and rain. From the recesses of the dark clouds, suddenly a huge vortex rapidly spinning out, the innumerable dark clouds after being rolled up, dispersed, leaving not a trace.

There was a young man's figure, coming out, expressionlessly watching the battle scene, the bloody human world, from the top, like the legendary gods. His black hair moved in the wind, a black strange monster behind him, looked anxious, restlessly moving around, making low growls.

And at his moment of appearance, all of the beasts paused, lifting their heads towards the sky, howled to that figure!

The tens of thousands beasts howling, the dark clouds dispersed, as if a vicious current, soared up into the sky, seemed to go up the Nine Heavens.

Not one of the Good Faction people did not change countenance, Reverend

DaoXuan stood outside the Crystal Hall, frowning tightly, he muttered to himself, "Is this the Beast Deity?"

Illusory Moon Cave

That surreal and illusory world!

That round indistinct moon glimmering with strange light, was still hanging high up in the horizon, regardless of the wind or rain, it always radiated a faint glow. And the mortals struggling in this world, seemed to have scattered, leaving only one person, alone and lost.

"Who am I?" He asked softly, raising his head to the moon, "What am I living for?"

He quietly asked like that, not knowing if it was to the indistinct moon in the horizon, or to the recess of his own heart.

Half a lifetime of turbulent periods, ferocious giant waves, the past, scene by scene, poured into his heart, the once familiar figures in his life, the people whom he had once sincerely treated, one by one flashed past in his mind, but, all without leaving a single trace, quietly went far away like that.

He felt reluctant, subconsciously reached out with his hand, wanted to catch something, but his hand in the air, eventually still grabbed air.

Nothing at all!

Only the moonlight from the horizon, traversed through numerous wind and rain, still spilled onto his body, shone on his clothes.

Slumped to the ground, like tearing away all layers of exterior, in this lonely world, he did not need to be strong, the storm gradually stopped, the dust quietly became still, that body, looked as if it would soon sink into this desolate world, ending in silence.

Just die! The ancient legend said that there would no longer be any pain or thoughts when one is dead, there would no longer be any care or worries, even if it was the Nine Netherworlds Hell, before the Yama, King of Hell, palace, who would know what it would be like? In the bustling mortal world, maybe in the end it would be all empty!

But, that silent body suddenly shook, the moonlight in the horizon, seemed to tremble too and then shone down a beam of light, shining on that body.

He seemed to be struggling!

He seemed to be unwilling!

He struggled to get up, every action seemed to take up all of his strength, the earth underneath his feet obviously had infinite temptation, tempting him to lie down and there would be no worries or cares anymore, and he could break away from the anguish of the mortal world.

But he refused to back down, stubbornly trying to straighten his body, his hands bled from the efforts, a deep tear on his lips, in this desolate world, he was still refusing to give up.

That faint moonlight, like pouring its heart out, fell onto him, like whispering, "Why do you bother to persevere! Let go, let go and you will be free..."

He struggled, like an ant in a boundless vast Heaven and Earth, regardless, facing the Heaven and Earth that seemed infinite, at the end he looked up, at the sky!

Slowly stood up.

The familiar face, quietly floated in his heart, in the end even between life and death, he eventually still could not give up. This life, he still had someone he cared about!

Zhang Xiaofan, or perhaps it's Ghost Li, the ant in this world, at the moment was quietly watching the sky, staring at that dim moon in the horizon.

The moonlight was unusual and cold.

He suddenly shouted loudly, jumped up, leaving this boundless piece of land, straight up into the sky. In front of him, there were gold, dark-green and red lights, lighted up out of a sudden, together with his body, heading straight to that moon.

The cold moon was silent but in front of him, the moonlight suddenly dimmed, it was a couple figure, looking at him kindly and with delight, as if the moment of delight of waiting for a night storm many years ago, descending upon the mortal world only now.

His heart felt as if a sharp knife had slashed it, his entire body was trembling, but like an arrow leaving the bow, he did not have the slightest intention of retreating, the three lights like lightning, under his watchful gaze, stabbed through the couple's bodies, traversing through.

The fresh blood splattering, or was it the pouring rain, fell onto his face, a feeling of coldness. The human figures disappeared, he seemed to feel some numbness. However his eyes were still resolute, heading towards that faint moon.

Suddenly, the moon dimmed again, Tian BuYi and SuRu appeared, SuRu was smiling at him, Tian BuYi was like what he remembered, snorted and flipped his eyes at him.

And between them, Tian LingEr smiling like a flower, dressed in red, her appearance vaguely sixteen or seventeen years old, laughed loudly and called, "Little junior brother, let's go up the mountain to chop bamboos..."

Like being suffocated in that instant, that three figures before him, looking alive, blocking in front of him. The kind of shivers that he felt, like lightning passing through his entire body, a cold light approached their bodies, his heart felt like it was about to tear apart.

Finally, three-colors lights still passed through it, just like that passing through the human figures. A feeling of chill from his head to toes, poured down, his body in the air, his face as white as a piece of paper, suddenly he opened his mouth, [wa] a sound spat out a mouthful of blood, dyed the clothes at his chest red, his face looking paler.

Then, he still looked up, like an arrow leaving the bow, continued to fight on

in spite of all setbacks, refusing to rest unless dead, headed to that moon.

The moonlight was icy-cold, Heaven and Earth dimmed in that instant, a desolate feeling, quietly lingered.

At that flint-spark moment, looking like he was about to reach the moon, the misty clouds surged over, suddenly, a figure indistinctly appeared within the clouds.

That was a figure, deeply carved into his heart!

He was suddenly dumbfounded, his perseverance almost dispersed with the wind, that blurred figure in the clouds flipped, turned and confused! Like a green figure yet like white clothes dancing with the sword!

The Soul-devouring stick in his hand, emitted ice cold energy, his heart was once in such anguish because of that figure, just that, right now, how should he advance or retreat?

In the deep night, the cold moonlight, far above the horizon, a heart-wrenching roar was heard suddenly, like a dying beast howling to the moon, full of despair and pain.

A brilliant bright light, flashing with three strange halos, shot straight into the sky, into the clouds, passed through them and pierced that blurred silhouette!

Then, like something suddenly shattered...

The sky of pouring rain and wind, quietly stopped, there seemed to be tears in his eyes, staring at that figure. Perhaps in close proximity but he still could not see her face clearly, only, in the netherworld deep and remote somewhere, there seemed to be a low sigh.

The wind dispersed, the rain scattered!

The moonlight falling like a cloud!

Heaven and earth the firmament boundless like water!

His body fell from the sky, like falling into the abyss, but in his mind there was no fear, some feelings of reluctant, staring at that gradually disappearing figure. The next moment, he had landed on the ground, the surrounding illusions had completely disappeared.

Under his feet, a primitive yet clear ancient mirror, was broken into several pieces, fell from the wall and scattered onto the ground. And around him, was a simple cave with solid sturdy rock walls, the mysterious entrance which he came in from, was less than ten footsteps away.

This short ten steps, he instead felt like he had went through a lifetime, all of the painful memories relived once again.

Then, his breathing settled down, focused himself and was about to continue to walk deep into the Illusory Moon Cave when suddenly his body froze, as if he had discovered something and then slowly turned his body.

With the broken ancient mirror, the mysterious mist at the entrance also

dispersed, revealing a person standing behind him - Lin JingYu.

Their eyes met across the air, for a moment both was stunned.

For a long time, they stared at each other silently, two of the men's gazes, from their childhood to their youth to now, it was as if they had looked past a lifetime.

Lin JingYu's teeth bit deeply into his lips, almost to the point of bleeding and then drawled out word by word, "That old man at the Founders Ancestral Hall, was it you who killed him?"

Ghost Li was silent, slightly lowered his head, after a moment, he nodded slightly and said, "Yes."

Lin JingYu's eyes instantly turned red.

, , , ,

Chapter 169 - Red Flame

That youth in the sky, expressionless, his gaze swept over the battle scene below, even when he saw those giant demons who once protected him, fell one by one, he did not seem to have any reaction, as if he had long see past all of these life and deaths.

The violent wind blew, his figure slowly descended from the dark clouds, the ten thousands beasts' roars turned even more deafening, even that inky black clouds beside him, had tiny electric like snakes, scurrying in it.

Above the YunHai, the people and wild beasts who were still battling ferociously a minute ago, turned quiet, involuntarily turned to look at that strange man in the air, on his somehow sinister-looking face, two spots of lights seemed to glint in his eyes.

Finally, the Beast Deity stopped in the air, above those innumerable beasts. The vicious TaoTie behind him glared fiercely with its eyes wide, looking towards the Good Faction TongTian Peak, hatefully roared.

[Hou ah...] almost at the same time, following the cry, the ten thousands beasts also cried out together, the sound waves were sudden and like the momentum of an avalanche, for a moment the winds and clouds changed countenance, sands and stones flew, many of the Good Faction people involuntarily moved back a few steps. The TaoTie's body, suddenly expanded with the roar, in a blink turned into an enormous beast, surrounding the Beast Deity. And beside them, strange things also began to happen.

The dark clouds, as if receiving some kind of powerful force, swiftly surged over from all directions, gathered above the Beast Deity and then rapidly formed into an enormous black wind column, rapidly turning, making sharp piercing sounds, slowly coming down from the sky.

That wind column's width was thick and wide beyond imagination, the thickness looked as if it could swallow the entire TongTian Peak. Right now, the sky loomed low, the wind blew violently and piercingly cold, it was an ominous scene, like armageddon, creating a feeling of hopelessness to the people.

The Good Faction people's countenance changed, such divine evil powers, it was really something not seen or heard before. Although the people already anticipated that the Beast Deity was someone not simple but they never expected that the evildoer would have such divine powers. And that enlightened master who was able to subdue and incarcerate him in the Subdue Devil ancient cave for thousands and ten thousands of years, made one wonder who that divine holy person was.

The colossal wind column gradually descended, revealing that inky dark and horrible appearance, invisible suction power started to envelop everyone at YunHai, many of the Good Faction disciples had already started to exert their powers to resist, everyone knew, if they were to be sucked into this evil power, most likely even if they had nine lives they might not be able to survive.

Outside the Crystal Hall, Reverend DaoXuan and the others' faces were grim. PuHong Master watched that wind column for a long time, quietly said, "This kind of evil power, it is really something this old monk has not seen in his lifetime. DaoXuan senior brother, the disciples below most likely can't fight against this type of evil skill, why don't we..."

Reverend DaoXuan slowly nodded, said, "Master is right, the rightful owner

has already appeared, we should also...”

Before he could finish, suddenly, that colossal wind column which was slowly descending, suddenly increased its speed, headed towards YunHai. At the same time, the beasts’ cries turned even more intense, broke through the clouds, extremely mournful. The Good Faction turned pale, facing this never-seen-before evil powers, for a moment everyone was at lost on how to deal with it.

That wind column looked to be soon approaching the YunHai, several brave Good Faction disciples finally could not take it, with loud shouts, charged towards the column with their magical weapons, the seniors and elders realized with a start, immediately shouted for them to stop but under such chaotic situation, a few still ran out.

The several celestial weapons flashed with rare lights, the lights dazzlingly charged into the wind column, in an instant vanished into it but like a clay oxen entering the sea, never to be seen, the next moment the wind column as if it was being stimulated, suddenly released a series of loud sounds, several grey-dark thick whirlwinds, behaved as if alive, headed directly to those disciples.

The Good Faction people were shocked, started to defend but unexpectedly those few whirlwinds as if alive, when the others blocked it, it passed through formless but when it was before those people, the black whirlwinds suddenly revealed a vicious appearance, in the wailing winds, those whirlwinds in a blink surrounded those disciples, [suo] a sound and retreated back, the speed was astonishing, before they could react, they watched helplessly as those disciples were pulled into the strange colossal wind column.

In a far distance away, miserable cries were heard indistinctly, in that wind column, blood-red lights flashed suddenly, the next moment, there was no more sound.

The Good Faction crowd was as silent as a cicada in cold weather, each looking at each other.

Bright lights suddenly appeared, three brilliant lights descended from the sky, landed before the Good Faction disciples, after it disappeared, Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong Master and Yun YiLan emerged, the three of them looking solemn.

Reverend DaoXuan waved his hand, urgently said, “All disciples retreat, the various elders to stay.”

A commotion went through the people but following which most of the younger generation disciples retreated back, many of them were from the three great sects and naturally knew the seriousness of the situation, therefore at this critical juncture, were still able to maintain their calm and order.

Very soon, only three masters and several elders remained, in the earlier battle, the originally limited number of elders had lost a few to it.

Reverend DaoXuan’s facial muscles twitched and then did not look anymore, turned and stared at this great foe whom he had never seen before.

The colossal black wind column under the manipulation of the strange invisible power, descended from the sky, in the black roaring wind, the Beast Deity youth cold gaze seemed to watch past the world’s massacre, coldly watching, met the stern stare of Reverend DaoXuan.

Reverend DaoXuan was secretly shocked, although the Beast Deity appeared

to be a person but in his eyes, there wasn't a slightest emotion, in that cold gaze, it regarded all living things to be beasts without spiritual intelligence, the malevolent intention was abnormally intense, like a extremely vicious wild beast.

Also at this moment, that wind column descended from the sky and finally landed onto the YunHai, instantly the sturdy and solid white jade slab stones emitted a deep groan, the next moment numerous cracks appeared and opened with a loud sound, sands and stones jumped into the air from the quake. And in the wind column, [si si] sounds were heard, like a ferocious beast growling, and like a spirit wailing, it seemed to receive some strange call, suddenly the six gigantic demons' corpses which were killed after much effort from the Good Faction, started to move.

The Good Faction turned pale!

Right now, the sky was without light, a desolate scene, unearthly atmosphere uncoiled around them, that six giant corpses, staggered and walked, although they were not nimble but like being attracted to some strange power, they dragged their enormous bodies, deep lines were scratched out on the ground, sucked into the colossal wind column.

One, and another one, until the last white-boned evil snake's gigantic bones were totally sucked into the black wind column, disappeared without a trace. Following which, like a wailing cry from the Nine netherworld hell, a vicious current from the violent wind came from the sky. The Beast Deity above the YunHai looked indifferent, stepped onto the enlarged TaoTie's body, like lightning dashed into the wind column.

The stench of blood, enveloped over thickly, even the innumerable beasts below also became still, most lay down, did not dare to breathe loudly, there

were even those weaker ones, cowered their heads trembling.

Abruptly, the winds stopped, the clouds still, there wasn't a sound between Heaven and Earth. Then, the crowd and the beasts, held their breaths, stared in shock at that strange beast revealed from the dispersing winds and clouds.

Above YunHai, an inconceivable strange beast hovered, its body was tall and big, three times bigger and taller than those six gigantic demons, the crowd and those demon beasts before this monster, seemed insignificant like ants.

The stench of smell constantly diffused from this strange monster, to the extent that on its body, blood constantly oozed out from it, white unearthly bones could be seen everywhere, looking at the huge skeleton, made one quickly realized, this was a terrible vicious spirit made from those six giant demons' corpses.

And standing above this giant monster, was that Beast Deity, his face looked slightly pale but in his eyes, the thick malevolent intention was even more wild.

The huge ferocious white skeleton head, slowly shook, making strange [ka ka] sounds, looking into the empty sockets, there seemed to be a invisible baleful glint, viciously staring at the people in front of it.

The repulsive blood stench, assaulted one in the face.

This reborn vicious spirit, seemed to start feeling restless, growled.

And other than that, on the vast YunHai, there wasn't a single sound. Numerous people were holding their breaths and watching.

Reverend DaoXuan before the people, his dark-green Taoist robes flapping in the wind, his face solemn. Most of the people after the shock, those near or far from him secretly looked at him, on that Taoist celestial-looking face, there wasn't any expression, nobody knew what he was thinking at this moment?

The gigantic ferocious evil beast with a low roar, suddenly its entire body issued a piercing sound, the humongous body slowly moved, walked forward, every step, the ground underneath seemed to quake under its weight, deeply sank down, the stench of blood, spread everywhere.

[Rumble, rumble, rumble...] this terrible thing walked very slowly but every step seemed to land in the Good Faction's hearts, countless people stared dumbfoundedly at that terrible white bones which piled like a mountain, slowly approaching, even people like Xiao YiCai, also looked pale.

That vicious spirit looked to be nearing, the white bones like mountain, Reverend DaoXuan in a deep voice, said, "Various brothers, follow me."

He had just finished his words, the three Good Faction leaders transformed into three brilliant lights, were the first to fly up, following which more than ten different brilliant lights followed behind, heading towards that vicious spirit. And above that giant monster, that mysterious young man was indifferent, a pair of eyes slowly reflecting those flying lights.

Between Heaven and Earth, suddenly a blanket of silence, making one feel suffocated.

Looking at those Good Faction brilliant lights streaking across the sky, were about to land, the Beast Deity's eyes suddenly shrank, without seeing him

making any move but that huge terrible monster below him, abruptly lifted its huge savage head, opened its bloody mouth and roared to the sky, quaking the surrounding countryside, the innumerable beasts behind it for a moment whined plaintively.

Following the sharp cry, the huge monster without leaving the ground, opened its mouth directly towards those flying lights and bit down, looking from afar, that savage looking huge mouth, with one mouthful it could swallow all of the Good Faction people.

Just that, those several people were all Good Faction masters, elites among the elites, even in the whole wide world, the Good Evil Demons Shaman, each faction, were all number one figures, their cultivation levels even more not to be underestimated.

As expected, that demon monster although was vicious and ferocious but the different lights in the air at the same time dispersed, heading towards different directions, the next moment several elders emerged, hovered in the air, each with a shout, their magical weapons lighted up and attacked the monster from different directions.

And above the clouds, Reverend DaoXuan, PuHong Master and Yun YiLan appeared. Yun YiLan was the first to make a move, his left hand flicked in the air and a fire appeared in his hand, like a jade of pure Yang, appeared out of thin air, its lustre and colour like amber, it was FenXiang Valley Inferno Fire enigmatic art which had reached the ultimate attainment.

That fire like a solidified object, looked to be small, burned in his hand, his palm flipped, his face looking solemn, both hands danced, like a meteor streaking across the sky, that flame of pure fire, flew out, seemed to slowly turn in the air, seemed impatient, headed towards that vicious spirit.

At the moment the other elders had already wielded their weapons, attacking towards the terrible monster, on the huge white skeleton, hit at many places by the different lights. Just that this monster after being hit by these elites, although its body shook but under the powerful blows that would disperse a normal person's soul, it was actually unharmed, it only howled in succession, although uncomfortable and looking angrier by the minute, it roared hatefully.

In the air, the flame created by Yun YiLan emitted an amber light, it was tiny but remained as a whole, flying towards that monster. For some reason, that monster although showed no fear towards the surrounding besieged weapons but towards this tiny flame, it looked to be hesitant, its body seemed to shrink back but too bad its body was too huge, how could it avoid it, the next minute, this spot of flame landed beside the ferocious white skeleton's lips, on the eerie white bones, touched down.

[Si...]

In the chaotic clamour, that inconspicuous tiny sound, tiny small amber-like flame, on the unbreakable mountain like sturdy white bones, burned through it, making a deep burned yellow hole on the bones. And that spot of flame also disappeared into the deep hole.

The crowd was stunned, held their breaths and looked at each other.

After a moment, suddenly, a deafening rumble exploded out from deep within the white bones, like an erupting volcano had suddenly emerged deep inside the savage white bones body, fiery hot waves instantly spread out, half of the white unearthly skeleton was burned a withered yellow, a red flame as wide as zhangs, exploded out from the bones, shot up to the sky. Even the Qing Yun

disciples at a distance away actually felt the unbearable heat, not to mention that monster whose body was in the flames.

For a moment, the Good Faction's cheers resounded like peals of thunder, the three Good Faction great sects leaders' skills, were really extraordinary.

Like a volcano erupting, the overbearing hot flames started to burn off, the monster which was enveloped by the intense fire slowly emerged, half of its body was burned black, although it looked even more terrible but its appearance was in a much sorry plight than before, not a slightest vicious look.

The Good Faction people who initially were struck dumbfounded by the appearance of this monster began to feel relief, heaved out long breaths. Come to think of it, with Reverend DaoXuan etc these kind of enlightened, celestial like figures around, what was there to fear about the demons and devils?

Just that, for some reason, compared to those jubilant young disciples who were standing at a distance away, the three Good Faction heavyweights standing above the clouds, their countenances were strangely dark.

, , ,

Chapter 170 - Decisive Battle

Looking at the heavily wounded ferocious spiritual intelligent monster, it looked somehow to be in a sorry state, half of its body was ghastly white while the other side was burnt black, looking rather weird, even slightly comical. Just that those distant mocking laughter from the Good Faction disciples, this gigantic terrible monster slowly lifted its head, suddenly made an angry roar, its huge head opened its terrible mouth, a black gas like tornado burst forth, heading straight to those three in the mid-air.

Reverend DaoXuan and the others with their current level of skills, naturally would not be idle, their bodies leapt up high several zhangs, at the same time their bodies were enveloped in black-green, gold, red, three brilliant protective lights. However even if it was so, that black gas above this YunHai, in the violent winds, it did not disperse, its strange pungent smell could be detected over the distance, evidently extremely poisonous.

At the same time, the Beast Deity above the giant monster expressionlessly waved both of his hands, his positions strange, his movements crude, it seemed before the ancient times civilization, the movements during the far back ancient times to worship the Heavens. Following his actions, invisible strange forces surged over, the dark clouds in the sky once again gathered, thick and dark like ink, lightnings flashed and scurried within the clouds, illuminating the layers of darkness.

The people on the ground were shocked, not knowing what evil skills were displayed, just that ever since this Beast Deity appeared, the strange shaman skills he used were all devastating, everyone was all secretly afraid.

And in the mid-air, Reverend DaoXuan frowning tightly, suddenly waved, ordered all of the elders to retreat.

The dark clouds hung low, pressing very very low, finally someone noticed something amiss and cried out, following which, under everyone's stunned gazes, that layers and layers of dark clouds, hung lower and lower, finally from the Nine heavens, landed onto the mortal world, and on this YunHai, swallowed the Beast Deity and that gigantic ferocious monster in.

The dark clouds seemed to be at least several zhangs in circumference, the Good Faction people pulled back and many of those demon beasts who were at the YunHai were enveloped within it. Reverend DaoXuan and the others descended, stopped several zhangs away from that black clouds, their faces grim, staring intently at that rolling surging black clouds.

On the YunHai, right now it again descended into an eerie silence, just that, this stillness eventually was unable to remain for long. That black clouds gathered speed, even those people standing afar, could feel the evil surging power within it.

Finally, that mass of enormous black air, facing Reverend Daoxuan's direction, opened a small opening.

Without any light, like an eternal darkness, that inky black small hole coldly faced the front, the surrounding clouds suddenly spinned crazily, heading towards this small hole. And this small hole seemed to have no limits, swallowing all of the black air, slowly expanding, from one cun to one chi, from one chi to one zhang, in a short time, a most terrifying savage ferocious beast's face appeared before the three leaders.

From the recesses of the darkness, an wild and shrill roar, burst out with a rumble!

Instantly, all of the dark clouds moved and swayed, the entire mountain of TongTian Peak shook, that terrifying figure had totally turned red, flew out from that black dark hole, like an enormous beast howling to the sky, pounced towards Reverend DaoXuan.

Everyone changed countenance!

That Beast Deity young man who was standing at the top of this chaotic situation, looked up and howled to the sky, his clothes flapped crazily in the wind, accompanying it, that savage monster's angry roar below his feet, far surpassing him, like a mountain pressing down, the volume of it, incomparable to any in the world!

Only within this short moment of time, in the three masters' eyes, they could already tell this savage monster was bathed in blood, extremely savage but the most important thing was that its evil power had increased dramatically, the damage that the pure fire flame by Yun YiLan had long disappeared and instead seemed to be better. And right now when the black clouds dispersed, indistinctly it could be seen behind this evil monster, within the dark clouds, the piles of beasts' corpses were all like withered leaves, lay exhausted onto the ground.

The enormous figure bared its fangs and brandished its claws, covering the entire sky, the dark shadow instantly enveloped the three masters, Reverend DaoXuan's face was solemn, was about to make a move when suddenly PuHong Master quietly said, "Both fellow brothers, please step back slightly."

After speaking, PuHong Master moved forward two steps, facing that colossal shadow which was pouncing down from the sky, looking from afar, PuHong Master looked as tiny as an ant.

A golden light, released suddenly from his hands, in this sky full of vicious currents and dark clouds, dazzling like a spot of resplendent sun!

That enlightened eminent monk, revealing a look of benevolence, clasping both of his palms together, yet from the tip of his fingers, golden light abruptly released, growing in size, instantly resplendent, shooting out thousands of golden light, charging straight to the clouds. In the golden lights, a circular golden wheel magical weapon slowly was offered up, the golden light dazzling, the entire object was golden yellow, a diameter of one chi, golden arhat bodies images engraved along the outer ring, surrounding a Buddha in the middle holding a single palm upright, a real body of Buddha image benevolently delivering all from torment.

Far away, numerous people almost at the same time, cried out!

“The Great Compassion Golden Wheel..!”

The treasure of Buddhist sect had just appeared, the golden light immediately was beyond resplendent, with just PuHong Master’s power, this golden light was no way inferior to that light screen made by hundreds of disciples. In the golden light, various Buddhist incantations indistinctly appeared, where it shone, dignified, solemn and merciful energy filled the air, contrasting obviously against that vicious currents ahead of it.

Just that, although facing this treasure which had not appeared for generations, that savage beast which leapt out deep from the dark clouds, full

of murderous intention, under the Beast Deity's manipulation, did not show any slightest sign of retreat, continued to descend, leapt down with a crash and headed into the golden light.

Surprisingly, when that huge shadow and the resplendent golden light collided, there wasn't a slightest sound, not a catastrophic scene as one expected, the golden light suddenly turned around, surrounding from all directions and the black gas which originally filled the sky suddenly shrank but still flying forward, until the end, that savage huge body was compressed to less than one tenth or two tenth of its original size.

However, the remnant of the black gas turned darker, the vicious currents increased incessantly, in the indistinct roars and howls, this black arrow streaked across the sky, broke through the golden layers of defense, to PuHong Master.

The unearthly cold air, savage face, like the deepest darkness before his eyes!

PuHong Master closed his eyes and clasped his palms together, softly chanted incantations, light yet fast, like a song and yet not, like words but yet not. That wheel slowly rotated in the air, emitting thousands of golden light rays, dropped down and landed before PuHong, the Buddha figure and various arhats images, together facing this ancient cruel evil object.

In the golden light, their faces were like benevolence, like austere, benevolence to have compassion for the world's living things, austere in order to vanquish the devil massacre viciously, who would know, which face is the real face of Buddha?

The soft chants, turning louder, in a blink reverberated between Heaven and

Earth!

The brilliant golden light burst forth, unable to view it with the naked eye, like a Buddhist fire burning ablaze the sky, swallowing the whole of the darkness before it, a huge golden halo appeared in the mid air. Such a majestic scene, it was really a rare sight, the crowd on YunHai were utterly shocked, felt awe at the unparalleled Buddha great powers.

Then, while everyone was in awe, that black colour which was intimidated by the unparalleled great power of Buddha, suddenly tenaciously flashed out from the golden light, in the resplendency, like a thin black needle, pierced onto the Great Compassion Golden Wheel.

On the treasured wheel, the compassionate Buddha's face in that instant, flashed past a black color, almost at the same time, the dignified incantations suddenly paused, the noise and excitement also strangely quietened down.

Everyone's gazes, immediately focused on that two figures in the golden light.

On PuHong Master's face, a trace of pain flashed past and that black gas like being revived again, swiftly grew larger and gradually took form, revealing the Beast Deity's figure.

The black gas gradually rose, the Good Faction people together turned pale. Looking from afar, the Beast Deity's face did not show any expression, even his eyes remained cold. Right now on the Golden Wheel, the Buddha's face started to show an unusual black, turning darker and darker, the original compassionate appearance also turned cruel, becoming more and more savage.

PuHong Master's expression changed greatly, his face turned dark, with a low roar, his monk robes rose without wind, his figure in that instant grew. As if being agitated, the golden light in the sky suddenly spinned, making light sharp sounds, rapidly returned to PuHong Master and condensed into a golden light ball, as big as a human palm, golden rays scurried around, like the daylight, even from afar one could feel the Buddhist power surging within it.

In the sky, the solemn incantations again started.

The golden light ball shone with brilliant light, slowly moved forward, under this dignified solemn Buddhist power urging, the black stain on the Golden Wheel Buddha's face slowly receded, started to resume its original appearance. And the Beast Deity seemed to sense something, his expression changed slightly.

The golden light ball finally met with the Great Compassionate Golden Wheel, out of a sudden, golden light shot inwards, the entire magical weapon Golden Wheel seemed to turn transparent, like the morning rays finally being released, the Buddha power as if flowing, like a volcano waiting to erupt, shone with numerous golden dazzling light the Buddhist incantations, shot forth.

In that instant, the entire sky seemed to turn into a golden sea, the golden lights gushed over the whole sky, no other colour could be seen. In this resplendent dazzling sea of light, it seemed there could be no evil beast that could survive.

Other than, that indistinct finger!

In the world enveloped in Buddhist light, in the recesses of the golden light, there seemed to be a thread of black gas, faint like smoke, lightly drifted up, at

times concealed at times obvious, it seemed to be there but seemed like not, spiraling before the Golden Wheel, lightly on the Buddha's face, between the brows on that compassionate kind face, slightly touched it.

That touch, like a grain in the great sea, like a mustard seed in the Mount Xumi, compared to the sky full of Buddhist light, it was so insignificant. But, PuHong Master's face changed, in that flash his face darkened, like dead ash.

And so, everyone saw in that resplendent light, suddenly Heaven and Earth quaked, the golden lights in a turbulent, the monk who looked like a celestial, with a [wa] sound, spat out a mouthful of blood, dyed the Golden Wheel in front of it red.

The violent winds slowly died down, the chaotic sky also turned quiet, the golden light flickered and faded and slowly disappeared. PuHong Master's lips trembled, his body also staggered back, FaXiang and the rest behind him immediately dashed up, caught him.

PuHong Master gave a bitter laugh, looked at that void in front of him, clasped his palms together, "Patron's skills are really powerful, it is really something this old monk has not seen before, admirable, admirable!"

On Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, the numerous Good Faction disciples were dumbfounded.

In the mid-air, the golden lights dispersed, the black air revived once again, like leaping out from the empty air, a sharp whistle, that gigantic ferocious evil beast reappeared again, made one wondered such a huge body, in that intense fight just now, why did they not see it and now it just reborn again like that?

And above its head, that figure which under the horizon, not one of the Good Faction did not cast their glances in fear towards him, his face was paler, for the first time his cold face had an indistinct tiredness, only his eyes remained cold. However when his eyes landed on PuHong Master, his expression eventually slightly changed, coldly snorted.

“The Central Plains cultivated skills, are really out of the ordinary.”

PuHong Master nodded slightly, he actually intended to say a few words to persuade him but looking at his expression, he knew it would be in vain and so under FaXiang and the others support, backed down.

Among the three leaders, two had already lost to this mysterious evil person, the crowd at TongTian Peak changed countenance. And over at Beast Deity side, ten thousands of beasts howled together, their morales high.

And at this moment, a sound of roar, from behind the crowd, in TongTian Peak Crystal Hall, in the cold icy pool, an enormous whirlpool suddenly appeared, the pool rapidly spinned, turning faster and faster, that tiger roar like dragons singing became louder and louder, and actually suppressed those innumerable demonic beasts' cries down.

And in the icy cold pool, the water column as if being stimulated, suddenly rose, as straight as a brush it flew up to the sky, until several zhangs high, the water column did not scatter, like a wild flower burst forth, Qing Yun Hill Celestial Beast Guardian Water Kirin's colossal body emerged.

The disciples on TongTian Peak were first shocked, following which wild cheers of joy were heard, their morales boosted greatly. The water kirin before everyone's stares, raised his head and howled long to the sky, shook its head

and tail, leaving the water column and flew forward, landed among the clouds.

The water column then dropped down with a crash, a loud rumble like a mountain torrent, splattered the surrounding icy pool wet and cold, the Good Faction disciples who couldn't escape in time, looked quite a sorry state.

But most of the people, couldn't care much, their gazes were all looking up to the sky. The water kirin glared angrily with its wide eyes, roaring ceaselessly, hovering in the mid air, and a dark-green figure, slowly landed, onto the water kirin, facing the front, that Beast Deity which seemed invincible.

Reverend DaoXuan!

The Beast Deity's detached expression did not change, met Reverend DaoXuan's stare across the air. And that huge ferocious evil monster below his feet facing the water kirin, at the same time roared with the same ferocity back, and the water kirin facing such monster, evidently did not have any slightest good feeling, looked even more ferocious, bared its fangs and roared back.

In the roar, the water kirin suddenly lifted its head, faint dark-green light flashed past, spat out a long sword which looked like stone, hovered in the sky, Reverend DaoXuan stretched out his right hand and caught it.

In that instant, suddenly, the entire Qing Yun Hill was silent, and the next moment, a deafening roar like a torrent burst forth.

Zhu Xian Ancient Sword!

The legendary considered unexcelled in the world, an all-conquering Zhu Xian

Ancient Sword, the Good Faction supreme celestial weapon to subdue demon and vanquish evil, finally after ten years, again appeared in the mortal world.

A beam of light, from that legendary ancient sword, like gentle water quietly flowing, travelled to Reverend DaoXuan's body. In the countless cheers, the moment Reverend DaoXuan held the sword handle, for some reason, his body trembled slightly, then, he again exert force, steadily, heavily, held Zhu Xian Ancient Sword in his hand.

“Heaven bestowed Celestial Sword, to vanquish Evil!”

Reverend DaoXuan did not look different, his expression calm, his hand holding Zhu Xian, pointing at the Beast Deity, in the people's eyes, he was like a celestial which could not be profane.

Under the sword, countless cheered. And before the sword, the Beast Deity looked at that ancient sword for a long time, and then intently at Reverend DaoXuan, suddenly a change appeared on his cold face, he actually shook his head and laughed, his laughter loud and bright, reverberated between Heaven and Earth, in it mixed with a few sounds of low coughs.

“Good sword, good sword!” Beast Deity actually clapped his hands and praised, however in his words, there were subtle mocking intentions, said, “With this supreme savage sword, even I have some reservations, unexpectedly it is in your hands, it is really...hahahahaha...”

He did not continue and like he was looking at something most ridiculous in his life for the first time, he couldn't hold back and laugh out loud, confounding the rest of the people.

Facing that savage person, Reverend DaoXuan's expression did not change,

and did not refute, only breathed deeply, briefly closed his eyes and opened, his eyes glinting, instantly, a brilliant light from Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, released out.

The water kirin howled to the sky!

The Beast Deity suddenly stopped laughing, his face revealed seriousness, facing ahead.

And all of the people below, held their breaths, everyone knew, the fight between these two, was already the final battle.

The final ending of this catastrophe, is finally here!

, , ,

Chapter 171 - Witchcraft

Outside the ancient forbidden place, birds chirped, the mountains tranquil, other than the earlier indistinct shouts and roars of battle from the mountain a distance away, there was no other noise. Gentle mountain breeze blew over from afar, the exuberant vegetation on the mountain swayed together, it looked not like a scene from the mortal world.

Under the four bold big words of the Illusory Moon Cave, the stone walls outside the primitive cave seemed to have wear off much, as if it had recorded the infinite number of times time had quietly passed through here. And right now, this stretch of wild countryside seemed to be silent, watching these two men facing each other.

How much time over the years, quietly passed just like that, when one turned back, the good friends from the old days, how many are left?

Lin JingYu had been keeping quiet but the expressions on his face constantly changed violently, only his eyes, never left Ghost Li. That man standing silently before him! Was it still that Zhang Xiao Fan?

Finally, he spoke, his deep low voice with a trace of hoarseness, said, "Why did you kill him? He was only an old man who was already in his late days."

Ghost Li's facial muscles seemed to twitch once, he raised his eyes and looked at Lin JingYu, that playmate from his childhood, the veins on his face seemed to move, it could be seen that he was struggling to control his emotions but such a fiery and forthright expression, it seemed to be his innate look!

Just like, when he was young, he was already familiar with it. And right now, he stood there openly, under the sunlight, questioning himself...

Deep inside the dense forest, there seemed to be a pair of dark eyes, coldly watching the two men's figures.

Ghost Li watched him for a long time, slowly said one sentence, "He obstructed my way."

Lin JingYu snorted and then he lifted his head to the sky, inhaled deeply, like he was speaking to himself deep inside his heart, the next moment, when he turned back, he had a cold expression.

He stared deeply at Ghost Li, looked at this once so familiar but right now so unfamiliar face, coldly said, "Since the terrible tragedy in Grasstemple village, when we are the only survivors, I have always treated you like my brother, do you know?"

Ghost Li's lips moved, slowly nodded.

Lin JingYu stared at him, said, "In my heart, I have always thought, we are the closest, therefore even ten years ago when you betrayed Qing Yun, I have always hoped, hoped that one day you will realize your wrongs and mend your ways, return to Good Faction again." For the first time a dismal expression appeared on his face but in this disappointment it indistinctly still revealed hatred, coldly smiled and said, "But, eventually I am still wrong, I should have realized it earlier, you are no longer that best brother Zhang Xiao Fan, you are now already Evil Sect fearful figure, the merciless Ghost Li."

He laughed dismally, the expression on his face turned even more decisive, a sound of [qiang lang] dragons singing, jade-green light flared, 'Dragon Slayer Sword' left its sheath, the sword energy like dragon, like a raging torrent, raging to devour someone, reflecting Lin JingYu's young yet angry face, looking somehow savage.

"Our past friendship, sever in half today!"

The resounding words were spoken resolutely. Following which a beam of jade-green sword light, tore apart this silence, from high up in the air slashed across the solid sturdy stone ground, a loud sound, ceasing only after a long time. After which, what was left was horizontally between the two of them, a deep sword scar on the stone slab.

Ghost Li's face suddenly changed, even his body for some reason, trembled, he stared hard at that deep scar on the ground, for the first time his face revealed a trace of anguish.

That sword scar was so deep, carved into the solid stone, unable to be erased again. He looked at that scar, even Lin JingYu's words, he seemed to take no notice.

The deep sword scar, not long ago, he seemed to have seen it before?

Almost at some time, someone he treasured in his heart, also cut off all relations, also such resolutely!

Deep scar, deep deep scar, cut through the stone slab on the ground, severed

all relations in the world but the one it hurt, whose heart was it?

Almost like he couldn't breathe, Ghost Li involuntarily panted heavily, even his body started to shake uncontrollably but the next moment, he again took control over himself. The agitated expression on his face flashed past and never appeared again. He slowly lowered his head, secretly, clenched his teeth tight.

Then, he lifted his head, looked at Lin JingYu for a long time, clenched both of his hands into fists, his nails sinking deep into his flesh.

But on his face, he smiled instead.

Lin JingYu became even more infuriated, said, "What are you laughing at?"

Ghost Li stared at him for a long time, softly said, "Realize wrongs and mend ways?" He suddenly laughed loudly, his laughter mournful, said, "Yes I am lost, indeed I couldn't find the way but which way is the correct path, is it your path?"

Lin JingYu sternly said, "That's right, Good Faction is the correct path, you betrayed and abandoned the Good Faction, that would be astray."

"Pei!"

Lin JingYu's body shook, was stunned.

Ghost Li's dismal look, lifted his head to the sky, angrily spat and said, "Who said that Good Faction is the correct way? Is it you? Even if it's what you said,

Good Faction is the correct way, then what makes you think your Qing Yun is definitely considered the Good Faction?”

Lin JingYu frowned tightly, a murderous expression revealed on his face, coldly said, “Since you and I have already sever our relations, why bother with words!”

Ghost Li coldly looked at him, said, “You want to kill me?”

Lin JingYu sternly said, “That old man is killed by you, these ten years he had devotedly taught me, treated me like his son, I am indebted to him, like a father to me. He is killed by you and you are still unrepentable, I want to rid the people of an evil, seek revenge for him.”

Ghost Li sneered, said, “There are many kinds of jackals and wolves in the world, actually it didn’t mean anything but just that I have not fulfilled my wish and so definitely will not die.”

Lin JingYu laughed a long laugh, full of disdain, the Dragon Slayer Sword lit up, he coldly said, “Enough with nonsense, our old scores over these ten over years, settle it today!”

Ghost Li humphed, dim dark-green light lit up from his right hand, that firestick glowed with dark light, quietly flew up.

Birds chirped lightly, the mountain felt even more tranquil, the lush green mountain, clear breeze lightly blew, under the boundless sky, before the thousand years old ancient cave, the two childhood friends, coldly facing each other, about to do a life-and-death battle.

And at this time, suddenly, behind them, a deep rumble was heard from that Illusory Moon Cave, the surroundings started to shake, both of them changed countenance.

Before they could react, from that ancient cave, a purple gas flashed past, instantly that purple gas leapt up, shrouded the cave opening, the clouds surged, among it thunder rumbled, the purple gas like a column, charged straight up to the clouds.

Leaving the two of them before this Heaven and Earth spectacle, right now looking extremely insignificant, their clothes flapped in the wind, again staring at each other coldly.

The wind was whistling.

Passing TongTian Peak, imposing and solemn but not only it was an absolute silence over at Good Faction side, even that black pressing stretch of demon beasts ahead, seemed to sense something, also quietened down, looked up.

Standing above the white skeleton monster's skull, the brightly coloured silk clothings of the Beast Deity gently fluttered in the wind, a youthful appearance but his eyes showed a timeless gaze, also looking at that gradually emerging huge sword formation in the sky.

The majestic purple air, first soared up from back of the Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, its speed like lightning, its momentum unparalleled, charging up to the sky, like an enormous purple pillar supporting Heaven and Earth, suddenly appeared in this vast world. The purple air rose, turbulently and finally landed on that rock-yet-not-like-rock Zhu Xian Ancient Sword.

That moment, Zhu Xian Ancient Sword lighted up, even from a far distance, the innumerable humans, could sense high up in the sky, on that ancient sword, there seemed to be something, moving slightly, like slowly awakening from a deep slumber.

On the ancient sword, brilliant light released, reflecting Reverend DaoXuan's face.

His dark-green robes rose without wind, making flapping sounds, his right hand holding the sword, his face solemn, his left hand fingers held a sword gesture tightly, between Heaven and Earth his low voice was heard, like Sanskrit chanting, like a strange incantation, reverberating far and wide. Suddenly, his left hand sword gesture moved, piercing the horizon, almost at the same time, the other six lofty mountain summits of Qing Yun mountain ranges, six rays of light rose up, like a long rainbow running through the horizon, broke through and arrived, streaking a long trajectory across the firmament and finally also landed on that Zhu Xian Ancient Sword.

Instantly, the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword was enveloped in an extremely dazzling radiance, like the rising sun descended upon the mortal world, unable to look at it, the resplendent light burst forth from the ancient sword, immediately that mass of dark air which was hovering in the horizon was chased completely away.

In the resplendent light, seven colour lights merged into one, rose up from that mass of brilliant white light, in the sky, transformed into an enormous seven-coloured sword, flowing with colour and light. Following which, that colourful main sword with the ceaseless pouring of the seven mountain summits spiritual energies, started to become larger and during the process, different single-coloured energy small spiritual swords separated from it,

increasing in number, started to spread thickly over the sky.

On the ground, a burst of cheers was heard from the onlookers, numerous young disciples, regardless or not whether they were from Qing Yun sect, all revealed awe and revered expressions, looking up at that almost mythology majestic sword formation in the horizon. And many of those who had experienced that Qing Yun turmoil ten years ago, right now had mixed feelings, some rejoiced, some silent.

Among the crowd, the surrounding young disciples smiled and laughed, Lu XueQi silently looked up at that resplendent, imposing Zhu Xian Sword Formation, the rays of light, reflecting down from the sky, enveloped everyone including her in it, reflecting her face bright. Just that, on her beautiful cold face, there was no expression, only in her pair of bright eyes, reflected that seven colours light, dimly, flashed with a different kind of feeling but eventually nobody could see what was deep in her heart.

Ten years of time, without realizing, quietly passed by like that, who would still remember, that heart-wrenching cry at Qing Yun Hill? Who would still remember, that young man who sank into despair?

Lu XueQi's body trembled, suddenly seemed to recall something unbearable, even the expression on her face also dimmed down, subconsciously she held TianYa Celestial Sword tighter in her hand.

The sky full of sword figures, became more and more dense, numerous brilliant lights, covered the entire sky.

In the Beast Deity's eyes, reflected the entire sky infinite swords, looking at it for a long time, he nodded, his face solemn, sighed and said, "It is really the

work of the Gods, didn't expect that there is such an unparalleled figure in Central Plains, able to gather the spiritual energies of the mountains and create such an exceptional sword formation. It is really amazing!"

He clapped and praised, said three times in succession, "Amazing!"

"Amazing!"

"Amazing!"

Although he sang praises but his face did not show the slightest fear, or should say, nobody knew, someone like him, a human-but-not-like-human, like those ghost demons, would he feel fear and dread?

In the stormy situation, the enormous monster made a low growl, slowly rose up and hovered in the air, facing that Water Kirin and Reverend DaoXuan standing on its back.

The violent wind blew past, the sky silent!

The humans and beasts racket below, suddenly seemed to be very far away, leaving only the two of them facing each other, the vast Heaven and Earth yet seemed narrow and cramped, seemed unable to accommodate two people.

Both of them looked at each other.

Reverend DaoXuan coldly said, "Under Zhu Xian Sword, demons and ghosts have never been able to survive, if you are smart, surrender now, incarcerate

yourself for a lifetime at Qing Yun and I will spare your life.”

Beast Deity was stunned and then laughed out, did not mind, only shook his head slightly, his face showed a few signs of ridicule. Reverend DaoXuan saw it, did not speak anymore, breathed deeply, his right hand held the sword tightly, his left hand suddenly waved, the sky full of dense swords, suddenly an orange spiritual sword left the crowd, pierced through the sky with a sharp whistle, shot towards Beast Deity.

Beast Deity was solemn but his eyes stared intently on the sword that was flying towards him, this orange sword flew like lightning, in a blink was already less than one zhang before him. Beast Deity suddenly raised his left hand, five fingers spread towards the direction of the sword.

In the mid-air, black gas appeared out of thin air, one zhang before the Beast Deity, instantly solidified and formed a black shield wall, top square bottom sharp, blocked before the orange-coloured small sword.

A moment later, the orange sword collided onto the black shield!

Heaven and Earth, in that instant, still that silent.

[Rumble!]

Following, like the rising sun leaping out of the water surface, a thunderous rumble immediately erupted, and in the black air orange light, few lightnings flashed and then slowly receded.

These two objects were both formless gas objects but as if like the world's

most sturdy treasures both shook hard, the entire firmament and earth, shrouded in the deafening rumble.

The invisible sound waves, strong winds following, Qing Yun Hill summit, everyone's ears were ringing, their countenances changed. Although the people already knew the two of them were highly skilled figures but from that exchange earlier, it looked like an ordinary testing of skills yet actually had such a powerful impact, it was really unexpected, at the same time the final outcome of this battle, would be even unpredictable.

There were even some who already thought, after this calamity, under such intensive and fierce fight, what would be the outcome of Qing Yun Hill.

In the air, Reverend DaoXuan and the Beast Deity faced each other, both expressionless, couldn't tell if there was any sign of surprise or shock emotions. Under the dazzling colourful spiritual swords sky, the Beast Deity was shrouded in a mass of black air, looking especially glaring.

After a long time, Reverend DaoXuan slightly snorted, his left hand sword gesture signalled, his robes danced, against that resplendent ancient sword Zhu Xian in his hand which flashed for a moment, in the firmament, suddenly violent wind came from all directions, the sky of sword images, half of the swords in the horizon suddenly swayed. For a moment, brilliant lights and vibrant colours in the horizon, extremely awe-inspiring, almost unable to view directly.

The Beast Deity's countenance changed, focused to meet it. As expected the next moment, starting from the back of Reverend DaoXuan, several colourful swords had already turned, trembling and shaking in the sky, targeting the Beast Deity. The cold energy, instantly surged and raged, the next moment, half of the swords in the sky, at one glance unable to tell the exact numbers, all seemed to be manipulated by an invisible force, slowly turning over.

Between Heaven and Earth, an austere atmosphere. But before the people could react, the ancient sword in Reverend DaoXuan's hand had already exploded with light, at the same time, like an angry tide erupting, the raging waves hit the shore, the hundred over single-coloured spiritual swords in the formation formed a long and wide seven zhang huge sword rain, pounded down with a rumble.

The sky rang with piercing sharp whistles, [suo suo] sounds reverberated between Heaven and Earth. The Beast Deity watched the sword rain approaching, with a loud shout, the enormous monster below his feet at the same time howled long to the sky, its cry extremely mournful. However both of his hands opened wide and closed, his body moved, making weird movements, even from afar, for some reason, everyone on TongTian Peak at the same time heard an extremely odd desolate song.

That song was completely different from Central Plains, desolate and forceful, like a wild huge beast howling to the night sky in the storm, there was even a endless whistling feeling.

Following the deep ancient music, accompanying it was sonorous and rhythmic strange drum beats, the black air around the Beast Deity suddenly soared up, black like ink, in the violent wind rapidly circulated, like a black dragon brandishing its claws, imposingly watching the world.

, , ,

Chapter 172 - Evil Beast

No sooner said than done, that overwhelming rain of swords had already arrived before the Beast Deity, the strong winds creating a biting pain on the face. And at this flint-spark moment, the Beast Deity's figure was suddenly concealed, vanished in the cloud-mass of black gas, instead that ferocious spiritual huge beast beneath it surged with black gas, suddenly leapt up, its skeleton making cracking sounds, surrounded by the cloud of black gas, it looked even more terrible.

That terrible monster roared to the sky, at that instant the sky changed, sands and stones blew and rolled away from the ground, almost no one could stand straight. In the chaotic scene, the black gas surged and rolled, merged with that monster, in a blink expanded more than three times, several streams of black gases emerged out from its white skeleton, danced in the air like tentacles.

By now the Zhu Xian sword rain had already arrived, the thousands swords were no ordinary formation, the black gases rushed up, before it could reach it, instantly it was dispersed completely by the swords energies, leaving not even a trace, charged down and headed straight to that savage monster.

That ferocious monster roared incessantly, the strange howls again and again, this batch of extremely sharp swords looked like it would soon hit the huge monster, suddenly those several tentacles like alive, flew up and met the swords, the black gases covered the clouds and hid the sun, blocking the sword rain.

The Zhu Xian swords in a blink met it, however those black gases-like-

tentacles were definitely not like the surrounding black gas but yet not like the initial tough and sturdy gases wielded by the Beast Deity, the hundred-over spiritual swords charged down, those tentacles as if alive, wrapped around, gradually slowing down the momentum, even the swords' brilliance, slowly dimmed, gradually losing its shine.

However Zhu Xian swords were after all not ordinary, although it was formed by invisible energies, in order to dissolve these swords, the surrounding black gases tentacles evidently were also wounded by those celestial energies, huge amount of vapors rose, from that ferocious monster's body, black gases poured out endlessly, in a blink filled up the front. In not a short while, these hundred over Zhu Xian spiritual swords were inconceivably dissolved away.

Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, absolute silence, like a dead silence.

In the mid-air, Reverend DaoXuan looked even more grave but there was no fear, his celestial-like figure towered aloft at the top of the clouds, his hand holding the brilliant shining Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, looking like an ancient celestial deity.

But he only sneered, his right hand holding the sword towards the sky, slowly waved, following which the ancient sword's brilliance dazzled, thunder indistinctly started to rumble in the sky, the entire sky rumbled, the powerful Zhu Xian sword formation started to turn together, especially that seven-coloured main sword was even more resplendent, unable to view it directly.

In the white light, from the ancient sword Zhu Xian, suddenly purple air leapt up and charged to the sky, directly entered into the sword formation, instantly within ten zhang the purple gas spiritual swords gathered together; closely following, the other six brilliant lights one by one leapt up, magnificent and dazzling, flying into the sky, immediately formed a seven-star position within

Zhu Xian sword formation, each an enormous single-coloured sword formation, majestic and awe-inspiring.

The winds and clouds whistled, the violent sound of the winds.

A shock of thunder suddenly in the silence, a loud crash, like the hearts of thousand people in shock, the swords' brilliance flowed in the horizon, colourful lights dazzled, numerous colourful swords streaked past the horizon, charged down with sharp whistling.

Like an angry tide in the sky, surged forward, the purple gas leading, at one glance it looked endless, even much more powerful than the previous force. And behind the purple gas, every ten zhang, single-coloured spiritual swords converged, whistling and surging, turbulent and raging, not what a human could imagine.

Looking at this almost armageddon-like scene, not one did not change countenance, their palms breaking out in sweat.

Mixing in this deafening thunder and sharp whistling sounds, the ancient song slowly submerged, even those strange drum beats, had long disappeared. But that huge monster, facing such frightening furious billows of the sword rain, it was still brazen, in the rising black gases, it howled sharply, like provoking the sky, extremely arrogant and obstinate.

In a blink the swords' light pounced onto its body, several black gases tentacles immediately rushed up, in spite of the fact that this sword energy was already incomparable to the previous attack but the southern crude ancient witchcraft, had a strange unfathomable deity-ghost ability, the black tentacles became more daring as it battled, although it was pierced a thousand holes and

openings by the innumerable sword energies in an instant but the endless black gas immediately was filled up, the largest limit was actually expanded, extended several zhang more.

Just that this wave of purple spiritual swords charging into the black gas, forcibly suppressed the black gas but the next moment, the black gas had already countered, leapt up, swallowed the spiritual swords one by one. Even it was so, before the black gas could resume its original form, the second wave of sword formation had already arrived.

The multifarious scene, boundless piercing light, in the firmament the swords light like rain like locust, dense and thick, and with Reverend DaoXuan's power manipulation, Zhu Xian ancient sword turned more and more resplendent, in the mid-air the seven-coloured main sword continued to split out more and more single-coloured spiritual swords, the speed increasing and increasing, waves and waves of soul-stirring huge sword formations, with a loud rumble struck down that mass of black air.

Under such brazenly attack by this Zhu Xian formation like angry tide, the black gas was unable to regain its initial arrogant look, gradually starting from ten zhang radius, gradually being shrunk and facing waves of even stronger waves, the turbulent swords light almost like infinite and giving a feeling of hopelessness, the black gas gradually was unable to sustain. The enormous ferocious monster still roaring incessantly but the surrounding black gas had gradually became weaker, every wave came nearer to it, the black gas gradually became thin, the strange tentacles also gradually weaker, struggled to resist that sky of sword rain.

Unknown since when, after a period of long silence, the crowd below broke out in waves of cheers.

The last six tentacles, after with effort resisted that wave of green sword, finally dispersed and disappeared, in the air, leaving only that huge monster.

Heaven and Earth solemn, spiritual swords marched over unhindered!

Indistinct ancient song, vast and boundless wilderness!

Like a shock of thunder, like a flash of lightning, infinite swords rays descended from the sky, pouring over from all directions, piercing through that huge monster in the sky.

The huge white skeleton instantly splitted, numerous black blood fluid sprayed out, the monster abruptly lifted its head, made a heart-wrenching cry to the firmament.

The winds ceased and the clouds dispersed.

The sword rain ceased.

Ten thousands eyes watching, the huge ferocious body, every inch of flesh and bones, seemed to be trembling, watching carefully, twinkling with numerous tiny swords, stabbed everywhere, from head to tail, from top to bottom, there was not a place where it was whole.

The people on TongTian Peak sucked in a breath of cold air, for some reason, felt a sensation of pricks at their backs.

Just that, that monster was still not dead, the head stabbed full of Zhu Xian

numerous swords, slowly turned around, looked at its body full of holes and slowly lowered its head. For some reason its voice, was not that mournful and ferocious, right now it was extremely deep, looked reluctant and even more in pain.

The giant mouth opened and closed, two red glints flashed past its eyes, like fire flames, burning strongly but eventually soon after that, shattered and disappeared.

The next moment, in the mid air, from the huge monster's body a loud sound burst forth, resounded between Heaven and Earth, numerous swords flew backwards, even that sword formation in the firmament, also had a wave of disorder.

Then, that once mighty huge ferocious monster, as if it suddenly become extremely fragile, the violent wind blew past, the indestructible skeletal body, like sands and stones, collapsed finely, white bones to sand, flesh to stones, scattered with the wind.

The crowd silently stared at the horizon, when victory was in sight, no one cheered, as if there was a layer of strange feeling, enveloped everyone's heart.

In the sky, that once huge body seemed almost completely dispersed with the wind, suddenly a cry was heard from below, following which everyone started to cry out. In the monster's body, although the flesh and bones were completely dissolved but there was still a mass of black gas, slowly rotating in the air, the next moment, when the monster was finally completely destroyed, and that mass of black gas slowly dispersed, revealed a sight.

It was a young man body, indeed it was the Beast Deity who had disappeared.

However the Beast Deity right now was not that cool and compose as before, instead he cut a sorry figure, especially that gorgeous set of silk clothes, right now was full of holes, blew once at by the strong winds, turned to ashes in the sky.

Right now he was naked but on his face, there was no fear or disappointment, on the contrary, his eyes was staring ahead at that majestic vast sword formation, suddenly smiled, stretched his body, his entire body hovering in the air, clapped and said, “Admirable, admirable!”

Reverend DaoXuan’s countenance changed, apparently he did not expect that the Beast Deity was such a difficult foe, facing such powers and he could still resist, and at one glance, he only looked slightly pale and tired, on his body, not a single wound.

Below, suddenly a commotion, many of the female disciples at Qing Yun Hill right now realized with a start, their faces red, did not dare to look at the sky again. Instead at the horizon, although the Beast Deity was naked but he did not seem to care, as if he was like that since the beginning of Heaven and Earth, behaving like nothing had happened, only stared intently like that ancient sword in Reverend DaoXuan’s hand.

Reverend DaoXuan sneered, said, “If you surrender now and promise to incapacitate your skills yourself, at Qing Yun rear mountain Illusory Moon Cave re-cultivate and progress to Good, I can spare your life. Otherwise, under Zhu Xian Sword, will not let you such a menacing threat live!”

Having said that, he held the Zhu Xian ancient sword, gently waved, immediately the swords in the sky seemed to sense it, wavered together, a commanding presence. But at this moment, a trace of pain flashed past Reverend DaoXuan’s face, although it was just for a moment but the Beast

Deity had already caught it.

The Beast Deity hovered in the air, his eyes ablaze with a strange glint, a trace of smile revealed on his lips, lightly said, “Like this kind of extreme savage celestial sword, in addition with the spiritual energy from the green mountains below, you actually are able to sustain until now and yet still not exhausted, it is really incomparable to ordinary person.”

Reverend DaoXuan frowned, in a deep voice asked, “What do you mean by these words?”

The Beast Deity laughed and did not answer, only shook his head, said, “The ferocious spirit of the ancient sword, must definitely be created out of Heaven and Earth vicious currents, came from the same source as me, how would I not know? You forcefully wield the sword and battle with me, the outcome still unknown but mostly taking advantage of the sword energies, harming others and yourself like that, you are not an ordinary folk, why do you still need me to elaborate further? He he, “ Speaking until here, the Beast Deity coldly laughed twice, again said, “I advise you to abandon the sword early, otherwise later on the sword backlash, I’m afraid your outcome will even be thousands and ten thousands times more tragic than me.”

Reverend DaoXuan stared at the Beast Deity for a long time, suddenly shook his head and laughed loudly, his eyes full of disdain, said, “Evil spirits and demonic heretical ways, how would you know our Taoist school benevolent heart! And furthermore our Taoist school true way, supreme celestial sword, how will it be what your ravings are?”

He made a clear whistle, at where his arm was raised, the entire sky of swords quivered, imposing said, “Evildoer, receive death!”

The Beast Deity sneered, the glint in his eyes burned like fire, eagerly said, “Good, today will let you see the power of our southern border witchcraft!”

He had just spoke, black gas already formed, from his skin, suddenly flashed with black air, the next moment his fair skin had turned totally black like ink, and under the skin, it started trembling, countless tiny lumps rose, like alive, started to shake unceasingly.

In an unknown far place, the open vast wilderness, suddenly an extremely low [dong dong] strange sound was heard, like a human heartbeat, extremely weird. In the far horizon, outside Zhu Xian sword formation brilliance ten thousands zhang away, the sky suddenly darkened, the dark clouds rolled over from all directions with rapid speed, quickly gathered beside the Beast Deity.

Reverend DaoXuan looked grave, his entire self alert and prepared, stared at the strange changes in front of him.

In the hovering black gases, the deep strange sounds which seemed to come from the spiritual Nine netherworlds travelled faster and faster, denser and denser, made one involuntarily felt as if their own heartbeat also increased in speed, faster and faster, until in the end it felt almost going to burst, a few lower-skilled Good Faction disciples actually could not take it, fell and sat on the ground, used their internal energies and struggled to resist.

And in the air, as the black gas turned thicker and thicker, suddenly, a deep low roar, like a creature growl, and yet like an insect breaking out of its cocoon, everyone could see it clearly, on that black Beast Deity’s body, from the left arm, the skin burst, from the countless small bumps that shook incessantly, slowly extended out something, with fingers and hand, it was actually another arm, and on this new arm, strong sturdy bones, far bigger than the body’s own arm, couldn’t imagine how this could stretch out from the original arm.

However this was just the beginning, following the sounds of deep bursting, every part of the Beast Deity's body seemed to explode out, and from there different kinds of huge body parts appeared. And before long, from these new body parts, again burst opened, again grew new and even bigger body limbs.

The people on TongTian Peak were struck dumb with shock, looked at each other, such bizarre unnatural black art, not only they had never seen, they had not even heard of it. Thousands and thousands of years in Central Plains, in countless of ancient books and records, never had anyone recorded such shocking black art.

Right now Reverend DaoXuan, also couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air, stunned to see the Beast Deity who looked like an ordinary young man, at the moment constantly expanding, until finally when he stopped splitting, towering in front of Reverend DaoXuan, facing Zhu Xian formation, was already as high as ten zhang, thousand hands hundred heads monster.

TongTian Peak mountain rear, Illusory Moon Cave boundary.

The purple column that had rose from the cave was still the same, without any sign of faltering, looking at it from afar, that column looked like it was solid, propitious vapours rose, solemn and dignified.

And in the sky at the moment, covered more than half by Zhu Xian sword formation, even separated from a far distance, Ghost Li and Lin JingYu both could feel the surging turbulent celestial power of Zhu Xian in the horizon.

Restraining the trembling Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand, Lin JingYu looked away from the sky, shocked by the power and might of the ancient Zhu Xian, at

the same time his emotions also had a slight change. Just now, he and Ghost Li seemed to at the tip of a life-and-death fight, this Zhu Xian sword formation started suddenly, a majestic scene, immediately stunned both of them. The two like-mindedly stopped.

And to say it actually, very likely the person standing in front of him, would be feeling even more complicated right? Lin JingYu for some reason, this thought flashed past his mind, turned and looked at Ghost Li.

That man, who looked to have gone through the vicissitudes of life, quietly looking at the sky, that brilliant, soul-stirring majestic scene.

Heaven and Earth quietly turned silent, the sound of wind from somewhere far, seemed to blow over, the voice many years ago, and deep inside the mind, reverberated countless of times the past ten years, heartbroken each time the scene was revisited.

[Ding...ding...bell...]

Faintly, like the wind-bells gently swaying in the breeze, who glanced back and smiled in the sounds of bell, that once light green figure and gentle body with warmth, that little bit of remaining warmth, God knows those past few years, how many desolate nights it had warmed him?

The chill from the recesses, from the heart coldly surfaced, gushed up into the heart, chilled the heart, made the body cold, from the fingers to deep in the heart, like it could never feel another trace of pain, yet suddenly discovered, that time had already transformed into a sharp knife, constantly cutting.

But blood was not seen!

“BiYao...”

He lightly spoke, for some reason his body, started to tremble. In his eyes, reflected those ten thousands brilliant lights from the swords, almost not a mortal world scene. That numerous disarray galloping swords light, every ray that unrestrained and confident, all vivid in his mind, reminding him the memories of the past.

That green figure, as if standing beside him, like ten years ago, facing everyone, never retreating, never once regret!

“Hu ah...”

Ghost Li howled to the sky, both of his eyes wide opened, two hands clenched into fists, made a deep low [ge ge] sound. As if sensing its owner's indignation, the Soul-Devouring slowly flew up, its dark black body, thin lines of dark red like blood vessels one by one lit up, reflected in Ghost Li's eyes, gradually dyed both of his eyes red.

Crisp cry of the sword, alerted him, Ghost Li slowly turned around, a pair of blood red eyes, saw Lin JingYu's sneer and disdain expression.

“You are really beyond hope!” Lin JingYu resolutely said, “I should have known, you have degenerate into the Evil Faction and it is hard for you to come back, unfortunately I still care about our former friendship, hope that you will come back. Forget it, today on this Qing Yun Hill, let's make a clean break!”

Ghost Li watched him for a long time, suddenly laughed out loud, his laughter gradually turning wilder, full of arrogance and disdain.

Lin JingYu was furious, with an angry shout, made a sword gesture, immediately jade-green light shone brightly, Dragon Slayer Sword's light seemed to transform into a greenish blue dragon, rising into the air. At that instant, violent winds started in front of the cave, Lin JingYu holding the celestial sword flew up, his white clothes flapped, dashing and confident, like a giant among men, emerged out in the world floating. Just that at that moment, the murderous look in his eyes, seemed to surpass Ghost Li.

Flying up, Dragon Slayer Sword had already slashed down, although separated by a distance but the sword ray streaked over, like a green dragon its force impossible to resist, lashing out a deep groove on the ground, straight to Ghost Li.

Ghost Li, still that wild and slightly savage look, watching the jade-green ray bursting over, suddenly his body like a ghost, instantly disappear.

The Dragon Slayer Sword ray cut down, hit at there Ghost Li was standing previous, immediately the sturdy stone slab on the ground broke apart into four or five pieces, a big pit carved out.

The next moment, Ghost Li suddenly appeared one zhang before Lin JingYu, the Soul-Devouring stick flew out, red light flashing, flying with a whistling sound, the strong wind assaulting the face, also without any mercy.

Lin JingYu was shocked but calm, his body suddenly leapt up, avoided the thousands-pounds-force, turning back wielding his sword he was already charging over. Ghost Li made a long laugh, did not avoid and headed straight,

the Soul-Devouring like lightning had flew back to his hand, heading towards Lin JingYu.

The two childhood playmates, glaring at each other like that, fighting till life and death.

Like an arrow leaving the bow, collided in mid-air!

Instantly, violent winds abruptly gathered, with the two persons as the centre, invisible sound waves rippled out, uprooted the trees nearby, flying backwards.

And in the center of the storm, the two persons' faces at the same time flashed with a trace of pain, an indistinct gold ray flitted past Ghost Li's face.

This fight which happened at the rear of TongTian Peak, following the winds brushing past the lofty ridges and towering mountains, over a far distance, it was already inaudible, moreover right now in the mortal world sky, the living things in the world, who would still care about them?

In the sky, there was still an even more important battle!

Just that, among the crowd, for some reason, Lu XueQi suddenly was shocked, strangely a faint gold light flashed past her face.

She turned back stunned, her body stiff, gazing far, in that far distance, it was that secluded remote mountain rear...

Chapter 173 - Celestial Sword

In the mid-air, Reverend DaoXuan frowning tightly, facing that, as if from the Nine netherworlds ferocious ghost, Beast Deity, not only him, all of the Good Faction people below, everyone of them was also staring in shock.

That monster in the air, its entire body as black as ink, the muscles on the colossal body bulged, numerous thick sturdy limbs extended out from the body, at a quick glance, not less than several hundreds, including the head and face which had deformed due to the witchcraft, it was even more savage and terrible, it was really an evil beast which never had been seen ever since Heaven and Earth formed.

After a period of silence, a stir of commotion and hubbub started from the human crowd, other than being utterly shocked, many more had actually expected, with this kind of southern border barbarians, naturally were the extremely vicious and evil type, this person before them looked not like human nor ghost, neither evil or devil monster, how would it be an innate thing from the world?

In the mid-air, Reverend DaoXuan took a deep breath, unhurriedly placed Zhu Xian ancient sword horizontally before his chest. The dazzling white light continued to pour out from the ancient sword, not only shrouded the sword in it, even Reverend DaoXuan's entire right arm was also enveloped. Looking from the outside, right now the horizon was full of swords' images, the sword formation a commanding presence, Reverend DaoXuan looked even more like a immortal but for some reason, under his celestial-appearance, his face started to look pale.

“Evil-doer, “ Reverend DaoXuan’s voice was like the peals of a deep bell, his tone deep, rumbling off, compared to previously, it was more austere, “you still have not come to realize the truth, are you waiting to be caught?”

The thousands-hands monster that the Beast Deity had transformed to, obviously did not give any weight to Reverend DaoXuan’s words, and after transforming, his voice also changed, it became hoarse and grating, as if a torn sandpaper sharpening a steel knife, sneered and said, “Waiting to be caught? Hehe, later I will first skin you alive, then disembowel those useless things below and dig out their hearts, send them to meet you at Hades, how about it?”

Reverend DaoXuan’s baleful energy between his brows flashed, without bothering with more words, where his sword gesture moved, immediately the sky full of swords danced, Zhu Xian sword formation was activated once again. Although that monster’s words were wildly arrogant but facing this unparalleled once a thousand years sword formation, naturally would not dare to be negligent, focused and prepared to fight.

But a sonorous golden drum suddenly resounded, from far to near, out of nowhere boomed, the seven-coloured radiant lights from the ancient sword leapt up, directly entered into the sword formation, immediately the extraordinary lights in the sky flashed, the swords laid horizontally, instantly again formed seven huge single-coloured sword formations, like before, facing that transformed monster.

From the Beast Deity’s mouth it issued a low deep growl, black gas circulated on the surface of its huge body, like ink, hundreds of strange arms either opened or closed, facing the imminent storm.

Reverend DaoXuan with a long whistle, like a mountain eagle charging up to the sky, straight up to the clouds, where the sound reaches, white light

exploded, Zhu Xian swayed, the enormous sword formation moved with a rumble, the single-coloured swords slowly turned over, aimed at the Beast Deity.

After a moment, the sky which had been quiet for a long time, again [suo] a piercing sound rang out, closely following it, blotting out the sky and covering the earth, was all sharp piercing sounds, numerous Zhu Xian swords streaked past the horizon incessantly, carrying immense malevolent energy and murderous intention, charging towards the Beast Deity, in a twinkling of an eye, the first wave of purple sword formation had already rushed to the front.

The Beast Deity huge body, looked to be this innumerable swords' live target soon, however, when the numerous Qing Yun Hill Good Faction disciples were about to rejoice, the hundreds strange long arms on the Beast Deity's body, flew and danced, every arm gathered thick black gas, looking almost like a huge black cloud, rose to meet the sky.

In an instant, hundreds of swords stabbed down and the Beast Deity's hundreds of strange hands were like apparitions, swiftly danced in the air, facing those almost indestructible swords, those black hands were not the least afraid, in a moment, the first wave of purple swords were either caught or hit, either wrapped around or removed, all of the swords were received. In the black gas, those swords soon lost their color and quickly dissipated away.

The countless people were dumbfounded, for thousands of years, this was the first person that could face and fight the Zhu Xian sword formation!

Just that, in the constantly changing situation, it did not allow one to have the time to think about these extra stuffs, like the long river angry waves, billows turbulent, the huge colourful main sword continued to produce countless of small swords, and even more under the Zhu Xian sword and Reverend

DaoXuan's manipulation, turned into an infinite sword rain and rained down, every sword carrying the Zhu Xian murderous energy, wave after wave, like thunder rumbling, like lightning flashing, pouncing towards the Beast Deity.

The Beast Deity roared incessantly to the sky, the deafening sound reverberated in the clouds, right now he was like facing the Heaven's celestial spirits, fighting against the sky. The strange hundreds arms, wielded in the clouds, the black gas surging, layers of layers, responding to the sharp cries that filled up the sky!

One wave, and another, the hundreds thousands swords were like endless, pouring down, but looking at the Beast Deity's huge body, it seemed to be a transformed devil, never a moment of tiredness, these two figures whom were both at the peak of their cultivation, fought wildly at this Qing Yun Hill.

Just that, there was after all a limit to human strength...

A wave, and another wave!

Until the forty-ninth wave of swords poured down, the seven colors sword formations had completed seven turns. Standing at the summit of the storm, Reverend DaoXuan was pale, even his right hand which was holding the ancient sword Zhu Xian, wrapped by the white light, indistinctly started to tremble.

And ahead, the Beast Deity looked even more sorry, after going through this wild storm of sword formation-like baptism, the original majestic hundreds over strange arms, more than half had already been destroyed, and the initial thick black gas, looked to have thin down much. Just that when he received the last wave of swords, his savage look turned more hideous, he did not lose morale but instead became even more high-spirited, a sound of hoarse weird laughter,

like an evil ghost growl, broke out.

At the moment, the crowd was silent, everyone had turned pale, that soul-shocking, culmination of the fights, stunned everyone and made one unable to contain oneself, just that one never imagined, that unparalleled Zhu Xian sword formation, still could not subdue this exceptional evil beast, could it be, that this catastrophe was really inevitable?

The Beast Deity laughed to the sky, his huge body inconceivably leapt up, pounced towards Reverend DaoXuan, suddenly, between Heaven and on Earth, cries of alarm. Only Reverend DaoXuan, was shocked but calm, took a deep breath, a soft shout, the Water Kirin below him immediately moved back.

Unexpectedly, although the Beast Deity's body was colossal but its speed was as fast as lightning, in a blink of an eye it had already pounced ahead, instantly black gas surged, not knowing how many huge arms grabbed over.

At this critical juncture, Reverend DaoXuan's Zhu Xian ancient sword abruptly hung upside-down, a face which was pale immediately flushed red but turned pale again, repeated swiftly three times like that, the ancient sword Zhu Xian exploded with light, like a long whale water sucking in water, instantly sucked all of the swords in the sky, horizontal before Reverend DaoXuan, condensed into a colourful sword wall.

The Beast Deity's countenance changed but it was too late to retreat, [pu pu pu], [ge ka ka] loud sounds were heard in the firmament, in that moment the black gas scattered, not knowing how many strange hands were annihilated.

Reverend DaoXuan was seen turning danger to safety and at the same time also wounded the Beast Deity heavily, Qing Yun Hill countless of disciples'

moods changed from greatly shocked to overjoy, cheering and jumping for joy. Unexpectedly before their cheers stopped, on that brilliant sword wall which annihilated numerous strange arms and black gas but just that the thickest and sturdiest black arm, where the black gas was especially thick and heavy, forced its way through and with one palm, hit onto Reverend DaoXuan's chest.

Reverend DaoXuan, like being hit with lightning, his body shook, together with the Water Kirin howling to the sky, one man and one beast flew backwards heavily, until a distance of several zhangs, they then stopped. And the people at the foot of the mountain clearly saw, this push, Reverend DaoXuan's dark-green robe immediately tore into pieces, bright red blood spurted out from his mouth, drops and bits, seemed to land onto the ancient sword, dotted dark red lights among the white light, and then gradually disappear.

Below Heaven and Earth, immediately a deathly silence.

The Zhu Xian sword formation in the horizon, seemed to be also affected, a wave of shakes and sways, the sky full of swords shook ceaselessly but eventually became still. It could be that because the true way suffered damage, the initial overwhelming Zhu Xian sword formation, right now its boundary was reduced to more than half of its original size.

An ominous premonition, seemed to envelope everyone's heart.

Wiping away the blood stains on his lips, Reverend DaoXuan looked at his palm, blood stains flowed onto his hand. He watched for a long time and then slowly looked ahead, right now the sword energy, dark clouds had all completely dissipated, the Beast Deity in front of him was watching him like a tiger eyeing its prey, but looking at him, although the Beast Deity had injured him but he himself was no better.

The arms which were reduced to less than half of its original number, in a blink had again suffered heavy losses and annihilated half by the Zhu Xian sword, looking at it now, only several were left but those remnants, were the most powerful ones, completely different from the other arms. And the Beast Deity itself, his face which was shrouded in black gas, right now seemed to be slightly pale but the battle mood on his face, like the most ferocious beast, turned stronger in defeat, did not have the slightest intention to give up.

The corner of Reverend DaoXuan's mouth twitched, seemed to be smiling bitterly, but this slight action, seemed to also affect his injury, his body swayed a few times, causing the crowd below to cry out. But fortunately he only swayed a few times and then stood firm, however right now his vulnerability, was evident.

The Beast Deity ahead of him, sneered with [ka ka] sounds, in a deep low voice said, "How is it, ignorant humans like you all, even though with such supreme celestial object, it is still an outcome like this, before it is too late, you better kill yourself!"

Reverend DaoXuan silently looked up, facing the firmament, the Zhu Xian ancient sword's light reflected his face, suddenly there was a different demeanour.

"Qing Yun sect ancestors..." Reverend DaoXuan suddenly spoke, but the words, the intonation was deep and slightly with pain, "disciple DaoXuan is unworthy, unable to subdue the evil demon, implicating the common people, the catastrophe is imminent. For the survival of the common people, disciple has no choice but to violate the prohibition, hope that ancestors will still bless, eliminate the evil and subdue the devil, even though disciple will be consigned to eternal damnation, disciple is also willing to bear."

His voice was light, not many could hear it, everyone saw him mumbling, his expression seemed to be grieved, the crowd was perplexed, not knowing what Reverend DaoXuan was doing. Just that a moment later, suddenly in the mid-air, Reverend DaoXuan glared, sternly and imposing, his left hand sword gesture suddenly led, straight towards that Zhu Xian ancient sword in front of his chest.

White light shone, suddenly red beam flashed, Reverend DaoXuan's left hand was seen entering into the white light, when it emerged again blood was spilled but his face, although looked pale but there was not a trace of pain, his left hand with a quick stroke, in the air with fast speed drew out a strange picture, and the blood dripping from his fingers did not drop down, instead accompanying his hand's movements, coagulated in mid-air, materializing to life.

A red, blood TaiJi picture!

Dark red blood, started to swiftly flow on the diagram, becoming brighter and brighter, like a red jade, and the TaiJi diagram itself also began to rotate with speed. Reverend DaoXuan looked more and more pale, at the same time that Zhu Xian sword shrouded in white light in his hand started to tremble, as if this celestial sword within this hilt, seemed to be disturbed by something, desiring something!

That TaiJi diagram turned faster and faster, slowly rose, arrived at three chi before Reverend DaoXuan, Reverend DaoXuan right now looked extremely pale, as if his entire body's vitality was being sucked into the diagram but he still used the last bit of strength, held the ancient sword up, suddenly stabbed with force, penetrated this bloody TaiJi diagram, at the same time, he shouted with a loud shout -- "Heaven! ... Secret! ... Seal! ..."

Each time he shouted a word, the Heaven and Earth in the reverberation, in the windless clear sky, a shock of thunder impressively accompanied it, earth-shakingly, a wave of imposing great force, descended from the sky, formless yet with substance, penetrating from the top in. Where the violent wind began, on his body, [pong, pong, pong] like explosions, with his three loud shouts, his clothes instantly burst opened, turned into ashes.

And under his feet, on the vast great land, the expansive Qing Yun mountain ranges rumbled loudly, the earth started to tremble, the seven peaks of Qing Yun mountains towering into the clouds, without exception, TongTian, Long Shou,

Morning Sun

,

Sunset

, Return of the Wind, Big Bamboo, Small Bamboo seven summits, green mountains deep valleys, within the majestic huge rocks, golden lights spilled out, turning brighter and brighter, gradually converged and formed, the golden light resplendent, as if shooting out deep from the mountains spiritual summits, as if these mountains originally were alive, in this resplendent golden light, the huge mountains started to breathe.

And in this swaggering dazzling golden light, finally gathered and formed seven different golden huge diagrams, on this great earth mountain peaks, facing in the far away horizon that ancient sword Zhu Xian.

Splendor horizon!

Glorious magnificent!

Even the Beast Deity was also dumbstruck!

Zhu Xian ancient sword started to shake even more violently, and that Taiji diagram which was formed from blood was already spinning to a blur.

Golden green flashed on Reverend DaoXuan's face, burst out in a loud shout.

"Break!"

A word "Break" shouted, instantly the entire sky of swords shook intensely, the vast horizon, darkened completely, violent winds stones rolled, the mountains shook earth quaked, strange rocks started to fall, the solemn broad seven summits golden diagrams, as if being tore apart by some great force, started to slowly scattered.

And almost at the same time, the light on the ancient sword Zhu Xian became more and more intense, the white light dazzling, and even shrouded Reverend DaoXuan in it. And at this earth-shaking overwhelming scene, the seven colours that had rose from the seven mountain peaks, suddenly disappeared. At the same time, the sky full of swords also all gradually faded, leaving only that seven-coloured main sword in the formation, turning even more resplendent.

[Rumble!]

Sound of thunder, resounded throughout Heaven and Earth, the earth quaked even harder, those golden lights on the seven peaks had reached their final moment, finally totally dissipated.

Rumblings, like the sea tide surged and reverberated in the sky, and below on the earth, instead turned silent, no longer quaking, no longer splitting. After which, almost at the same time, different coloured lights more than ten times intense than before, rose with a rumble, charged up to the sky and re-gathered onto the ancient sword Zhu Xian.

Blazing brilliance instantly like explosion lit up Heaven and Earth, shot forth in all directions, unimaginable light enveloped the whole world, on the ancient Zhu Xian sword formation, leaving only that huge colourful main sword, but at this moment, from the ancient sword Zhu Xian reflecting rays of extensive huge lights, little by little, in the ten thousands people's dumbstruck gazes, that colorful Zhu Xian main sword, from radiant splendor flowing lights, gradually integrated, gradually became a single color, giant sword blazing with white light, its resplendent ten thousands zhang, illuminating the world.

In that instant, countless of people came out of their shock, watching the incredulous scene in the sky, everyone drunk in the sight, wild cheers undulating, filled up the Qing Yun Hill.

Everyone came back suddenly from despair, in a blink seemed to be filled with confidence, that in this world evil still does not suppress the good, completely disregarding that it was still not the end of the battle, victory was still unknown.

Just that, in this wild crowd, everyone looking up at the sky, no one will notice that in the mad chaos, there was a white figure, quietly leaving the crowd, swiftly heading to the rear mountain.

The wind brushing past the cheek, a hint of chill but how could it cover, that ball of burning blazing fire deep inside the heart?

Lu XueQi's snow-white face, indistinctly had a faint flush, tightly biting her lips, deep inside a pair of eyes, had already arrived deep inside that remote rear mountain!

At the fringe of the sky, the chaotic situation was still pressing!

But who else was still concern?

Indistinct ancient song, quiet language of the heart, following that fluttering white clothes, gone far with the wind, galloping towards that unknown distant place.

，，

Chapter 174 - Zhu Xian

Compared against the phenomenal great battle at the front of the mountain, this fight was very much different, the fight between Ghost Li and Lin JingYu these two childhood good friends, the scale was much smaller than the former but the intensity level seemed to surpass instead.

Nobody could ever imagine that! Once as close like brothers, in the end it turned out like this, the two figures at one moment separated, at another moment clashed, like a wild storm engulfing the surrounding areas of the Illusory Moon Cave, the trees were either struck down, uprooted or split into half, even the thick and solid great earth, by these two extremely fierce powers, became bumpy and rough, deep pits and broken stones everywhere.

If it was just comparing their cultivation and power levels, Ghost Li had different sects' true ways and also practised three volumes of Evil Sect classic <Tian Shu>, his skills level, actually definitely could not be used to compare against an ordinary martial artist, his skills could be said as one of the world's elite figures, even for Lin JingYu this kind of talent, he was not as good.

But at the moment the fight between the two of them, for some reason, it turned out to be quite well matched. If to compare their emotions, there were actually only two reasons, first would be that Lin JingYu was inherently hot-blooded, for the past decade he had been following that mysterious elder in the Founders Ancestral Hall to practise, what he learnt was a strong and fierce martial art which happened to stimulate his own potential, complementing his nature and the Dragon Slayer Sword's force of no return, the battle strength and force instead were actually higher level than his own skill level. And right now he was full of anger, each sword stroke fatal, almost like that hundred

years ago legendary Wan JianYi, an impossible force.

And Ghost Li although his skills level was high, a solid foundation but it had a weak spot, which had been limiting him. At that time when he was practising both Qing Yun sect Taoism 'Tai Ji Xuan Qing Way' true way and Tian Yin Temple Buddhist sect 'Great Brahman Wisdom', each contradicting each other, causing his progress to proceed slowly and although later on he was fortunate to learn the general principles of Tian Shu and linked up the two remarkable true ways, greatly increasing his cultivation level but in his body, his foundation truth had already been changed to Evil Sect classic's <Tian Shu> strange arts.

Just that the <Tian Shu> skills were really enigmatic and profound, furthermore there was a con to it, although the general principles were all there but the cultivation truths in the book, were not complete within three volumes, at every critical junctures of training, there would be breaks, like as if one walks on a highway, going to and fro the great Tao (translator note: it could also mean main road), suddenly a precipice cut off before you, unable to proceed ahead, wishing to walk the other way but there was simply no way to go. So as such these various obstacles were really not little, these few years the Sinister Orb's vicious currents backlash, Ghost Li was helpless against it, mostly likely was because of this. As such for Ghost Li's cultivation, it could not be totally unleashed.

But even though it was so, Ghost Li with his number of true ways, how would it be trivial, <Tian Shu> art although was incomplete but it was after all an enigmatic skill since the creation of Heaven and Earth, the different ingenuity were not what an ordinary person could imagine.

The two of them fought for a long time and eventually it was still Ghost Li who gradually gained the upper hand, the Sinister Orb's red rays and blood stench, like a venomous snake spitting, gradually suppressing the Dragon Slayer Sword's jade-light.

Lin JingYu was shocked and angry, although for the past ten years Ghost Li betrayed Qing Yun and joined the Evil Sect, becoming a foe with the Good Faction but he had never fought directly with Qing Yun. And Lin JingYu had always been practising in the Founders Ancestral Hall so although both of them had seen each other once in southwest Death Marsh but it could be said that they had never fought each other before. And in Lin JingYu's heart, Ghost Li's image was actually most probably still that simple and slow Zhang Xiao Fan.

From young till adult, from the GrassTemple Village to Qing Yun Hill, Lin JingYu was always stronger than Zhang Xiao Fan in every aspect, although in his heart he had always regarded Zhang Xiao Fan as his own brother but unwittingly, with his proud character since young, in many matters he still disdained Zhang Xiao Fan. And for many years, things were what he had imagined, Zhang Xiao Fan was not as clever as him, not as good-looking as him, coming up to Qing Yun Hill, many of the seniors also fought to take him as disciple and yet nobody paid attention to Zhang Xiao Fan. And in the later days, both of them trained separately, he went on to Long Shou Valley and Zhang Xiao Fan to Big Bamboo Valley, his cultivation skills even fared worse than him.

These various situations, all clearly revealed that Zhang Xiao Fan was really incomparable to him, just that after Qing Yun Hill seven branches contest, Zhang Xiao Fan for some reason had some good luck, could actually squeeze into the top four, and he himself at that time was matched against senior brother QiHao and was defeated, although he felt somehow depressed but assuming that the crowd also knew the reason for that, Lin JingYu's opinions did not change much. All along, he viewed Zhang Xiao Fan like his brother, when Zhang Xiao Fan was being bullied, he sternly came forward, as if he was looking after his good-for-nothing brother.

Until the breakup today, fighting till life and death, Lin JingYu shockingly discovered, this person whom he had always regarded as someone below him, unknowingly seemed like he had already surpassed himself.

An inexplicable fury abruptly burned from his heart, Lin JingYu's dashing face, suddenly looked somehow savage. He with his proud character, the only drawback was that he loved to go to the extremes, at that moment, he could not accept the fact.

The jade-green light shone, like an arrogant dragon roaring wildly, countered-back in fury.

In the intense fight, the purple gas column that both of them were circulating around, as a result from the Heaven Secret Seal being broken, was several times thicker than before, the roaring purple gas, had already enveloped both of them. Lin JingYu was in an inferior position yet suddenly retaliating, his strokes striking over like toppling the mountains and overturning the seas. Ghost Li was shocked, watched as Lin JingYu approaching with his sword, each sword stance swift, although the force was powerful but he disregarded his own safety, attacking with all of his might.

Ghost Li frowning tightly, right now they had been fighting for quite a while, or maybe because this was Qing Yun sacred ground and furthermore with the purple gas column triggered by Zhu Xian ancient sword, in the beginning, the vicious currents aroused in Ghost Li's heart, it not only did not control his mind as before, instead it allowed his body's pure power to take over, gradually reducing, Ghost Li's head slowly regained clarity.

Just that above their heads in the sky, was that Zhu Xian sword formation, for ten years not a single night or day he did not think about this, it was really carved in bones and engraved in the heart, BiYao's image moreover did not stop appearing before him, mentally draining and heart breaking. And this person before him, after he became clear-headed, Ghost Li recalled the years of friendship and right now his anger, most likely was also triggered by him,

recalling that old man from the Founders Ancestral Hall, Ghost Li felt some guilt, as such, gradually did not have the mood to fight.

Heaving a long sigh, with his perturbed mind, Ghost Li did not have the mood to continue the fight, only felt that right now this place, was really an unbearable agony, and wished to leave, his heart also had a suffering thought, couldn't wait to return to Majestic Fox Mountain immediately, looked at BiYao and to tell her all of it.

And this moment, Lin JingYu before him had already a sword out of the thin air, approaching with a sharp whistling, the jade-ray like lightning, broke out of the long sky. Ghost Li's face was heavy, he stepped three steps back, the Soul-devouring stick struck down from the top, hit upon the Dragon Slayer Sword blade.

Lin JingYu's body shook greatly, felt a strange incomparable stench of blood evil current travelling over from that firestick-like black stick, at the same time there was a strange sucking power, stimulating his body blood, about to gush outwards, almost uncontrollable.

Lin JingYu turned pale, knew most likely it was that evil sinister magical weapon in Ghost Li's hand but his nature was upright and unyielding, he was not only unafraid, did not retreat and instead advance, Dragon Slayer Sword like a dragon swimming under the sword, rebounded up, disregarding his open chest, heading straight and attacking Ghost Li in the face.

Ghost Li's eyes flashed, at that moment if he were to make a move, although he himself could not avoid being heavily injured but had ninety percent confidence of fatally hitting Lin JingYu, just that looking at this familiar face, Ghost Li's mind suddenly flashed with the image of both of them playing at that time, and then, BiYao's smile.

In this world, how many are there that I still cherished, still left in this world?

As if laughing at himself, he laughed bitterly and asked himself, taking back the Soul-Devouring evil stick, at this imminent peril crisis, leapt up into the air, avoided it. Just that his bitter smile was caught by Lin JingYu, like ridiculing him, infuriating him even more.

And at this moment, Ghost Li who was in the air suddenly was shocked, looked far away, saw a white figure, swiftly like lightning floated over, until the person saw clearly the situation scene, like receiving a shock, on the absolutely beautiful face, it revealed a mix of pleasant surprise, indistinct grief and joy expressions, even her voice, seemed to be trembling.

“You...it’s really you...”

It was Lu XueQi.

On her snow-white face, unknowingly since when, for the first time in her life, two teardrops quietly rolled down.

That man, looked at her stunned, slowly landed from the air, that familiar face, for how many years that longing which etched in the memory?

In the beginning believing he was really dead, what kind of grief and anguish? If it was not for there was still outsider around, she practically wanted to fall into his arms and have a good cry.

Who is willing to be lonely for a lifetime?

Who is willing to spend the days alone?

If it wasn't because the feelings had turned so deep and uncontrollable, how would it be that clearly concerned but appeared to be cold like frost!

Ghost Li also felt stunned, opened his mouth and looked like he wanted to speak but was unable to say any words. Unexpectedly at this moment, Lin JingYu behind him did not stop, the Dragon Slayer Sword like wind like fire, shouted loudly, still sweeping over.

Ghost Li suddenly with a rude awakening, flipped to receive the enemy, he had already lost the key moment, the jade-green dazzling light, about to reach him, Ghost Li's evil currents on his face surged, the Sinister Orb in that instant turned red.

And at this imminent peril moment, suddenly, the once not long ago memories, faintly awakened again.

A fair hand, stretched out from beside, grabbed hold of Ghost Li's hand.

Ghost Li's body had a shock, suddenly, his body seemed to lose all energy, an emotional feeling from the depths about to burst forth gushed up his heart, a [weng weng] sound resounded deep inside his head, suddenly turned back, a cry of "BiYao" about to call out.

Just that he stopped in shock, blocking before him, white clothes floating, it was Lu XueQi.

[Qiang lang...]

Like the phoenix cry beyond the highest heavens, clear and melodious, pleasing to the ear, TianYa celestial sword like autumn waters flowing, unsheathed, a sword of irresistible force of Dragon Slayer Sword blocked off, Lu XueQi blocked before Ghost Li.

That delicate, pretty face, full of tenderness, how would it be bothered, all of the things in the world?

Lin JingYu angrily hollered, “Lu junior sister, are you crazy?”

Lu XueQi’s body shook, like waking up from a dream, then, she quietly turned, looked at Ghost Li, her eyes misted yet gentle and beautiful, smiled gently, she slowly let go of Ghost Li’s hand.

“Mad ah...” Lu XueQi smiled faintly, her eyes seemed to contain only Ghost Li, quietly said, “A long time ago, most probably I have already turned crazy!”

Ghost Li was silent, the vicious currents on his face dispersed, leaving only anguish flashed past his face, quietly bowed his head.

Lin JingYu was stunned, in the scene, turned quiet for the moment.

And at this moment, suddenly above the sky, a deafening loud crash was heard, the mountains immediately quaked violently, with their level of skills, they could not stand firm too.

The three of them were shocked, looked up at the sky, saw in the blue sky, that unequalled catastrophe, finally had reached the final moment.

X

x

x

The blazing white light, dazzling, nobody could ever see clearly that human figure in that ball of light. People could only see, the dazzling light in the sky illuminated the entire firmament, even the rising sun at the sky fringe also paled in comparison.

In the entire horizon, the Zhu Xian sword formation meteorological phenomena, right now only the main sword remained but the power contained within it, surpassed the entire sky of swords. The blazing white light which continued to intensify from Reverend DaoXuan's mass of radiance, shot out to the main sword, the entire sword's colour changed from seven colours to a single colour, from single white to pure white, its brilliance stretched for ten thousands zhang, like a wild sword about to pierce the sky.

In the violent winds, the Beast Deity hovered above the clouds, watching that celestial sword which should not appear in the mortal world, his savage face had a trace of vacant.

Before the ten thousands people' anticipated gazes, in the ten thousands wild-like joyous cheers, the huge blazing sword, slowly stirred, turned around, facing the Beast Deity. Just that movement, the surrounding black gas around the Beast Deity was forced to retreat several zhang by this natural foe-like white light.

Deep inside the white light, someone seemed to pant heavily, the voice hoarse, like a wild beast deep growl, a trapped beast roar.

The Beast Deity stared intently at that sword and mass of white light, after a long time, suddenly laughed out loudly, his voice was terrible and hoarse to begin with, right now laughing at the top of his voice, it was even more grating, the audience not one did not cast sidelong glances.

The Beast Deity only laughed loudly, his demeanour wild, as if in his heart, there was a world's most ridiculous thing, but eventually he only laughed wildly, did not say a word.

In the horizon, the violent winds turned more and more intense and cold, Zhu Xian celestial sword's force became stronger and stronger, unknowingly since when, as if some voice from the Heaven and Hades travelled over, softly chanting a mysterious incantation, started to reverberate between Heaven and Earth.

That mass of blazing white light, suddenly rose into the air, landed on that resplendent Zhu Xian main sword hilt, almost at the same time, Zhu Xian sword formation suddenly activated, like a force that could break the Heaven, that sword attacked over with a scream, it seemed to be slow but in the Heavens and below the earth, there was not one place that could avoid it.

Encounter deity kill deity, encounter immortal kill immortal!

(translator note: kill immortal also means Zhu Xian)

In the current world, there was no longer any object that had such power.

The strong winds scattered the last of the clouds, all completely dispersed, nobody would know, right now facing this Zhu Xian wild sword that Beast Deity's heart, what exactly he was thinking?

Just that, he did not show the slightest fear and not even the slightest intention to retreat, welcoming the wind, welcoming the light, the enormous Beast Deity's body leapt up with gusto and actually headed straight towards Zhu Xian.

Heaven and Earth seemed to be still, the chaotic state seemed to stop breathing, everyone stared in shock at the clear sky, black and white the two colours traversed the sky, collided with a crash!

Nobody could describe the situation at that time, the sky collapsed, the earth splitted, Qing Yun Hill mountains in one day quaked thrice, this time was the strongest, the enormous mountain summit precipice, surfaced numerous cracks and gaps, numerous huge stones rolled from the mountains and dropped down. In the Jade Pool on TongTian Peak, water waves rose and rolled, the original calm water surface incessantly surged up few zhang high of water columns into the air.

And on the Qing Yun Hill top, the Good Faction members and the remaining beast demons, all were as silent as a cicada in cold weather, especially those demon beasts which were like beasts but not like beasts, right now were all in great shock, restless, madly roaring.

However, all of these comparing to the scene in the sky, seemed nothing, and nobody would care too.

The huge Zhu Xian sword traversed the horizon, struck down with a rumble. Where it passed by, sharp hissing sounds were heard in the sky, all of the things along the way, completely annihilated, leaving not a single trace. In the periphery of the wild sword blade, along the outside of the white light, dark red colour presented, not knowing if it's the intense air friction, or this blade itself was too intense.

That sword struck down with a rumble, the Beast Deity howled long to the sky, all of his arms joined before his chest, his strange eyes glared widely, at that moment where Zhu Xian sword struck down, the black gas multiplied, the strange hands stretched and withdrew, a shock of thunder rumbled in the horizon, he had forcibly catch hold of this celestial sword which seemed to be able to split the Heaven.

In that instant, in the Heaven and below on Earth, were all struck dumb with astonishment.

However, white light leapt up, illuminated ten thousands zhang, the huge Zhu Xian main sword emitted thunder rumbles, from the black hands like iron hoop, forcefully, slowly stabbed down.

One inch, one inch, and another inch.

The black hands one by one, gradually swallowed by the blazing light and dissipated. That wild sword now looked like, a supreme ferocious deity, brandishing its claws, taking lives, carrying infinite murderous intention, bit by bit stabbed down towards the Beast Deity's chest.

The black gas flickered, sharp whistles charging to the sky, black blood fluid sprayed out, the Zhu Xian sword finally stabbed into the Beast Deity's chest,

and inching in, the blazing white light flickered intensely, like lightning flickering across the sky, hitting upon the Beast Deity's skin.

Skin and flesh, slowly faded, the huge body, seemed to begin to appear illusory, almost turning into a void by this earthshaking force. The light in Beast Deity's eyes turned weaker and weaker, in the end it could not fight against this unparallel celestial sword.

His figure under the Zhu Xian sword, became smaller and smaller but for some reason, as if the collision depleted the forces, following the Beast Deity's body shrinking, the huge Zhu Xian sword also started to shrink, only that mass of brilliance, was still that bright and dazzling.

This situation continued on, until the Beast Deity finally again reduced to a normal human size, the black gas shrouded for a moment and dispersed with a rumble, the crowd clearly saw, he again changed back to that youth, just that his appearance was pale, his hair in a disorder, evidently the defeat was determined.

And more importantly, almost at the same time when the black gas dispersed, Zhu Xian sword also dissipated but that mass of light still congealed in front of the Beast Deity, flickering incessantly, finally gathered before the two of them, metamorphosed into that stone yet not like stone, jade yet not like jade Zhu Xian ancient sword, stuck in the Beast Deity's chest, horizontally piercing out.

Reverend DaoXuan's figure, slowly emerged from the light, just that he did not look like his initial celestial appearance, instead had turned cruel, his eyes were blood red.

The Beast Deity heavily panting, coughing unceasingly, his lips trembling

slightly, bended his head and looked at his chest.

The Zhu Xian sword was stabbed in his chest, blood flowing out, but it was not red.

He miserably laughed, heaved a long sigh, said,
“Remarkable...re..markable!...”

Suddenly, he had just finished his words, joining his hands together, right now his body had regained a normal human appearance, his arms were also like normal human, but this joining of hands, clasped the Zhu Xian ancient sword between his palms, immediately black gas gushed, directly flowed into the Zhu Xian ancient sword blade.

[Ka!]

A slight almost inaudible sound, was heard from the ancient sword, Reverend DaoXuan's countenance greatly changed, quickly glanced over, on the ancient sword, a line of crack clearly shown, horizontal on the sword.

Reverend DaoXuan was greatly shocked, loudly shouted, using all of his strength, pulled out the sword. Almost at the same time, the moment the sword left the Beast Deity's chest, as if a severe pain attacking his heart, the Beast Deity roared loudly, his voice desolate, his entire being flew up to the sky and backwards.

Reverend DaoXuan right now only felt the blood in his mind in a tumult like raging waves, a wave of murderous vicious currents tossed and turned like trying to break through his chest but he was after all had profound skills, knew

no matter what he could not let the tiger return to the mountain, furthermore he had forced the Heaven Secret Seal opened, the veins of the earth's spiritual energies were too vigorous, it had already overloaded Zhu Xian sword, and from that hit from the Beast Deity, it left a fissure.

When he forced himself to take a deep breath and was about to pursue, out of a sudden a wave of strong force abruptly came from the Zhu Xian sword, directly hit his head, in that instant broke his body several hundred years of cultivated energy channels and acupoints, a loud ringing sound rang out. For a moment, his body trembled, blood flowed from the seven apertures in his head, his body wavered and with a loud cry, the Zhu Xian sword in his hand loosened, fell from the clouds.

This shocking scene bewildered the people on the ground, all were struck dumb, out of a sudden they saw a big change, the Beast Deity escaped with heavy injuries, Reverend DaoXuan instead collapsed, everyone immediately was in a chaos.

For a moment, there were some who went to pursue the Beast Deity, there were some who rushed forward to save Reverend DaoXuan, and some younger disciples who came out from their shock, suddenly discovered there were still numerous demon beasts staring vacantly on TongTian Peak, immediately attacked over, and how would the demon beasts allowed themselves to be capture willingly, at that moment on TongTiang Peak summit, another tumult of attack shouts.

And in this pandemonium, suddenly someone exclaimed, the voice was anxious and frantic, as if he had seen the most frightening thing in his life, "Zhu Xian...Zhu Xian sword? Where did Zhu Xian sword landed?..."

In that instant, on TongTian Peak, again another pandemonium, numerous

people like headless flies, a scene of tumult.

X

x

x

The boundary at the back mountain.

The purple gas column in the Illusory Moon Cave slowly scattered, leaving only a little remnant of propitious vapours. That extraordinary scene in the sky just now, the three of them stared in shock.

Right now, they then regained their senses.

Lin JingYu inhaled deeply, calmed himself down, coldly spoke to Lu XueQi, “Lu junior sister, what is your meaning of this? Don’t tell me you also want to betray the sect?”

Lu XueQi was stunned, opened her mouth to speak but turned and looked at Zhang Xiao Fan, eventually did not say anything.

Ghost Li stared at her deeply, both of their eyes met, as if looking deep into each other hearts...

Ghost Li smiled, turned and faced Lin JingYu, once again stood in front of Lu XueQi.

Lu XueQi viewed that back figure from the back, the light in her eyes glimmered, complicated and unclear.

Lin JingYu sneered, about to make a move.

And at this moment, suddenly a sharp whistle was heard from the sky, whistling over.

The three of them were surprised, moved back, something descended from the sky, seemed slow but actually fast, [pu] a sound landed on the ground, the solid stone slabs like beancurd, was stabbed deeply in by it.

This was a long sword, the quality odd, like stone and not like stone, its appearance primitive, on that sword blade with a thin crack, clearly engraved with two words - Zhu Xian!

, , ,

Chapter 175 - Blood-sucking

Qing Yun Hill, TongTian Peak.

Before the Illusory Moon Cave, Ghost Li, Lu XueQi and Lin JingYu the three of them facing each other, it was actually a very delicate atmosphere, suddenly it seemed to freeze, all of their attention in that instant were all on that ancient sword stabbed into the ground.

Zhu Xian!

The renowned ancient sword, implicating numerous past events, the legendary sword that determined countless number of people's fates, right now quietly stuck into the ground, looked ordinary and unremarkable, seemed to be part of this landscape.

Only, that name carved onto the blade, was that glaring and overweeningly arrogant, although silent but obstinate, sternly watching the people around it, causing the onlookers, unable to breathe normally.

For an unknown length of time, like waking up from an inconceivable shock, the three of them at the same time let out a long breath but almost at the same time, the atmosphere had quietly changed.

Lin JingYu instinctively moved and wanted to dash ahead but after he glanced at the two people beside him, he instead frowned and slowly stood firm.

Lu XueQi initially looked shocked and then a bright glint seemed to flash past her eyes, facing this ancient sword which had supreme position in Qing Yun and even in the world, she was also frowning slightly. Following which, she subconsciously glanced at Ghost Li beside her, watching his expression, she quietly, pulled a distance from Ghost Li.

Ghost Li was silent, looked expressionless but in his eyes, a fire seemed to be blazing.

That sword, the ancient sword which had been his nightmare day and night for the past ten years, suddenly was before him, the primitive blade glimmered with faint light in the wild mountains breeze, reflecting in his eyes, it seemed like, stabbing into his chest.

That, slowly falling down from the sky graceful and lifeless green body image ah...

“Ah!...”

A roar which seemed to burst forth from his chest, tearing apart his lungs, charging towards the Zhu Xian ancient sword, dark-green light flashed, the Soul-devouring ahead of him moving swiftly, as if resounding with his master’s emotions.

Just that abruptly, bluish green sword ray cut in from the side, Lin JingYu holding the Dragon Slayer Sword, had already blocked in front of him, boiling with rage the jade-green sword forcefully blocked the screaming dark-green black energy.

A muffled sound, the two magical weapons had already clashed in the mid-air, Lin JingYu wanted to shout but abruptly felt even though it was broad daylight but that weapon which accompanied Ghost Li, suddenly the world dimmed, ghost wails besieged him with a loud sound, his body felt like he was being inextricably tied up with a large silk rope, and before him, many different frightening illusions that looked like they were from the nine netherworlds.

And Ghost Li before him, his eyes had already turned red again, full of murderous intention, his body appearing even more like a ghost.

Lin JingYu glared and shouted loudly, in the black energy the bluish-green light rose suddenly, broke through from above and leapt up, almost at the same time, Ghost Li's figure had in a blink reached where he was, the black energy dispersed with a rumble like the wings of a demon, spinned and gathered again like a ghost hand, shrouding Ghost Li in it, like an angry tide rolling from all directions, heading for that Zhu Xian ancient sword.

Lin JingYu was forced back from the air, couldn't defend in time, panicked and was about to shout in fury, suddenly before the ancient sword, deep inside the black energy, a ray as bright as autumn waters, like frost snow bursting into bloom, voiceless yet a clash, reverberating far off, in the black energy, bloomed like flower, a sword stabbed out.

TianYa!

That frost-like snow-like white light, streaked through the sky, where it brushed past, the black energy slumped and scattered, directly attacking towards the recesses of the darkness ahead, blocked its path.

Lu XueQi appeared and blocked before the Zhu Xian sword, her face

expressionless, a clear and beautiful face, her face was instead pale and looked without any color.

Deep inside the black energy, two spots like ghost fire stared at Lu XueQi, the ghost wails chilling, wild with anger and irrepressible.

There seemed to be something, ahead, like a wild beast panting and roaring, that unfamiliar?

The black energy exploded, from the ground it suddenly reached several zhang high up in the air, and within the black energy, that two spots of ferocious ghost fires also disappeared. Lu XueQi's lips slightly moved, her face pale and expressionless, only that glint in her eyes flickered unceasingly, ten thousand torrents and a thousand crags seemed to pass by in that instant, countless emotions, at that instant rushed to her heart.

Just that, the TianYa in her hand, still refused to give up, that ancient sword behind, suddenly seemed to turn into a ten thousand zhang abyss, making her unable to retreat not even a fraction!

An ancient sword, or maybe a silent and ancient, sect that raised her?

She raised her sword to the sky, quietly stabbed, that sword light like snow, yet carried a trace of desolation.

The black energy ghastly, the wailings abruptly rose, in the air, the direction where TianYa stabbed towards, a black figure emerged suddenly, Ghost Li appeared out from the dark energy recesses, but before him, the Soul-devouring flew up, instantly, the black energy that covered the sky filled the air

and descended, the entirely black Soul-devouring stick screamed unceasingly, at the tip of it the blood-red thin lines, had all totally lighted up.

A pale hand, stretched out from the air, grabbed hold of the stick, coming down from the sky, wind and smoke immediately turned wild, unlimited dark gas gathered at the top of the stick and formed a column, struck down from the sky.

Facing Lu XueQi, and also at her back, that silent ancient sword.

Just that, she in the end, still did not retreat...

The sword stances like snow, sprinkled towards the black gas, before it touched it, the surrounding stones and sand, were all swept up by a huge force, like a storm circulating and dancing. Lu XueQi stood in that vortex eye, her face slowly blurring.

TianYa and Soul-devouring, the two weapons flickering and dancing in the mid-air, seemed to be slightly quivering, as if that fight many years ago, again returned before them.

Just that the time available was always short-lived, like the emotions passing by in an instant, an intense crash, finally still reverberated through before Qing Yun Illusory Moon Cave.

The wind and smoke quietly dispersed, the dust and sand fell, and a few small rocks solitary spun on the ground, involuntarily gently rolled out, finally rolled into the grasses, disappeared from sight.

Lu XueQi was still standing at where she was, did not move at all from her original spot. Behind her, the Zhu Xian ancient sword seemed to still emit an ancient light, watching the back of that lady.

For some reason, this woman of unmatched beauty, right now her eyes and face, were that tired, as if that sword just now, had exhausted all of her heart and body strength.

She quietly bended down her head, her eyes indifferent, looking at some unknown spot. After a long time, she then slowly raised her head, looked ahead.

That man!

That man who was like a madman!

A man who was as silent as iron...

That same eyes, quietly watching her, there was no malevolent energy, no anger, and also no affection or warmth.

Lu XueQi suddenly for some reason trembled, that slight quiver, even she herself also felt she could have mistaken, just that what followed, the pain in her chest made her almost bend over, as if the world's sharpest needle, passed through from deep in her heart.

Her pale like snow face, suddenly turned red, her body wavered gently, at that instant when her brows tightened, when she was about to clench her teeth and bear it, suddenly she closed her eyes and bent over.

TianYa [si] a light sound, inverted and stabbed into the ground, Lu XueQi leaning on the sword, coughed out a small mouthful of blood, spraying it onto that autumn waters-like sword blade.

Blood, slowly congealed into beads, adhered to the smooth TianYa sword blade, gently quivered, then, quietly slid down.

A wind from nowhere blew, on the empty ground before the Illusory Moon Cave, swayed and passed by, the wind was still carrying a few light whistling sounds.

The black gas dispersed totally, Ghost Li still coldly standing there, the Soul-devouring flickering with dark-green light, fell from the sky, he stretched out his hand to catch.

And when Ghost Li turned and looked at Lu XueQi, Lin JingYu had already returned, in a flash stood beside Lu XueQi, blocked that ancient sword behind him.

Ghost Li coldly looked at Lin JingYu, and then at Lu XueQi, the two of them who were to him almost like the most important people in the world, in his eyes, were no different from strangers.

In the mortal world, a lifetime of time, but how many people, could accompany you till old, forever unchanged?

He gritted his teeth, grinned, smiled yet proud and aloof, heartless yet unyielding, energetically stepped forward. That sword, was just ahead, even if it

was a bottomless abyss, he would also dash to it! Ten years of time, ten years of heart breaking anguish, how could he give up at once?

Lin JingYu looked angry, the bluish green light in his Dragon Slayer Sword lighted up again, and at this moment, suddenly Lu XueQi stood upright, although her face looked even paler but her voice was still as clear and mesmerizing as that time.

“Stop right there!”

Ghost Li’s body paused, stopped his steps, then looked deeply at Lu XueQi, sternly said, “You make way!”

Lu XueQi had a desolate look, said, “Listen to me, go! Never come back again.”

Lin JingYu frowned, glanced at Lu XueQi, wanted to speak but halted.

Ghost Li after hearing it, did not get Lu XueQi’s intention, sneered and said, “Let me destroy Zhu Xian, I will leave immediately.”

Lu XueQi tiredly shook her head, quietly said, “I can’t let you do that, the forces at the front of the mountain will come over soon, you can still make it if you leave now.”

Ghost Li and Lin JingYu were stunned, listening carefully, as expected a faint hubbub could be heard indistinctly from afar, seemed like there was quite a number, arguing about something.

Actually thinking about it carefully, this was not surprising. what kind of celestial weapon was Zhu Xian ancient sword in Qing Yun sect, its importance incomparable, unable to find it after searching the entire battle scene at the front, naturally they would come to the rear to search. Not to mention the rear, even if it was to flip over the entire Qing yun mountains, for the Zhu Xian sword, most likely these disciples and grand disciples of Qing Yun sect would be willing.

Hearing that the hubbub seemed to be getting louder, and clearer, obviously the crowd was heading over to search. Ghost Li's face turned cold, suddenly with a sneer, he moved, disregarding everything, he headed towards them.

Lu XueQi looked grieved, but without waiting for her reaction, Lin JingYu had already leapt up, the Dragon Slayer Sword [wu] a sound like a split cloth, the sword stabbed over, the sword light glowed brightly, like a swimming dragon it brandished its teeth and danced, pouncing over to Ghost Li.

Ghost Li's face was cold, his body like an apparition, his left hand waved, the Soul-devouring stick again flew out but it completely disregarded the might of the Dragon Slayer Sword, directly hit towards Lin JingYu's head. Lin JingYu was taken aback, the style was strong and fierce, and was even more similar to Lin JingYu's usual style, unexpectedly Ghost Li used it against him. Facing this level of fierce offensive, Lin JingYu's inert eagerness to do well and arrogance, bit by bit, was inflamed, with a loud shout, he as expected, ignored the stick, the dragon slayer sword did not reduce its force and instead increased, looked like it was intending to bet against Ghost Li, see who's guts was bigger!

Both fought like a battle of life and death, Lu XueQi watched from beside, couldn't help but trembled, watching carefully, subconsciously her eyes had a trace of concern.

Just when the both of them looked like they were going to perish together, Ghost Li's body suddenly wavered on the spot and dispersed like black smoke, like an illusion. Lin JingYu couldn't stop in time, his sword continued to stab through the air, felt something greatly amiss, turned his head back in a panic, saw the black figure like apparition, appeared behind him and heading towards Lu XueQi.

This kind of power, naturally was not from Qing Yun sect, TianYin Temple, also not seen before in Evil Sect, it was after reading the third volume of [Tian Shu], gradually comprehended the strange skill from it, not seen by the world. Trying it today, he achieved success as expected, even Lin JingYu with his calibre was also tricked. Lu XueQi also couldn't help but looked bewildered.

Just that for some reason, Ghost Li who had demonstrated [Tian Shu] skill, his entire body was totally different from before, not as one expected to be full of eerie demonic black energy, dark-green, gold, red, scarlet, several energies took turns to surface, his face had an indistinct pain but his body was as swift as the wind, seemed to be on a higher level than before.

Lu XueQi was bewildered but faintly had some comprehension. Different from Lin JingYu, when they were at the celestial tree in the west great mash, in [Celestial Emperor Treasury], she and Ghost Li both saw that enigmatic [Tian Shu] third volume, with her level of natural aptitude, much higher than Ghost Li, had long already memorized [Tian Shu] in her heart.

[Tian Shu] although was strange and unfathomable but between the lines were all extraordinary esoteric truths, cultivators were naturally obsessed with it, if it was said that she did not put in effort to study it intensively, that would be a lie. Just that this kind of skill could not be told to outsiders, she did not tell anyone and besides, what she saw was only the third volume, the preceding

and subsequent portions missing, especially without [Tian Shu] first volume of general principles, it was even harder to grasp, obscure and unclear. These past years, just using her own aptitude intelligence, forced her way to understand it, more or less it helped her own training but it was not obvious, but it was also because of that, those elders in Qing Yun sect did not detect anything, if not with Reverend DaoXuan, Tian BuYi, ShuiYue Master etc their current cultivation levels, how would they not noticed the strange development in Lu XueQi's cultivation training.

Right now, Lu XueQi saw Ghost Li's strange skills, her brows frowning slightly, Ghost Li after tricking Lin JingYu, like a formless object it solidified from the black smoke, swiftly transformed into himself, without reducing speed, heading straight to Lu XueQi.

Lu XueQi clenched her teeth tight, suddenly moved three steps back sideways, revealing the Zhu Xian sword behind her, appearing before Ghost Li. This move shocked both Ghost Li and Lin JingYu, the difference was that delight was shown on Ghost Li's face, Lin JingYu instead angrily shouted, "Lu junior sister, what are you doing?"

Lu XueQi turned a deaf ear, a glint was seen in her eyes, she seemed to hesitate for a moment but eventually with a soft shout, TianYa sword facing the wind and thrust out but where the sword ray was pointing, was instead opposite of Ghost Li, three chi before the ancient sword.

[Pu!]

A light sound, TianYa sword seemed to draw a blank but for some reason, Lu XueQi's body shook, and at the tip of the sword, after a moment of silence, blood splattered, sprinkled into the air. And that Ghost Li who was heading swiftly towards the sword, emitted a [ya] sound, again transformed into black

smoke, scattered.

And at this shocking instant, where blood splattered like flower, Lu XueQi's pale face looked somehow distracted, a roar was heard, Ghost Li's figure suddenly flashed out in the air, TianYa sword was stabbed into his shoulder but he did not look to feel the pain at all, viciously pouncing over, the Sinister Orb at the tip of the stick was totally red, a blood-sucking evil energy overwhelming swept over, enveloping Lu XueQi in it.

Lu XueQi turned pale, felt all of her blood in that moment, like boiling water surged and tossed, almost bursting out of her body, a [weng weng] sound rang out in her head, the severe pain unbearable, her legs weakened, unable to sustain anymore, sat down.

Ghost Li with a long scream, the sound desolate, at that moment when the Sinister Orb flashed before Lu XueQi's beautiful face, forcibly twisted it back, at the same time his left hand waved, swept Lu XueQi out. The same time Lu XueQi flew out, TianYa sword also followed along, at that moment when the sword was pulled out, blood like fountain poured out from Ghost Li's shoulder. And Lu XueQi in the air, the Sinister Orb evil power was still raging, pounding and moving unceasingly, a severe pain in her chest, with a [wa] sound a mouthful of blood splattered out.

In the scene, Ghost Li landed, there was no other object in his eyes, only that ancient sword. Right now he was drenched in blood, half of his body was swiftly dyed red with blood but as if he did not feel it, he seemed to be gnashing his teeth, stared straight at Zhu Xian ancient sword.

The primitive Zhu Xian sword quietly stabbed in the ground before him, the not-stone-not-jade sword couldn't even reflect his face. Only that faint thin crack, seemed new.

Ghost Li laughed loudly to the sky, his demeanour like mad, ten years of time in that instant flashed past, without any more words, his left hand abruptly grabbed the sword hilt, right hand summoned the Soul-devouring stick grabbed tightly in his hand, hatefully facing the sword blade, struck towards that crack.

Lin JingYu bellowed from behind, rushed forward with all of his might but it was still too late, Lu XueQi had just descended, her mind still in a mess, far away, the hubbub suddenly became louder, as if discovering something, all swiftly rushed towards the Illusory Moon Cave.

Just that, in that moment of time, who could do anything?

Like, nobody could ever, detain a moment of time!

That Soul-devouring flickering with dark-green light came screaming down, its master right now with blood streaming down, following his left hand trickling down, drop by drop landed on Zhu Xian, flowing past that crude-looking Zhu Xian blade, slowly concealing it, not one seemed to land on the ground.

Indistinctly, in that instant, Ghost Li's heart moved, as if there was some strange yet familiar scene that touched his heart, like a lightning flashed past his mind.

The next moment, he suddenly realized.

It was blood!

In that instant at the corner of his eye, he saw his own blood, flowing on the Zhu Xian sword blade, especially towards that crack, it slowly disappeared, swiftly and soundlessly merging into the sword.

Zhu Xian! Zhu Xian! Zhu Xian!

Zhu Xian was actually like Sinister Orb, it could absorb living things' blood!

He was stunned and could not control himself but the Soul-devouring stick which was smashing down in his hand, had long surpassed the speed of thought in his mind, hit hard on that ancient sword!

,

Chapter 176 - Escape

The Zhu Xian ancient sword did not move, in that instant, as if everyone was holding their breath, but the scene was terribly quiet.

There was no sound, no loud rumbles, Ghost Li looked at that Soul-devouring evil stick which had smashed down was a force like a thousand jun, after hitting the ancient sword, it was like landing into cotton, there was no sound.

Angry bellows were heard, Lin JingYu's entire body leapt up, Qing Yun sect various elders appeared one by one, swift as the wind and quick as lightning they flew over but when they saw that that ancient sword was in Ghost Li's hands, immediately everyone's countenance changed. The next moment, more and more Qing Yun sect members gathered, in this chaotic scene, nobody kept to the original prohibitions, everyone trespassed this area which was supposed to be restricted.

Among them were Small Bamboo Valley WenMin and Big Bamboo Valley people, the moment they saw Ghost Li, their expressions changed greatly. WenMin and other Small Bamboo Valley female disciples saw Lu XueQi collapsed to the side, quickly rushed over and helped her up.

As if being disturbed by Qing Yun Sect people, something seemed to be activated, that ancient sword under the watchful eyes, although still in the hands of Ghost Li, but for some reason, on its blade, a change seemed to be happening.

The original simple and slightly crude, non-stone non-jade blade, on that

fissure, after Ghost Li's forceful hit, right now, it seemed to have expanded a little. Right now within that fissure, faint red light slowly emitted out, as if the blood which it had sucked in, became alive, deep within the blade, started to turn agitated slowly.

An initial peaceful great sea, waves started to form slowly, brewing unrivaled storm, enveloped the world!

Silence, silence... anyone could see the change in the Zhu Xian ancient sword but nobody knew what to do, silent before the Illusory Moon Cave, everyone held their breaths and waited.

Nobody knew, whose heart was quietly throbbing?

Ghost Li felt thirsty, subconsciously wanted to release Zhu Xian but the next moment, he discovered, his strength seemed to have completely disappeared instantly, a familiar yet distant feeling, reappeared in his body, and this feeling, was what his enemies feared.

The blood in Ghost Li's body slowly boiled and seethed, it started to have the pull of flowing outwards and the direction was towards the Zhu Xian ancient sword that he was clenching in his hand.

Ghost Li seemed to comprehend something, exerted strength to release Zhu Xian ancient sword but he had no strength in his hands, and the Zhu Xian ancient sword at the moment was like a demon awakened, clutching him, refused to let him go. And the Soul-devouring stick in his right hand, right now was also stuck tightly to the Zhu Xian ancient blade.

That fissure on Zhu Xian ancient sword, red light gradually from faint to dense, at the same time, like blood flowing through an artery, from that crack, thin faint colour of blood began to spread, from the fissure edges, it flowed swiftly towards both parts of the blade. The ancient blade slowly, submerged by the blood red colour.

Everyone was stunned, including those veteran elders. At the moment, everyone knew something was wrong but no one knew what had exactly happened and what should be done?

And that Zhu Xian ancient sword, seemed to simply ignore the people's concerns, continued to carry out its own degeneration, the faint blood colour, finally dyed the entire sword blade red, an originally primitive ancient sword, at the moment had become a strange and mysterious blood red sword. Faint red sword glint, slowly glimmering, like a reborn demon's eye, slowly waking up, watching the surrounding.

The scene seemed to tense up, until, that man holding Zhu Xian, suddenly unleashed a heart wrenching cry.

“Ah!...”

That sound was extremely desolate, the crowd was almost startled, their attention suddenly focused onto Ghost Li.

Ghost Li was pale, trembling unceasingly, his face, hands, the skin surface where it was not covered by clothing, began to obviously swiftly shrink and then gradually withered.

At the same time, a strange and light whistling sound started from the Zhu Xian ancient sword, the red light turned brighter, some sharp-eyed ones had already saw, from Ghost Li's left hand which was holding the ancient sword, faint red strands were being sucked into the sword blade.

This was an extremely strange scene, there wasn't a single bit of Qing Yun sect's just and honorable Good Faction demeanour, everyone at the scene was rendered speechless and no one moved.

Except Lu XueQi.

That woman was initially lying weakly in her senior sister WenMin's arms but right now for some reason, she suddenly struggled up, sprang towards Ghost Li and that Zhu Xian ancient sword. WenMin was shocked, quickly held her back, Lu XueQi struggled a few times, her body eventually fell helplessly down, her face looked anxious, opened her mouth and wanted to shout something but she looked around and shut her mouth in defeat, leaning in the arms of her senior sister WenMin who looked concerned, her eyes deep, she looked towards that man instead.

So, the twists and turns, the endless thoughts and pinnings, after the painful heartbreak, it was actually helplessly watching him before her eyes, dying that tragically?

Her face full of tears!

Finally couldn't be bothered, the stares of the others around her.

The red light on Zhu Xian ancient sword turned stronger and stronger, and

contrary to that, Ghost Li looked more and more terrible, now everyone could see that, under the Zhu Xian ancient sword 'divinity power', this evil spirit evil ways, the scourge of the Good Faction had already reached the death edge, perhaps, this was also the psychic power of the celestial sword, performing spells to eliminate the evil!

Many of them in their hearts, quietly thought so, but completely refused to contemplate, if this actually make sense!

Ghost Li naturally would not think of that and also did not have the energy to think about what others were thinking right now, at this moment, he was struggling before death, Zhu Xian ancient sword's suction force was growing stronger, even to him, stronger than the Sinister Orb which he encountered when he was young at the rear of Big Bamboo Valley. Just that right now his cultivation was incomparable to that young man at that time, therefore he was able to hold out till now. However, he also understood, he could not hold out any longer.

The strange suction power on Zhu Xian ancient sword was similar to the Sinister Orb evil power at that time, but there were also differences, compared to Sinister Orb, Zhu Xian sword which had turned into a demon sword, was even stronger and different from the Sinister Orb which absorbed blood at that time, Zhu Xian ancient sword while sucking in blood, at the same time, sucked in Ghost Li's years of cultivated true vitality energy.

In Ghost Li's eyes at the moment, Zhu Xian ancient sword emitting blood-red light, indistinctly like a devil opening its bloody mouth and grinning, soon it would swallowed him up.

Just like that, ending a life?

The moment before he was about to go unconscious, this thought flashed through his mind.

A burst of warm energy, started with a loud sound, burst forth from his heart, it was pure Yang breath, directly dispersed into his meridians. His entire body shook, his mind immediately cleared, a loud shout, using his entire lifetime of cultivation, burst through with all of his might, thunder and lightning seemed to rumble in his head, three volumes of Tian Shu flashed past, green, gold, red three colour energies leapt up at the same time, although not very bright but it regained vitality.

The Great Brahman Wisdom spanned the heart arteries, the Buddhist true way defended tenaciously, even the Zhu Xian ancient sword was also taken aback. Taking advantage of this breathing space, Tai Ji Xuan Qing Way as the path, Ghost Li's right hand immediately doubled, dark red lights leapt swiftly across, from his arm in a blink entering into the Soul-devouring evil stick.

However just when Ghost Li wanted to counterattack and escape, Zhu Xian ancient sword's devouring evil energy had again broke through the Great Brahman Wisdom, instantly Ghost Li's body felt numb, unable to move again, and that trace of sober in his mind, once again turned bleak.

At the moment, to the others, Ghost Li's withered face, already looked no difference from a dead man. Song Daren and the rest whom had friendly relations with the past Zhang Xiao Fan, all started to turn their heads around, could not bear to see.

At at this moment, when the final outcome seemed concluded, that Soul-devouring evil stick in Ghost Li's hand suddenly lit up, dark-green light slowly

pulsed, like awakening from a deep slumber, the Sinister Orb at the tip, strands of evil red blood lines, again lighted up, and deep inside the orb, an unprecedented, under the dark green light and blood strands, a golden Buddhist mantra surfaced.

Buddhist, Taoist, Evil three sects true ways, actually at this moment, unexpectedly when Ghost Li was making a final thrust at death's end, merged into one.

The Sinister Orb turned brighter and brighter, strange yet gorgeous light rays flickering non-stop, then, the entire stick also lit up, as if it was shouting something, the next moment, the point where the Soul-devouring and Zhu Xian ancient sword met, a muffled sound was heard again.

The crowd then realized and noticed, that other than Ghost Li's left hand, the Soul-devouring stick in his right hand had always been connected to Zhu Xian, did not drop down.

The strange lights on the Sinister orb were getting brighter and brighter, the three colors rotated, deep and low sounds, like the ancient Devil whispering voice, slowly emitted out.

[Woo ... woo ... woo ...]

A red gas, crystal clear, first from the fissure on Zhu Xian ancient sword, sucked out and entered into the Soul-devouring stick, rolling inside the Sinister Orb, it seemed to be still resisting but soon it could be seen, it was suppressed and subdued by Sinister Orb's strange energy, slowly transformed into a faint red color, a small part of it assimilated into Soul-devouring, most through the Soul-devouring stick, re-entered Ghost Li's body.

This strange transformation did not stop once it started, red gases continuously sucked from the Zhu Xian ancient sword, following the increasing amount of red gas, the Soul-devouring light strengthen and became stronger, and Ghost Li who once again received nourishment also gradually recovered, the skin on his face slowly, from being withered regained his original look, and strangely it even revealed an indistinct warm.

The red glow on Zhu Xian ancient sword from the initial dazzle, right now it seemed to be helpless against Sinister Orb's suction power, gradually dimmed down, and the Soul-devouring stick instead turned brighter. The surrounding Qing Yun Sect members were not blind too, most could tell that the situation was not right, now obviously it was Ghost Li this evildoer who had secretly casted some evil spells, Zhu Xian ancient sword looked like it was unable to sustain.

A stir of commotion, in the crowd, suddenly a few people scolded loudly, at the same time several weapon lights attacked Ghost Li. Ghost Li right now was wholeheartedly resisting the ancient sword Zhu Xian, how could he pay attention to the surrounding movements, he did not have the slightest reaction, the next moment, all of the weapons' attacks hit him squarely in the back.

Ghost Li's body shook greatly, blood surging, a sweet taste in his throat and another mouthful of blood, spat onto the ancient sword Zhu Xian. Zhu Xian had already dimmed down, with this sudden blood, red light again flashed, it actually turned stronger. Ghost Li at the same time felt it, before he could attend to his injuries, his body felt the strange suction power of Zhu Xian turning stronger again.

A shock of lightning seemed to go through his heart, he understood that this was really life and death, if Zhu Xian regained its power, most likely he would

not be able to survive and would be suck dry again. With such thoughts, he roared madly, disregarding everything, using all of his strength, his entire lifetime of cultivation, and that amoment-ago comprehended merger of the three sects true ways supernatural power, hit out.

The crowd did not see Ghost Li making any move, saw him hit by several weapons, throwing up a mouthful of blood, the Zhu Xian ancient sword's red light wavered, looked like it was about to lit up, a loud sharp sound suddenly erupted between Ghost Li and Zhu Xian, accompanied by a few sounds of fractures, Ghost Li was actually hit out by an unknown powerful force, like an arrow leaving the bow, streaked past above the crowd, landed far into the distant woods.

Qing Yun sect members were taken aback, stood stunned, after a long while, suddenly someone realized and shouted, "Give chase, definitely can't let that evildoer escape!"

The words reminded everyone, at once countless people pursued towards the direction where Ghost Li fell. Everyone at the scene clearly understood, Ghost Li was obviously seriously injured in his fight with Zhu Xian, right now this was a golden opportunity to pursue and kill this person.

Most of the people soared up to pursue, only Big Bamboo Valley, Small Bamboo Valley members stood blankly at their spots, Song Daren and the rest, felt torn between pursuing or not, and WenMin and the others had another flurry of exclamations, Lu XueQi had fainted.

While the ladies from the Small Bamboo Valley hurried to care for Lu XueQi, suddenly, in the hubbub, a light sound rang out.

Although the sound was very light, but for some reason, like a fine sharp needle, piercing into every Qing Yun sect disciple's heart. That sound which sounded like something quietly breaking, beside them, emitted from the Zhu Xian ancient sword.

Everyone suddenly turned pale, as if that light sound, was the echo of the end of the world. They slowly turned around, it seemed that even this movement, also exerted all of their strength.

Under everyone's watchful gazes, that legendary Zhu Xian ancient sword, quietly stood in the ground slate, that expanded tear from the ancient blade, once again, issued a small crackling sound.

The tear slowly spread, slow but unstoppable it spread to the surrounding, on that primitive and once divine sword blade, until, the Zhu Xian ancient sword again issued a moan.

[Pa!]

That light crisp sound, half of the blade attached to the hilt, fell to the ground while the other half of the blade, still deep inside the earth.

In that instant, everyone was dumbfounded, there was no breathing, their minds totally blank...

Zhu Xian!

Zhu Xian ancient sword!

Broken...

The vast Heaven and Earth, blue sky daytime, suddenly a crack of thunder in the horizon, thunderous crashing, in a blink winds and clouds rolled over from all directions, Heaven and Earth swiftly turning dark, black clouds loomed, gathered at Qing Yun Hill summit.

A gale started, sand and stones rolled, accompanied the sudden storm, thunder and lightning clashed, wild storm and rain, poured down.

The firmament Heaven and Earth, seemed to be crying too!

It was night, Heaven and Earth weeping, the celestial sword came to a premature end!

The cold rain hit upon the face, like the raw pain of a knife, the chill eerie, as if the entire body was frozen. Ghost Li in the woods, could not help but moaned.

The pouring rain, had already rained for a full hour but there was no sign of it weakening, although it was still daytime but at the moment the black clouds loomed low over the horizon, enveloping Qing Yun, like late night, not even the hands could be seen.

It was also fortunately so, Ghost Li seriously injured, with this sudden storm, he was able to temporarily avoid Qing Yun sect's pursue. Just that that strange duel with Zhu Xian sword, especially that final blow, Zhu Xian power recoil was really formidable, penetrated forcibly into his body, broke half of his ribs, the fractured bones now piercing into his lungs and heart, luckily his cultivation was

deep and solid but he was still made of flesh and blood, every step, the pain made him broke out in cold sweat, his mouth making hissing sounds.

At the moment, Ghost Li really wanted to disregard everything, lie down and lost conscious, just that that last trace of sanity constantly reminded him, he had to leave, his grudges with Qing Yun sect and his current broken body, once discovered by Qing Yun disciple, there was only death and no other.

And to him, there was still a reason not to die!

And so he endured, slowly struggling to run forward, away from the Qing Yun Hill, the safer it would be.

The rain poured, madly pouring into this mortal world, as if using this water of Heaven, to wash away the ugliness of the human world. Ghost Li panted heavily, each breath, in this dark rainy night, issued a faint white breath. Chill shrouded him, the clamour behind him was nearing, full of murderous intention.

Obviously, although Ghost Li fled with all of his might forward, but his heavily wounded body was not faster than the pursuers. Just that in Qing Yun Hill dense forest, the sky was dark and black, he was temporarily not found yet. However, Ghost Li knew in his heart, going forward like this, it was inevitable.

He staggered, seemed to trip over some roots or vine-like thing, his body tripped and fell forward, in his panic he grasped around, lucky he grabbed a small tree beside him and stabilized his body, but this toss, this violent shake, the severe pain in his chest penetrated deep into the bones, he almost could not breathe, not to mention stride and escape.

Behind him human voices suddenly approaching, as if in this storm, someone had heard the noise, issuing a command, many footsteps headed towards Ghost Li's direction to search.

Ghost Li's heart turned cold but he was still unwilling to be caught, even if he ran and flee, he would also not be able to escape, hardening his heart, he closed his eyes, quietly slipped into the muddy ground, his face facing down, burying into the mud. In the dark, he was like a pile of mud which was abandoned by this wild storm world.

Footsteps, the human clamour, slowly gathered over, many people were cursing while continuing to hit out fiercely at the surrounding trees and vines. Strong wind swept past, not knowing how many people had rushed over.

Ghost Li in the dark, lying motionless in the ground, as if his heart had also stopped beating, in the darkness, quietly waiting for fate's sentencing.

Heaven and Earth heartless, maybe treated all living things only as straw dogs...

The storm was raging!

, , ,

Chapter 177 - Man in black

Wild winds torrential rains, there was still no signs of it ceasing.

In the darkness, spots and bits of brightness swept past, they were the magical weapons in Qing Yun disciples' hands, using the weapons' lights, they searched in the storm. Here was already close to the boundary of Qing Yun rear mountain, thick dense forests, ancient trees grew thickly, vegetation exuberant, coupled with the terrible weather, thunder rumbled and lightning flashed across the horizon, from time to time lightning cracked down from the sky, striking the forest, often splitting a tree, it was really a terrifying scene.

Before the might of Heaven and Earth, those slightly weaker disciples, could not help but were terrified, trembled with fear. And in the darkness, those spots of brightness, looked like trembling fireflies, flying incessantly, illuminating just a little area around them.

[Rumble...]

Above the dark clouds in the sky, another clash of thunder exploding, the people on the ground felt ringing in their ears, struck dumb and turned pale. It had been more than four hours since the search for Ghost Li started but they still had not found any traces of him, many started to feel apprehensive in their hearts, couldn't be that the evildoer had escaped?

In fact, it was not unjustifiable, Ghost Li as Evil Sect Ghost King Sect vice head, his skills as expected was superb, although he seemed to be wounded by Zhu Xian ancient sword four hours ago but who knew how heavily wounded he

was? As long as he was not at the edge of death, most likely Ghost Li would have the ability to quietly sneak away!

This thought quietly reverberated in many of the Qing Yun disciples' minds, just that their teachers pushed and rebuked them from behind, in the end they did not dare to give up and could only continue to search. Few could imagine, in the darkness recesses not far ahead of them, Ghost Li seriously injured, too weak to escape, clinging onto the last hope, creeping in the muddy ground.

Dim light in the darkness, suddenly someone shouted loudly. "Stop, everyone stop!"

The person's voice carried off far into the darkness, even the rumbling of thunder in the horizon, could not cover his voice, this was clearly a senior with deep skills. Ghost Li lay motionless on the ground, letting the rain hit his body, hearing the voice he instead felt it sounded familiar but for the moment, he was unable to recall who this person was?

But it was clear that the surrounding Qing Yun disciples were extremely respectful and trusting of this person, almost at the same time when he shouted, the Qing Yun disciples could be heard stopping immediately, stood where they were and ceased talking. In the winds and rain, the clamorous search swiftly quietened down, indistinctly in the woods, not knowing whose panting breaths.

The storm turned more frantic!

There seemed to be someone carefully listening to something.

Ghost Li felt a chill suddenly penetrating into his heart and lungs, his entire body cold, there was actually a creepy kind of strange feeling. As if this eerie

silence, compared to that loud shout of search, was even more daunting.

After a moment, suddenly a voice lightly said, “Father, what is it, could it be you heard something?”

Ghost Li was startled, he was very familiar with this voice, that was his once good friend — Zeng ShuShu, a moment later he knew who the elder was directing this area of search, it was the head of Return of the Wind Valley Zeng ShuChang, also Zeng ShuShu’s father, and the Qing Yun disciples searching this area, mostly were Return of the Wind Valley disciples.

Zeng ShuChang enjoyed a reputation for a long time and indeed he was really not ordinary, in this racket of storm, he was still able to detect the unusual noise made by Ghost Li but at the moment the dark jungle before him, five fingers could not be seen, other than the storm there was no other news. Even himself, could not help but also doubted if that slightest sound he had heard, could it be he had mistaken, or it could be with so many people searching, they could have startled some animals and caused that.

After contemplating for a moment, Zeng ShuChang frowned in the darkness, waved his hand and said, “All disciples separate, form a row, not more than three chi apart, slowly search ahead, not to miss even a gap.”

Ghost Li was stunned, with a fine search like that, he almost did not have any chance of escaping, just when he was panicking, Zeng ShuShu anxiously said, “Father, the forest is so huge, assigning the disciples here to conduct such an intensive search, then won’t other areas be unsearched?”

Zeng ShuChang lightly said, “I have my reasons, you don’t have to say anymore, quickly go.”

In the dark Zeng ShuShu was nonplussed, did not dare to say anymore and only turned to move forward. In the darkness, for a moment no one spoke but the spots of lights could be seen moving forward in the storm, gradually forming a long snake, slowly advancing.

For some reason, the atmosphere in the woods suddenly became somehow strange, that racket just now, everyone was agitated and nobody felt fear, right now this silence, somehow it made them felt some hair-raising feelings in their hearts.

Because of the cultivated weapons, the light from the magical weapons in those Qing Yun disciples' hands generally could not be cast very far and had limited brightness but they were joined and slowly advanced, soon, from Ghost Li's hiding place, it was only less than two zhang away.

“Wait!”

Suddenly, Zeng ShuCang loudly shouted, dozens of surrounding Qing Yun Hill Return of the Wind Valley disciples paused at the same time, Zeng ShuShu was surprised, walked to his father, from the weak light cast from the weapon, Zeng ShuCang looked grave.

“What is it father?”

Zeng ShuCang's eyes were deep, stared into the darkness ahead but where his eyes thought, was not where Ghost Li was concealed, instead, it was to the opposite direction parallel straight to the far and deep dense woods.

In the darkness recesses, there seemed to be nothing but it also seemed to be filled with countless of demon and spirits figures, howling and dancing madly in the storm.

"“Something is wrong...” under the dim light, Zeng ShuCang's facial wrinkles seemed to deepen, his eyes actually had apprehension but he was after all not an ordinary person, years of practice trained his heart to be composed, after coldly snorting, he had already made a decision.

[Zheng], a light whistle, everyone was surprised, Zeng ShuCang actually wielded his celestial sword, the sword ray appeared silvery white, in the dark storm it swallowed and spat out rays of light, bright and dazzling, completely different from those Qing Yun disciples in the surroundings.

But he was seen only remaining silent for a moment, loudly said, “I will be ahead, all of you remain the same, still according to what was just said, do a line search but follow behind me not less than one zhang, do not come near.”

Everyone at the moment knew something was not right but with Zeng ShuCang around, they felt that they had someone as their pillar, Zeng ShuCang’s face was solemn, holding his sword and walked ahead of the troops, and the others remained the same, just that they maintained one zhang distance from Zeng ShuCang, did not dare to go near.

This strange team, continued on like this slowly moving forward.

The unusual atmosphere, as if in this night of storm in the dense forest, gently panting...

[Wu...wu...]

Like the wind and rain howling but also like the roar of a beast, but suddenly realizing, it was his own heartbeat.

That heart, actually beat faster and faster!

Zeng ShuCang's old face reflected the brilliant light of the sword, became more grave, in the depths of the woods ahead, a faint mysterious hostility was felt, although it felt obscure and even unable to determine if it was a foe but the strange waves of palpitation in his heart, made him unable to belittle it.

That feeling, he had not felt it for a long time, recalling the last time, it seemed to be hundred years ago, he with Tian BuYi and a few, followed their senior brother Wan JianYi into the Wildlands, the scene of directly attacking the old nest of Evil Sect. The long years of time, in a blink it had already been so long...

But not knowing, if Wan JianYi senior brother who died an untimely death, had reincarnated?

This strange thought suddenly conjured in his mind, even he himself could not help but feel surprised and ridiculous. He inhaled deeply, boosted his spirit, for some reason, today really felt different from the others!

[Rumble!]

Another clash of thunder, exploded out of a sudden, the might of Heaven and Earth, for a moment shook the world, as if the great earth underneath, seemed

to quake a few times. Almost at the same time, a lightning tore across the sky, broke out from the clouds, striking down into the mortal world.

Like a sharp knife of Heaven, slashing towards the mortal world!

Everyone was aghast, their hearts leapt out, some could not help themselves, suddenly someone who was looking only at the horizon, tripped and fell, gasping, he almost cursed out. Unexpectedly, when he turned back to look, illuminated by the lightning in the sky, before him a muddy body, lying motionless on the ground.

“Ah!” his voice desolate, suddenly rang out, “Here, here...”

[Ge!] a muffled sound, that disciple’s shout was suddenly cut off but in that moment, it had already alerted everyone, immediately all turned and leapt over.

A black figure leapt up from the ground but before he could stand firm, his body wavered a few times, almost collapsing. Instantly several magical weapons mixed with the rain and winds hit over.

Ghost Li’s heart sunk but he was unwilling to be caught without a fight, gritted his teeth he flew forward, unexpectedly taking only a few steps, a severe pain in his chest, he could not sustain and fell head down.

The crowd behind him cheered, a few Qing Yun disciples had already rushed up, stretched out their hands to grab Ghost Li.

And at this moment, suddenly, the darkness in the dense forest seemed to

expand, like a beast's soundless cry, deep inside the darkness a light ray flashed past.

Zeng ShuCang's eyes instantly widened, immediately he leapt forward, at the same time harshly shouted, "All disciples retreat, fast!"

The Qing Yun disciples before they could react, Zeng ShuCang solitary leapt into the darkness ahead, the celestial sword in his hand initially was bright and dazzling but when he entered into that darkness, it was never seen, angry shouts and whistling were heard unceasingly.

Just when the Qing Yun disciples were at a lost, a strange figure shot out from the darkness ahead, heading to where Ghost Li was lying, at the same time also towards the Qing Yun disciples. With the help of from the small spots of light, this figure was totally enveloped by black shadows, revealing only a pair of eyes, glinting.

Qing Yun disciples loudly shouted, unsheathed their swords and charged up, unexpectedly this person was highly skilled, without seeing him wielding his weapon, he instead stretched out his hand and grabbed for the nearest disciple.

That disciple was shocked but did not panic, the weapon in his hand slashed down, that man in black did not make any sound, took no notice, his stance did not change, before the crowd, grabbed that weapon with his hand. Everyone was shocked, before they could react, that person shook forcefully, the Qing Yun disciple was thrown flying out, and that weapon was snatched over by that man.

The level of this person's skills, was extremely powerful. In the darkness ahead, Zeng ShuCang bellowed incessantly but he seemed to be held back by

someone, unable to extricate himself to come forward to help, this strange night, inconceivably there were that many mysterious highly skilled masters lying in ambush.

Although the enemy's skills were extremely high but these Qing Yun disciples were all from renown sect and not ordinary sect disciples, shocked but no one ran off, instead all wielded their weapons and leapt forward.

That man in black seemed anxious and impatient, exerting strength in his hand, that stolen weapon immediately dazzled with brightness, far surpassing the glow when it was in that young disciple's hand, the light flashed, the sound of wind sharp, it chopped down from the air, a grand halo directly struck towards the group. The Qing Yun disciples cried out, a hubbub of shouts, all retreated to meet the enemy. Unexpectedly although that person's impetus was great but it was just an empty show of strength, with one stroke he forced everyone back a few steps, did not continue the fight and straightaway carried up Ghost Li who was lying helplessly on the ground, not knowing if he had already fainted, swiftly flew towards the darkness at the back.

Qing Yun disciples were all taken aback and incensed, surprised that this mysterious person who charged out of nowhere was so highly skilled, incensed that Ghost Li who was in their hands was taken away again. Ghost Li was the scourge of Qing Yun sect, and because he came from Qing Yun sect, everyone in Qing Yun sect had long wanted to get rid of this person, now that they were robbed halfway, how could they take this lying down, all started to pursue.

After pursuing for a while, suddenly a shout, bright light flashed, shot out from the darkness, to the crowd, this sword ray seemed to be striking towards themselves, quickly paused their bodies to meet the enemy. Only Zeng ShuShu managed to reach and flew up, moved his sword but he felt a shock to his palm and involuntarily stepped back, however the incoming sword was deflected by him, flew towards the sky, the next instant it fell inverted, [pu] a sound into the

mud, it was that celestial sword which was snatched, still making a [weng weng] sound.

And with this moment of delay, that man in black had already like an apparition, swiftly vanishing into the darkness with Ghost Li, and Zeng ShuCang who was battling fiercely in the darkness, right now with a sudden shout, someone seemed to make a muffled groan, blood light appeared.

Everyone was stunned, not knowing whether was it Zeng ShuCang who was injured or the enemy, great debt of gratitude to teacher, right now they could not be bothered so much, all leapt forward. Just that when they reached halfway, Zeng ShuCang had already leapt out from the darkness, landed on the ground, blocked them, looking at his figure, although he was still able to move swiftly but his steps were staggered, at the same time he panted heavily, this short period of battle, to him, exhausted much of his strength.

After his panting calmed down, he immediately quietly said, “The enemies ahead are highly skilled and their numbers are not small, all of you must not be rash!”

Zeng ShuShu and the other younger disciples were stunned, they never expected that in this place, they would encountered such a situation.

Zeng ShuCang stared at that mass of darkness ahead, in a deep voice said, “Who are all of you, why are you all meddling in our Qing Yun sect matter? With your skills, you all would not be someone unknown, why not come out and talk!”

The winds raged and the rain poured impatiently, lightning flashed and thunder rumbled, but for some reason, that mass of darkness deep inside the

forest was still that dense, like ink that would not dissolve.

Nobody replied Zeng ShuCang's questions, there was only the sounds of the storm and breathing sounds of Qing Yun disciples, Zeng ShuShu quietly stepped forward, whispered, "Father, where are they from?"

Zeng ShuCang shook his head slightly, in a low voice said, "They deliberately concealed their identities, what they revealed were not their true skills, could not tell for the moment."

Speaking he frowned, raised his voice and shouted, "Gentlemen, still not revealing yourselves?"

His voice reverberated far into the forest but still no one replied, Zeng ShuCang's countenance suddenly changed, stamped his feet and said, "Damm, fall into a trap!"

Speaking, he leapt up, his celestial sword casting out resplendent light, this time to all surroundings, there was no longer any shadows shrouding, evidently those people had all escaped, came like the wind and left once they got their man, obviously it was all planned and calculated.

Zeng ShuCang heaved a long sigh, descended, Zeng ShuShu at the side directed the other disciples to continue to search the surroundings, to try and find any clues, and also quietly asked Zeng ShuCang, "Father, what is it?"

Zeng ShuCang's face revealed a trace of disappointment and then sighed and said, "Although we exchanged strokes hastily but indistinctly I could feel, these people were not using Evil Sect's skills, and furthermore if Evil Sect members

came to rescue Ghost Li, they would not have to be in hiding. But, who were those that wanted to save this evildoer! And their numbers were not little and yet so highly skilled?”

Speaking, he frowned tightly, pondering. Zeng ShuShu did not speak, turned and looked ahead, the forest dense, darkness covered it, how would they see anything?

But, those who took Ghost Li, who were they? Nevertheless, Zeng ShuShu walked ahead, quietly told himself, it was after all better than in Qing Yun sect's hands...

As he thought that way, in this stormy night, in the thick woods, he seemed to recall ten years ago, the first time he met Ghost Li at Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak.

After a long while, he sighed again in the darkness, continued to walk forward. No matter what the future would be, the path still had to be continued on now.

On the other side of the unknown dense woods, in the recesses of the darkness, there was another strange dark figure gazing from far onto Zeng ShuCang and the rest, it was Mr Ghost.

Right now his eyes seemed uncertain, looked perplexed, pondering, he was still bemused. After a long time, he watched as those Qing Yun disciples search area widened on but a person with a discerning eye would know immediately, this was the sign of giving up, searching like that, in this huge dense forest, how would they still be able to find someone?

As expected, in a short while, Zeng ShuCang's voice rang out again, "Forget it, all of you come back!"

Qing Yun disciples clearly could not wait for these words, started to walk back, Mr Ghost from far watched Zeng ShuCang did a headcount and then turned and led the disciples towards Qing Yun Hill, gradually disappearing in the dense forest.

He slowly emerged from the darkness, his eyes instead drifted to a distance, watched the direction where those mysterious men in black had headed, staring deeply.

In the storm, there seemed to be a voice quietly speaking, "There is actually still someone interested in him..."

，，

Chapter 178 - Meditation Room

Thunder, lightning, wind, rain, almost screaming unceasingly in his ears, the chaos in his mind, feeling muddleheaded, he could no longer differentiate who exactly he himself was anymore? Only that in the severe pain, he felt waves of wind and rain brushing past, heading towards an unknown place.

Someone seemed to be speaking beside him, that voice seemed rather unfamiliar, sounded slightly anxious, faintly he heard, “He doesn’t seem right, quickly come and take a look?”

A cold hand roamed about on his body to check, a moment later a stunned voice said, “How did he get such serious injuries?”

The person beside angrily said, “Superfluous words, with that Zhu Xian sword, do you think...”

He did not catch the end, because a burst of dizziness hit his head and almost fainted, in his daze, he indistinctly felt the horizon was still rumbling with unceasing sounds of thunders.

The person beside seemed taken aback, quickly investigated, that cold sensation from the hand, made him slightly sober, he heard the person urgently said, “This is bad, his forehead is burning, I’m afraid he is having a high fever...”

So he was also having a fever?

This was the last thought in Ghost Li's head, after which, he fainted again, there was no more conscious.

A loud sound, shook him awake from his unconsciousness, his first reaction, he thought it was the thunder from the horizon. For some reason, although he was somehow conscious, it was still darkness before him, he struggled to open his eyes and look around but discovered in shock, his own eyes were still shut, unable to be opened.

Following which, a wave of severe pain was felt but it was not from his injured chest, instead from his throat, he subconsciously moved his mouth, making a light and hoarse cry, "Water..."

There seemed to be no one around, leaving him lying alone helplessly on the ground, his throat was feeling even more parched, like being on fire. His lips moved slightly, an inexplicable strength came from his body and he moved his body slightly, the consciousness in his mind, he seemed to be more clear-headed.

"Ah!" Suddenly a voice was heard beside, this voice was different from the usual but he seemed to hear it before, somewhat familiar, a surprise tone in the voice said, "You are awake, senior brother, quickly come over, he is awaken..."

Suddenly it became quiet, immediately footsteps sound were heard approaching quickly, arriving before Ghost Li. Ghost Li struggled again to open his eyes but for some reason, this time, the strength in his body seemed to vanish, in his daze he saw two figures squatting before him, and behind them, there seemed to be more dark figures. As for those people's faces, he was unable to see them clearly.

“Water...” he whispered again.

This time, the people around him understood.

“Quickly, bring water over, hurry up.”

The hurried footsteps, rushing to and fro, the next instant someone ran over, following which a cold hand lifted his head carefully, a bowl-like thing placed beside his lips.

Cold, clear water, touched his dry lips, Ghost Li's face moved and struggled to open his mouth, drank mouthful and mouthful of water. That cooling water entering his throat, like oasis spilling into a dry land, immediately relieving that pain which seemed aflamed.

Ghost Li felt relief, immediately a wave of tiredness, again fell into unconsciousness.

The people beside were surprised, immediately someone came over to feel Ghost Li's pulse, the next moment a sigh of relief, said, “It's alright, he is too seriously injured and having a fever at the same time, his strength is nearly exhausted, right now there is no danger to his life.”

Once the words were said, the people around him seemed to be relieved, then, someone seemed to be watching Ghost Li, gently sighed.

He fell asleep for unknown length of time, in-between Ghost Li woke up a few times but each time he fell unconscious immediately after waking up, in his memory, he only remembered there was always someone beside him.

In his blurry state, he saw many people, his parents when he was young, his innocent and beautiful senior sister, deeply etched in his heart BiYao, maintaining a distance Lu XueQi and many more, all flashed past before him, once, he even thought that he saw ten years ago Tian Yin Temple FaXiang, FaShan senior brothers, sitting beside him chanting Buddhist mantra.

At that, he smiled bitterly but he himself did not know too, this bitter smile, whether his face revealed it, maybe, eventually it was still an illusion.

Just like, this life turned upside-down, like a dream an illusion!

Why chant mantra for me?

Chanting mantra, what was the use of it?

When Ghost Li was awake momentarily, he thought like that quietly in his mind, and then, he fainted again.

[Dong...dong...dong...dong]

A low deep bell seemed to reverberate in the horizon, lasting a long time, waking him from his deep slumber, that deep bell, coming near from afar, slowly, it seemed to strike deep into his heart.

For the first time, he did not have the impulse to open his eyes, quietly lying there like that, not thinking and not caring, where he was now, and in which world?

The boundless universe, at the moment having left with only deep low sounds of bell.

[Dong...dong...dong...dong]

The melodious bells, seemed never-ending, continued to strike on. He listened, his breathing peaceful, all of his attention focusing into this peaceful sound, unwilling to leave it again.

For such a long time, this was the first time he was lying down with no worries.

Who would know, the days of carrying so much burden, what kind of agony it was?

Just that, this tiny Heaven and Earth, eventually could not last long, sounds of footsteps came near, walked to where he was, disrupting his thoughts.

The sound of bells striking in his heart, suddenly seemed to leave him, in a blink far at the horizon.

Silence, sigh...

He slowly, opened his eyes.

Buddha!

This was the first thing he saw when he opened his eyes.

A large 'Buddha' word, hung on top of the roof, surrounding this word, a circle of golden patterns wrapped around it and then along the periphery, circles of finely-carved five hundred Arhat idols, again formed a huge circle. The arhats were all of the same sizes but their divine appearances were all different, arranging in rows, extremely proper. Then at the periphery of the big circle was a blue bottom with black edges false ceiling, two chi higher than the circle with the Buddha word in the middle, the painting on it was completely different, it was checkered square, each square one chi, with golden color embroidered border, in it painted Kirin, Phoenix, Golden Dragon, mountain goat and other auspicious Buddhist animals, these patterns, were the same in each square.

Although he was not an expert in sculptures but with only one look, Ghost Li knew that this was supernaturally fine workmanship. On the roof, inside the inner circle surrounding the Buddha word, hung two golden chains, suspending an altar lamp that never ceased burning, looking up from below, there was a roughly three chi wide copper basin, presumably filled with oil.

Ghost Li frowned and turned his head to look around, the place looked like a meditation room in a temple, the room was quite spacious, standing at the four corners were red painted big pillars, the floor was paved with tiles, the door was made of paulownia wood, a window was opened on both sides of it, painted using the same red colour, looked extremely dignified. On one side of the wall a painting of Guanyin Bodhisattva holding a vase of clear water, below it a long altar with incense burner, on it there were four plates of offering fruits; pears, apples, tangerines, oranges, before the offering fruits a copper incense burner was placed, three joss sticks were lighted and placed in it, thin smoke tendrils drifted up, diffusing into the air.

The other side of the wall, was where Ghost Li was at. Here a wooden bed was placed, simple and sturdy, there wasn't any more decoration, most likely

monks would not be concerned with those things, the room was generally simple, other than what was described, there was only a round table placed in the middle, surrounded with four round stools. The table was black, on it were teapot and tea cups, all made of plain porcelain.

And at this time, the sound of footsteps had already arrived at the door, the meditation room door creaked opened with a sound of [zhi ya], pushed opened by the person outside, someone strided in. Ghost Li looked at him and was surprised, it was a young monk he had never seen before, he was holding a wooden plate, on it a fresh pot, he did not look over at Ghost Li and went straight to the table in the room, exchanged the pot on the table with the one in his hand.

“Who...are you?” Ghost Li asked but he had just said the first word, suddenly he felt the pain in his throat, though it was not as burning painful as that time when he was in a daze but it was still uncomfortable, his voice also immediately turned hoarse.

Although it was so, it shocked that little monk, he immediately turned, his actions abrupt, nearly flipping over the wooden plate in his hand.

“Ah! You are awake?” That little monk was surprised but delight showed in his eyes, he smiled and said, “Wait a while, I will call my senior brothers in immediately.”

Speaking, he was about to dash out of the room, Ghost Li spoke to his back, hoarsely asked, “Little teacher, I will like to ask, where is this place?”

That little monk turned around and smiled, an innocent and delicate expression on his face, said, “Here? Here of course is Tian Yin Temple!”

Tian Yin Temple!

Ghost Li was dumbfounded, like being hit with lightning. That little monk ran off, most likely to call someone, leaving Ghost Li lying stunned on his back, his mind in a chaos.

Tian Yin Temple...

Bewilderment and shock in his heart but for some reason, there was another agonized feeling, surfacing out from the depths of his heart.

Tian Yin Temple...Tian Yin Temple...Pu Zhi...

From far voices were heard, at the same time footsteps walked towards the room, someone whispered to that little monk, that little monk was obviously young, innocent and bubbly, laughed frequently while replying.

For some reason, hearing those conversations, Ghost Li went into a daze, did not think about his current situation nor the past grudges, right now this moment, for no reason he was envious of this ordinary little monk. With his innocent lively look, maybe he still did not know that the world also has suffering and hatred?

Young and ignorant, but in so many of our years, those were instead the most happiest days?

The footsteps stopped suddenly, just outside the door, someone spoke to the

little monk, “You don’t have to go in, why don’t you go now and inform the abbot at the back yard, that Zhang Xiao Fan patron has already awaken.”

Little monk laughed and said, “Alright. But FaXiang senior brother, you agreed to teach me Great Brahman Wisdom, this you cannot go back on your words.”

That person outside the door laughed and said, “Little fellow, so greedy, I promised you and so will not renege.”

The little monk was clearly delighted, [he he] laughed, jumped happily and went off. The wooden door opened, [zhi ya] sound, someone seemed to pause, inhaled deeply and then walked in.

It was really FaXiang, and behind him, was that tall and big monk, FaShan.

Wearing a pale blue monk robe, fair clean face, his hands holding prayer beads, FaXiang’s appearance, did not seem to change at all these ten years. He unhurriedly walked to where Ghost Li was lying, until when he reached the bed, his eyes met Ghost Li, the two of them, did not speak.

The atmosphere in the room, turned somehow strange, the next moment, FaXiang’s lips revealed a trace of smile, clasped his palms together and bowed to Ghost Li, said, “Zhang patron, you are awake?”

Ghost Li’s eyes twitched, suddenly coldly said, “My surname is not Zhang, I have long forgotten that name.”

FaXiang’s countenance did not change, only looked at Ghost Li, after a while lightly said, “Whichever name to use naturally will follow ur choice, just that, if

you even abandon your surname, did you ever think that you will be letting down your parents who raised you up?”

Ghost Li's countenance changed, snorted, and did not speak anymore, turned his head and did not look at him.

FaXiang did not look offended, he with FaShan, looked at this Evil sect evildoer who was spurned by the world's Good Faction, their eyes were all filled with kindness and gentleness. FaShan moved two stools from the round table behind him, placed beside the bed, quietly said, “Senior brother please sit!”

FaXiang nodded, sat down on the stool, looked at Ghost Li, said, “How is your body feeling now?”

Ghost Li, without needing him to ask, actually had already checked his own body, his fractured ribs had all been put back in place and secured with thick bandages, as for his shoulder and other superficial wounds on his body, were all dressed up, although he could still feel pain from his wounds but indistinctly a cool clear sensation could be felt, obviously good medication were applied on his wounds and so had this level of healing effect.

FaXiang was not offended when he did not reply, smiled and said, “When you were unconscious, I have already helped to place your bones back, the other superficial wounds are not that serious, just that your internal organs are seriously injured and need to be nursed with great care before you can heal, also fortunately your body is strong, if not even if it was a cultivated person with deep skills, with that kind of heavy wounds, most likely also cannot avoid death.”

He paused for a moment, and continued, “I guessed that little junior brother

of mine also told you! This is Tian Yin Temple, you being here, other than a few of us here in the temple, nobody else in the world knows, so it is very safe. You only need to focus on getting well here will do..."

Ghost Li suddenly interrupted his words, directly stared at him in the eyes and said, "It was all of you who saved me?"

FaXiang's smile froze, seemed hesitated, turned and glanced at FaShan, FaShan lowered his head, softly chanted.

FaXiang looked back, without hesitation, nodded and said, "Yes."

Ghost Li snorted, said, "Don't tell me you all didn't know, that if Qing Yun sect comes to know what you all have done, what situation will that be?"

FaXiang faintly said, "Of course I know."

Ghost Li smiled coldly and said, "Since then, why do you still go against your teacher's wishes and save me this Evil sect evil person?"

FaXiang glanced at him, for some reason, his eyes looked different.

Ghost Li frowned and said, "What are you looking at?"

FaXiang smiled, said, "How do you know, that I must have defied my teacher to save you?"

Ghost Li was stunned, said, “What?”

FaXiang leisurely said, “Qing Yun sect at that time the seven branches’ leaders were all extraordinary people, each with their own outstanding skills. The Return of the Wind Valley head Zeng ShuCang is one of them, that day when we fought him, to hold him back and in that short time disguised and not reveal our own sect’s skills, this level of ability, I am still not there yet.”

Ghost Li stared at FaXiang, stared for a long time, FaXiang looked back at him, his smile unchanging. After a long time, Ghost Li suddenly closed his eyes, did not look at FaXiang any longer.

FaXiang nodded, said, “You are seriously wounded and still not recovered, need to have more rest.”

Ghost Li closed his eyes, suddenly said, “Why did you all save me?”

FaXiang was silent for a moment, faintly said, “This question, I cannot answer you.”

Ghost Li took a deep breath, said, “Why?”

FaXiang quietly chanted, said, “You don’t have to be anxious, after a few days when your injuries are better, there will be someone who will tell you.”

Ghost Li opened his eyes, frowned and said, “Who?”

FaXiang’s lips moved, seemed to hesitate but eventually still said, “There is no

harm telling you, it is our teacher, Tian Yin Temple PuHong Master!”

Ghost Li looked nonplussed, a moment later, looking at FaXiang’s face, he knew he couldn’t get any more answers, heaved a long sigh, laid down and buried his head.

From far the bells tolled leisurely, again faintly traversed over.

[Dong...dong...dong...dong]

,

Chapter 179 - Secular Prayer Hall

Morning bell, evening drum, day after day, almost never-ending.

Every day, seemed exactly like the previous day, some days were dry and dull, some were peaceful, indistinct years, long or short, it was all in the human heart.

In a blink, Ghost Li had stayed in Tian Yin Temple for many days, listening to the early morning bells and low deep evening drums, somewhere in the temple the bells tolled promptly everyday, quietly spending the days. Somehow, in just a few days time, he seemed already accustomed to this unusual environment, everyday he was taciturn, just staring blankly.

He was in the prime of his youth, his body in excellent condition, although heavily injured but firstly he was young, secondly, his cultivation was deep, in addition Tian Yin Temple was particularly generous with him, whatever good medicine they had they were not stingy, using it on him as they pleased. With Tian Yin Temple's reputation and position, the good medicine in the temple, naturally compared against the world it would be high-grade medicine, the medication's efficacy quickly came into effect, the wounds on his body, healed really fast.

Just a few days, he was already able to get down and walked with effort, however when he was walking, his chest was still in pain and so in a few steps, he was panting non-stopped. But even if it was so, it made those who visited him, FaXiang etc, happy and delighted, praising that they had never seen someone who recovered that fast, most likely less than a month's time, he

would be fully recovered.

Ghost Li on most days got along with them briefly, occasionally chatted, both parties avoided talking about their opposite roles, almost right now in FaXiang and the rest of the Tian Yin Temple monks' eyes, Ghost Li was only an ordinary person that they were treating out of goodwill, and not them facing opprobrium, forcefully snatched the Evil sect evildoer from Qing Yun sect's hands. And Ghost Li no longer asked Tian Yin Temple the question on why they saved him.

The days passed by leisurely, Ghost Li day by day recovered, these few days, he was able to walk more easily, sometimes when the morning bell and evening drum tolled, he would take a chair, opened the window, sat by the window and listened attentively, it was almost as if this bell and drum in Tian Yin Temple, to him, had a special pleasing appeal.

While he was recuperating, Tian Yin Temple monks only FaXiang and FaShan came often to visit him, the other monks almost never came, let alone PuHong Master and the other Pu generation level of masters. And because for the sake of recuperation, Ghost Li also never left the room. Other than occasionally opening the window to gaze outside, appearing before him, was only a small courtyard, red walls glazed tiles and only a few short trees planted.

Just that to Ghost Li, such a simple and ordinary small yard, was actually a sense of familiarity that had not been felt for a long time, from the day he opened the window, although he did not revealed it but in his heart, he immediately liked this place.

Listening to the bell in the morning, the drum in the evening, such quiet and leisurely time, only for a short period of time, it had already made him reluctant to let go, intoxicated.

Who knew, in his heart, the most extravagant hope once, was to live such peaceful days only...

Mount Meru, Tian Yin Temple, among that vast extensive temple, shrines and pavilions, that small courtyard in an unfamiliar secluded corner, living like that, living, living...

[Zhi ya!] The wooden door was pushed opened, FaXiang walked in alone, swept his gaze around and then onto Ghost Li who was lying on the bed. Ghost Li's eyes were closed, not knowing if he was asleep.

FaXiang smiled, turned and closed the door, he asked Ghost Li, "How do you feel today, does your chest still hurts?"

Ghost Li's body moved and he slowly opened his eyes, glanced at FaXiang, indifferently said, "You ask this question each time you come, don't you get tired of it?"

FaXiang smiled and shook his head, his eyes moved and he walked to the other wall, before that painting with Guanyin Bodhisattva, took three sticks of incense from the altar, lighted it up with the candle placed beside and then inserted into that copper incense burner.

Faint smoke curled upwards, diffusing into the air, that painting of Guanyin Bodhisattva suddenly seemed indistinct, the air also gradually infused with faint fragrance of incense.

FaXiang clasped his palms together, prayed three times to the Guanyin

Bodhisattva painting then turned around and looked at Ghost Li for a long while, suddenly said, “Aren’t you coming over to pray?”

Ghost Li was stunned, couldn’t help but turn to look at the painting, Guanyin Bodhisattva in that painting was benevolent, dignified beautiful, a pair of discerning slender eyes lightly gazing into the distance, almost like watching the living things and mortals in the world, this moment, also benevolently watching himself.

His heart moved but then he sneered, “What do I pray to her for, if she is indeed spiritual, in the past I have prayed earnestly to Heaven and the various deities and Buddhas countless of times, I don’t see them being merciful!”

FaXiang looked at him for a long time, Ghost Li did not shrink away, the sneer was still on his lips, not showing any signs of backing away or regret. After a long while, FaXiang heaved a long sigh, turned over, bowed his head low and prayed to Guanyin Bodhisattva himself, softly muttering something, inaudible.

Ghost Li watched from behind, continued to sneer.

FaXiang paid his respect, turned, the benevolence expression on his face slowly disappeared, replacing with calmness and a smile, said, “I see that you are looking better today, and recently your body have mostly recovered, why don’t we go out!”

Ghost Li looked nonplussed by that statement, said, “Out, to where?”

FaXiang smiled and said, “To where you wish to go, to see who you wish to see.”

Ghost Li frowned and then raised his eyebrows and said, “Why, don’t tell me PuHong Master he...”

FaXiang nodded and said, “It is, teacher heard that you have recovered, is extremely delighted, asked that I come over today and see, if you are not feeling weary, you can meet him. I wonder what do you think?”

Ghost Li watched FaXiang for a long time, suddenly smiled and said, “Good, good, good, I waited for a very long time for this day, of course I want to see him, regardless whether my body has recovered, even if it was that day with severe injuries, if only he was willing, even if I have to crawl I will also crawl to see him.”

FaXiang clasped his palms together, “Patron overstated, please follow me.”

After speaking, he led the way, walked first to the door, opened and walked out.

Ghost Li followed next, however when he was about to walk out of the room, for some reason, he turned back suddenly and glanced at that Guanyin Bodhisattva painting on the wall, in the curling tendrils of smoke, Guanyin Bodhisattva merciful brows and kind eyes, slightly holding a smile, seemed to be watching him too.

Ghost Li’s brows frowned, snorted, immediately turned, never turned back again, walked straight on, leaving the faint incense fragrance, in that empty room behind him, gently drifting.

Walking out of the courtyard, a path about two zhang long, four chi wide, lined with red walls, about the height of two humans, green glazed tiles covered the top, the end of the passageway was a round arched door, walking near the arched door, he indistinctly heard sounds outside.

The sounds were rather weird, at first it seemed to be monks chanting the scriptures inside the temple but in it were mixed with other strange sounds, some were unexpected to appear here, like women from the villages gathering to chat, or believers performing a Buddha ceremony loudly, there were even faint crying sounds of children.

These strange sounds, how would it appear at Tian Yin Temple which was known as one of the world's three Good Faction great sects?

Ghost Li's mind was surprised and bewildered, looked towards FaXiang but saw his expression unchanged, continued to lead the way, heading towards the arched door and walked out. Ghost Li frowned, composed himself and also walked out.

Outside, it suddenly opened to a wide clearing, white jade like stone, levelled and paved as the ground, stone steps layer upon layer, nine forming into a group, connected up to a main hall of a Buddhist temple containing the main image of veneration DaXiong, a total of eighty one steps. And among the carved balustrades and jade steps, the temple halls towered imposingly, extremely high, before the temple thirteen enormous great stone pillars rose to the sky, their heights exceeding ten zhang, the temple roof was splendour and dazzling, eight roof ridges distributed equally above, carved into dragon heads, before each dragon-head-upturned eaves ridge, ten auspicious animals were carved on it, their demeanours different and lifelike. (Note 1)

And the different carvings in the temple were magnificent and exquisite,

surpassing mortals' imagination, not what an ordinary person could make. Behind the main hall, both sides, front, were lofty temple buildings one after another, between them public squares or winding small paths connected them, some directly connected together, piling up one after another, an extremely grand sight.

Just that although the architecture was magnificent and imposing, and indeed made one marvelled at ceaselessly but at this moment, the most shocking thing to Ghost Li was not these, instead on the Buddhist dignified sacred grounds, there were numerous commoners traversing, countless holding incense sticks, kneeling praying, stairs public squares, inside and out the temple halls, joss sticks and candles inconceivably burning at its peak.

Such a big Tian Yin Temple, holding a lofty position among the world's Good Faction, was like a secular ordinary temple, opened to numerous secular commoners to offer incense and worship Buddha.

Ghost Li never imagined this, he finally understood the jumble of strange sounds but this before him, made him even more confused. Growing up at Qing Yun Hill since young, he had long accustomed to the so-called immortal home style, celestial mountains celestial environment, originally only cultivated Taoists could possess it. On Qing Yun Hill, where had he once seen an ordinary commoner come up to offer incense and beseech for their wishes?

Ghost Li looked towards FaXiang, asked in shock, "This..."

FaXiang smiled and said, "Today happens to be first of the month therefore there are much more people. Although our temple has many believers but on usual days there are not that many people, just that every first and fifteen, the surrounding nearby commoners for several hundred miles, have the tradition of coming over to pray to Buddha." (Note two)

Ghost Li shook his head, hesitated for a moment, eventually still asked, “No, I find it strange, why would you all allow commoners to come in and offer incense to Buddha?”

FaXiang seemed to expect this question from Ghost Li, nodded his head, gestured him to walk to a direction and then led Ghost Li towards the back of the main hall, speaking while walking, “Actually in the past Tian Yin Temple, like Qing Yun sect and the other great sects, did not open up to the secular world, just that my teacher PuHong Master after taking over as the abbot, together with three other teacher uncles comprehended the Buddha truth, made a big wish to Buddha, said: Buddha is the people’s Buddha, not one’s own Buddha. And so decided to open the door to receive the commoners.”

Speaking till here, FaXiang stopped, turned and pointed to that innumerable stairs towards the great hall, said, “Did you see that long stairs of flight?”

Ghost Li nodded, said, “Why?”

FaXiang clasped his hands together, said, “That was one of the teacher uncles who saw that the mountain road was precipitous, although the commoners wanted to worship Buddha but many were weak and in poor health, had difficulty getting around and couldn’t come up the mountain to redeem their vows, in the end used remarkable powers, with his own strength, used ten years of work, on the precipitous mountain road opened up this Buddha sea level road, did such boundless beneficence charitable deed.”

Ghost Li was filled with deep veneration, his expression also turned solemn, said, “There is actually such remarkable senior, may I know his title?”

FaXiang glanced at him, unexpectedly was silent for a moment, quietly said, "That teacher uncle title was PuZhi, had already passed away for several years."

Ghost Li's body abruptly froze, 'PuZhi' these two words were like a shock of thunder in a clear sky, hit the back of his head, shook his heart and mind into pieces.

FaXiang saw Ghost Li's indefinite expression, a sudden sad, a sudden hatred, sighed long, quietly said, "Forget it, let's go, abbot is still waiting for us!"

Ghost Li woodenly followed FaXiang, his initial light footsteps, right now had turned heavy. After walking for several zhang, he suddenly turned back, his expression complex, saw from far the crowd bustling about, countless people traversing that flight of stairs, elder, men, women, children, each with a devout expression walking up the stairs, their lips chanting Buddha names, as if walking past that road, they would be nearer to Buddha.

Ghost Li's expression was complicated, a pair of hands clenching into fists and slowly releasing, after a long while, eventually he slowly turned his head back, walked ahead. FaXiang who was waiting in front with his palms clasped together and chanting, did not say much.

The two of them walked off, leaving this silent road of Buddha and the innumerable believers, behind them, in the secular world.

Here was the mortal world, and not immortal home Buddha realm.

Walking past the main hall, there was a long cluster of temple buildings and halls at the back, Tian Yin Temple was after all a famous great sect, its imposing

facade was incomparable to an ordinary temple. FaXiang led Ghost Li to the back, did not stop at any of the temple buildings, continued to head to the rear of the mountain.

Ghost Li only followed behind FaXiang, taciturn, his face revealed his heavy thoughts, the surrounding magnificent and exquisite architectures, he turned a blind eye to it.

Just that at the end, FaXiang brought him out of Tian Yin Temple back door, walked to a small mountain path heading towards Mount Meru, Ghost Li frowned, said, “Why, PuHong Master is not in the temple?”

FaXiang nodded, said, “That’s right, although our temple is opened to the secular world, it is an act of boundless beneficence but monks after all need peace and quiet, teacher and a few teacher uncles are all people who prefer peace, have always stay in a small temple at the summit, we usually refer to it as ‘Little Tian Yin Temple’.” Speaking, he smiled, revealed two rows of white teeth.

Ghost Li nodded silently, did not speak anymore, followed FaXiang towards Mount Meru summit.

Mount Meru although was not that towering into the clouds like Qing Yun sect TongTian Peak but it was definitely not low. They were already at mid-mountain when they came out from Tian Yin Temple, walking up they walked for a total of one hour before reaching Little Tian Yin Temple inscribed board.

Looking from the outside, Little Tian Yin Temple was really little, at most sanjinyuanzi [translator’s note: Two Chinese quadrangles residence with an additional smaller courtyard and rooms behind the main building], it was really

far off from that grand Tian Yin Temple at mid-mountain, however here it was away from the secular world, the surroundings were dark green pine trees and tall bamboos, densely forming a forest, when the mountain breeze blew past, pine trees moved and the bamboos swayed, an inexplicable feeling of quiet, seclusion and elegant, compared to the bustling below, it was another flavour.

Ghost Li had just recovered from a serious injury, after walking so much, his forehead was already sweating slightly, he stopped to rest temporarily, turning his head back to look, saw the flourishing incense smoke from Tian Yin Temple, threadlike drifting up, even at such distance, he could see clearly, the indistinct human hubbub, an indescribable devotion and solemn feeling.

Ghost Li gazed for a while, staring in a daze, not knowing what he was thinking, after a long time he turned over, FaXiang nodded, brought him into Little Tian Yin Temple.

Here was much simpler, both of them passed through the middle prayer hall, turned right and made two turns and it was three meditation rooms. FaXiang walked up, facing the middle room entrance, loudly said, "Teacher, Zhang Xiao Fan patron is already here."

An aged and kindly voice immediately rang out, "Please come in!"

FaXiang turned his head back, made a please gesture to Ghost Li, Ghost Li hesitated a moment then headed to that room, saw FaXiang instead stopped outside, did not look like he was entering with him.

Walking into the meditation room, Ghost Li glanced around, the room was simple and unadorned, the furnishings were almost exactly like the room he had. And the current world's Good Faction giant pillar, Tian Yin Temple in-

charge abbot PuHong Master, sitting cross-legged on the meditation bed, his hand holding a string of prayer beads, his face smiling and looking at him.

“You are here.” PuHong Master’s voice was calm, smiling.

For some reason, facing this holy monk, Ghost Li’s wavering feelings, very quickly calmed down, he inhaled deeply, nodded and said, “Yes.”

PuHong Master carefully assessed him, from top to bottom looked carefully, his eyes twinkling with strange benevolence and glimmer, the prayer beads in his hand also rotated gently, after a long time, he said, “You should have questions for me?”

Ghost Li immediately nodded, “That’s right, I am puzzled, why would Tian Yin Temple risk falling out with Qing Yun sect and save me, and, why did you all...”

He asked in a hurry, he was also speaking extremely fast but he was only halfway when he stopped involuntarily, PuHong Master stretched out his right hand in mid-air, preventing him from continuing.

Ghost Li was perplexed, looked at PuHong Master, PuHong Master bowed his head and chanted, came down from the bed, stood up, facing Ghost Li, said, “Before you ask me, I will first bring you to see someone!”

Ghost Li was stunned, said, “See someone, who is it?”

PuHong did not answer, only walked out, slowly speaking, “This person wanted to see you for a very long time, and I know, you too very much want to see him.”

Ghost Li was shocked but subconsciously followed, for some reason, his palms sweated, his heartbeat suddenly quickened, as if before him, there was something that made him fear.

FaXiang had been sitting quietly outside the meditation room, saw in such a short time PuHong Master was already leading Ghost Li out of the room, his expression did not change, only stepped back, stood aside. PuHong Master glanced at him, nodded, did not speak and led Ghost Li to another direction, that was in the sanjinyuanzi, the last courtyard, backfacing a mountain wall.

Note 1: The upturned eaves in the temple building carved with auspicious animals, were a unique architecture regulation in ancient China, it contained extremely fine segregation rules, for the numbers from emperor to officials to ordinary households, all had detailed specification, not allowed to overstep the boundaries, if not it would be a crime of disrespect, enough to sentence one to death and exterminate the clan. The architecture of having ten auspicious animals on the roof, since ancient times, there was only one place in the entire China, it was Imperial Palace Hall of Supreme Harmony, in the world it was only one. Here is fiction, everyone just read it with amusement.

Note 2: First and fifteenth of the month offering incense and praying to Buddha, the extensive spread of Buddhism in China was rather prevalent, it was known as religious services, or Buddhist rituals, from Beijing Lama Temple until the south Fujian village's small temple, most were like that. From young watched maternal grandmother offered incense until older, until now it was still like that, when I wrote it, when I thought about this, I couldn't help but sigh with feelings.

Chapter 180 - Difficult to cross Sea of Misery

The flat small courtyard was like the quadrangle residence outside, a house that was simply built against a mountain wall, a brick-paved small path in the middle, leading to the door, grasses decorated both sides, it looked like no one did a proper upkeep of the place, weeds overgrown in many places.

And what was different from the meditation room outside was, on this house's door, a piece of rather thick heavy black curtain hung over it, and other than this door, there seemed not to be other windows or doors.

Ghost Li looked at this ordinary and common-looking small house, his throat suddenly felt dry, both of his hands involuntarily clenched tightly. He looked to PuHong Master but saw on PuHong's Master's face, his expression also looked extremely complicated, like regret, like pained, hard to put it in words, and he was too, looking at that little door in a trance.

For a moment, no one spoke, a period of silence, except from the grasses beside, somewhere, low insects cries were heard, not knowing what it was calling for.

For a long time, PuHong Master gently sighed and said, "Let's go in!"

Ghost Li's facial muscles twitched once, whispered, "Alright."

PuHong Master slowly walked up, he stretched his hand out and pulled opened the curtain, a sound of [zhi ya] and pushed opened the door.

Faint sounds, came from the rotor on the door, who knew how long it had been since someone pushed opened this door, heavy and desolate.

A burst of cold air, suddenly rushed out from the house, despite Ghost Li was still outside the door but with this cold draft, even with his level of cultivation, he still could not help but shuddered. In this little room, it seemed like one of the coldest place on earth.

Ghost Li frowned, had some hesitation, at this moment, PuHong Master's voice was heard from behind the curtain, said, "Little patron, come on right in!"

Ghost Li took a deep breath, shook his head, opened the curtains, strided in.

The curtains slowly fell, once again the door issued a desolate sound of [zhi ya], gently closed.

The small yard, again, resumed its peacefulness, FaXiang's figure slowly walked over from the front, looked at that plain house, softly chanted and bowed once, looking solemn and respectful.

The curtains lowered, the wooden door closed, because there wasn't any windows, the house was immediately in darkness.

The bone penetrating chill, instantly gushed over from all directions, like countless cold steel needles, stabbing into the flesh. Ghost Li had just recovered from a major injury, for a moment started to shudder a few times again, but he

was after all not an ordinary human, he circulated the true ways in his body and regulated his breathings, slowly adjusted. Although the cold was unable to seep into his body but that icy cold bone penetrating chill, was still uncomfortable.

This small house on Mt Meru, was even colder than the inherently cold North pole.

Ghost Li was shocked, while he was feeling bewildered, he heard PuHong Master quietly sighed and said, “Junior brother, we have come to visit you, this person, you must have wanted to see him for a very long time!”

His voice was deep and carried a strange emotion, the chill in the house abruptly went down a few degrees, almost could freeze a human’s body blood.

Then, a thread of weak light, white carrying faint silver light, slowly from ahead of PuHong Master and Ghost Li, at the end of the small house, lighted up.

That light was graceful and like snow, first the thread blossomed, then at the periphery of the light, another thread of silverish-white faint light slowly shone, approaching it, merging into one, one by one threads of faint light started to light up one after another, gradually emerging, a one chi square-like disc shape.

That light was gentle, pure white like snow, the light rose to a height less than one chi, at the end of it the light seemed to transform into bits of snowflake, like white fireflies, gently dancing, slowly descending, almost like an illusion.

Then, the threads of light, slowly merged, gradually became brighter, Ghost Li and PuHong Master heard a light whistling sound, it was pleasing to the ear, the white light surged, instantly released its brilliance, illuminating the entire house.

In that instant, PuHong Master chanted softly with his head bowed, and Ghost Li, instead in that instant, felt his entire blood froze, unable to feel any warmth at all, even his own heartbeat, seemed to pause in that moment.

He was like a frozen icicle standing there, staring in a daze deep into the light, there wasn't any other thoughts in his mind anymore, only two words reverberated --

PuZhi!

The weak light was like snow, brilliant and flowing, emitting from the disc pure-white like jade, at the same time giving off an uncanny chill. And on top of that one chi square like round disc, a person sat, it was that person who changed Zhang Xian Fan's life, the one whom Ghost Li etched into his heart - PuZhi.

Looking from afar, PuZhi's face was life-like, although his skin looked extremely pale, without a single trace of life but upon careful inspection, there wasn't any sign of shriveled flesh. Moreover, he was still like that compassionate and kind old monk in Zhang Xiao Fan's memory, not a single change, just that in his expression, there was an additional indistinct anguish.

Other than his body.

PuZhi's body for some reason, was half of his original size, and because it was so, he could sit cross-legged on that pure white jade disc, the chill in this room was assaulting but there wasn't any ice seen placed around, most likely it was because of this unusual treasure. And assuming that PuZhi's remains could be preserved for such a long time was most probably also due to this treasure's

power.

Just that Ghost Li's mind couldn't think that much, the compassionate-looking monk sitting on the jade disc, was clearly the one etched deeply in his heart, for several years, never once forgotten.

Was it hate?

Was it gratitude?

In his mind, for a moment it was empty, for a moment it was like a storm, thunder and lightning rumbled, thousands of anguish, ten thousands of resentment, all for a moment washed over his heart!

That kind monk, was the person who saved his life, the person who taught him the true way and treated him like a son, but it was also this compassionate-looking monk, destroyed his entire life, made him suffered day and night, like falling into the Hell's abyss...

Gratitude, resentment intertwined, initially he thought it was only in his heart, unexpectedly today this moment, he could see his face once again.

Ghost Li under agitated emotions, could barely stand straight, his head swam, his body fell to the side. At this moment, a gentle and warm hand stretched out from beside, supported him, at the same time a familiar energy, it was Buddhist true way Great Brahman Wisdom, travelled from that hand, deep and profound, slowly calmed Ghost Li's heart which was filled with agitated blood.

"Amitabha Buddha, little patron, do not be too agitated, your health is more

important.” PuHong Master’s calm voice, softly heard beside.

Ghost Li, like being shook awake, clenched his teeth, took a deep breath, released PuHong’s hand and stood straight once again, but then his eyes, never once left PuZhi’s face. In the faint light, PuZhi’s kind face, that trace of anguish, seemed deeper.

PuHong Master beside, carefully assessed Ghost Li, in his eyes, this young man’s indefinite expression due to his current pain, fluctuated in the faint light, right now this moment, Ghost Li was not that renowned world’s Evil Sect sorcerer, instead was an ordinary person to him, like, that young man many years ago.

He gently sighed, his eyes deep, turned and looked at PuZhi ahead, slowly went up, staring at PuZhi’s face, quietly said, “Junior brother, your last wish, senior brother me has already fulfilled it for you, senior brother is useless, unable to save you then. Evil cause results in evil consequence, your own debts you need to experience yourself. This was what you said at that time, hope you will let go of your previous life sin soon, reincarnate and head to the afterlife. Amitabha!”

He clasped his palms together at PuZhi’s remains, bowed and then walked straight out, before he walked out of the door, he faintly said, “Little patron, I think you will want to be alone with PuZhi junior brother for a while! I will be in that mediation room ahead, if you need anything, just come look for me.”

Ghost Li did not speak, almost like turning a deaf ear, right now in his eyes, there was only PuZhi monk in that faint light.

PuHong Master sighed, pulled out the door and lifted the curtain, walked out.

The house, shrouded in a blanket of stillness.

Ghost Li slowly, slowly moved his feet, little by little walked towards PuZhi.

He seemed to fear something, somehow at lost, clearly he was once gnashing his teeth in bitter hatred, but for some reason, this moment, his heart was pouring with infinite sorrow.

That person was quietly sitting there, without any life, but as if he was waiting for something, even his face with anguish, seemed to have a desire and anticipation.

Ghost Li slowly walked to him, staring at PuZhi, both hands clenching tightly, his nails deeply entrenched into his flesh, but in the end he still released them.

Almost like losing his support, his body strengthless, like that, quietly fell sitting onto the floor, sat before PuZhi, silent.

The faint light glimmered, illuminating PuZhi and him, both of their figures!

Time, seemed to pause in this house, time flowed back at times, jumped at times, but eventually what remained unchanged were their hearts?

Even though one was still beating, another already still!

[Dong...dong...dong...dong]

The morning bell, once again tolled, reverberated in every corner of Mt Meru, rising and falling, awakening one from dreams but also had a kind of effect which could bring one away from the secular world.

Mt Meru summit, little Tian Yin Temple, outside the quiet meditation room, knocking sounds on the door were heard.

PuHong Master raised his eyebrows and then slightly shook his head, sighed and said, "Is it FaXiang, come on in!"

FaXiang acknowledged and went in, walked over and bowed to PuHong Master, looking at his face, there seemed to be a trace of worry, said, "Teacher, it is already an entire day and night, Zhang patron still has not emerged."

PuHong Master shook his head, said, "Previous life ill-fated relationship, a lifetime of feelings and enmity, how can it be so easily accepted and let go!"

FaXiang clasped his palms together, quietly said, "Yes." Then frowned, said, "Teacher, I am worried about the 'Jade Ice Disc' in the house, although it can protect and preserve PuZhi teacher uncle's body to be immortal but the cold energy, is greatly detrimental to humans. And Zhang patron he has just recovered, his mind and heart are in pain and confusion, what if his condition... leaves any incompletely cured illness, how would we live up to PuZhi teacher uncle's final instructions?"

PuHong Master faintly said, "It's alright, I have already used Great Brahman Wisdom to protect his heart yesterday, moreover with his own cultivation level, although the cold energy is poisonous, I presume it would not be a problem."

FaXiang heaved a sigh of relief upon hearing it, clasped his hands together, “So that’s how it is, disciple is also relieved.”

PuHong Master nodded, at the same time glanced at FaXiang, said, “I see that you are very concerned about this Zhang patron, although your PuZhi teacher uncle had left his last wishes but as for yourself, seemed to view him differently too!”

FaXiang smiled and said, “Teacher has exceptional insight, it is indeed so.”

Speaking, he seemed to recall the past, sighed and said, “Frankly, ever since I first saw Zhang patron until today, it has been, like the blink of an eye, ten years. For ten years, disciple’s Buddhist studies and training might have small improvement, compared to one’s lifetime it is like an infant learning to walk, hardly any changes. Only this Zhang patron, looking at his life, a stormy sea, one climax after another, great sorrows and hardships, gratitude grievances affections enmities, the various sufferings mentioned by Buddha, each was experienced fully by him.”

PuHong Master’s countenance changed slightly, clasped his palms together and chanted softly.

FaXiang continued, “Disciple also once thought about this Zhang patron during the late nights before sleep, also placed myself in his shoes, tried to imagine the various sufferings on disciple’s ownself. Unfortunately disciple’s Buddhist studies eventually is still meagre, actually was terrified and had fear. Buddha said the conscious mind world is after all a bag of skin, in the end merely dust, only this path of the heart, the importance is to comprehend. Each time disciple thought of this, recall Zhang patron’s rough life and today he is still able to sustain on persistently, disciple honestly admires.”

Speaking till here, FaXiang's expression suddenly changed, kneeled before PuHong Master.

PuHong Master was stunned, said, "What is this for?"

FaXiang quietly said, "Teacher, disciple's cultivation is low, unable to comprehend the Buddhist Dharma fully and yet towards Zhang patron this kind of figure who agonizes over the demons in his heart, disciple really can't bear to. Beseech teacher to use your remarkable ability, with our Buddha boundless power, enlighten and show him the direction; with Buddhist mercifulness transform his evil tendencies, make him leave the demons in his heart and the sea of misery. This is also a great merit, fulfil the above Heaven's benevolent heart, console below deceased PuZhi teacher uncle. Teacher have mercy!"

Speaking, he lay prostrate with both hands, bowed three times in succession.

PuHong Master shook his head and sighed, heaving a long sigh, said, "Foolish child! Foolish child! Do you know with your words, you have instead violated anger taboo. Furthermore, it is not that teacher is unwilling to enlighten this person, it is because he has experienced many hardships, a life of rough bumps, to this present day, his heart is already as firm as a boulder, not like an ordinary person whose heart can be moved. As what is said, Buddha in one's heart, each and every living creatures have affinity with Buddha, in the future whether it is to degenerate into the sea of misery, or return to paradise, all is but a single thought in his heart, I and the rest do not have any more power to exert on him."

FaXiang slowly stood up, bowed his head low and clasped his palms together, his face couldn't help but reveal disappointment however he quietly said, "Yes,

disciple understands.”

PuHong after a moment of silence, said, “You better go to the rear house and take a look at him, although the cold energy shouldn’t be a problem but with his current condition, sustaining without water and food for a day, it is still not a good thing.”

FaXiang acknowledged, composed himself, headed out, when he was about to open the door and go out, someone was already outside the door, sunlight shone from the person’s back, the person’s face cast in the shadows, for a moment unable to see clearly.

FaXiang was surprised, took a step back and could then see clearly it was Ghost Li who had unknowingly arrived at the doorstep of the house, quietly standing. Not seen for a day, Ghost Li did not seem tired but his face was extremely pale, his eyes bloodshot, most probably he did not once sleep for the whole night.

When he saw FaXiang, Ghost Li’s lips moved, slowly nodded to FaXiang, FaXiang was stunned, clasped his palms in return. Ghost Li then slowly walked in, stood before PuHong Master.

PuHong Master like yesterday, sat cross-legged on the meditation bed, his hands holding the prayer beads, continuously rotating. When he saw Ghost Li looked like he had words to say, he was not surprised, indifferently spoke to FaXiang, “Bring a chair for little patron, and, you too sit down!”

FaXiang acknowledged, pulled a chair over for Ghost Li, he himself sat at one side.

PuHong Master was silent for a moment, said, "Whatever question that you wish to ask me, just go ahead and say."

Ghost Li's eyes seemed undecided, as if his heart until now was still in turmoil, after a long time, he was heard quietly speaking, "Why did Tian Yin Temple save me?"

PuHong clasped his palms together, said, "All things have consequences and each consequence has their cause, patron current's rough situation, mostly are due to evil consequences planted by Tian Yin Temple PuZhi junior brother, since it is so, Tian Yin Temple cannot leave you in the lurch."

Ghost Li snorted, said, "What you all did, aren't you afraid Qing Yun sect will fall out with you?"

PuHong Master smiled and said, "Afraid."

Ghost Li heard his honest reply, was instead surprised, said, "Then you still..."

PuHong Master shook his head and said, "Tian Yin Temple for generations has good relations with Qing Yun sect, our ancestors have too sternly admonished, not to destroy without considerations. That was why I instructed them to dress in black, without revealing any traces and bring you back."

Ghost Li sneered, "Qing Yun sect is full of highly skilled martial artists, what if your tracks were exposed?"

PuHong Master indifferently said, "I ordered them to hide their tracks, is for the friendship between the two sects, unwilling to create discord between the

two Good Faction sects, that was why we had that strategy. But if there really was a mishap, then it wouldn't matter too, to save patron you, we have no choice but to fall out with them."

Ghost Li stared at PuHong Master, in a heavy voice said, "What exactly is the reason, for all of you to disregard everything and save me?"

PuHong Master this time, turned silent instead, Ghost Li did not pursue the question, only stared at him.

After a long time, PuHong Master gave a long sigh, said, "Do you wish to know, the incident which happened after PuZhi junior brother struggled to return to Tian Yin Temple with his last breath until he passed away?"

Ghost Li was shocked, for a moment speechless, looking at the pain in his eyes, it seemed like his heart was in another turmoil, finally, he quietly said, "Yes."

For some reason, his voice was somehow hoarse.

，，

Chapter 181 - Ill-fated Relationship

“That was several years ago, but in my mind, it seems like yesterday, so vivid, not a single detail forgotten.”

PuHong Master’s calm and unhurried voice drifted in the house, slowly started to recount the past.

“I remembered very clearly, it was a cloudy day, gloomy and heavy. That day, starting from the morning, my mind was unsettled but I couldn’t figure out what was wrong, even I was distracted while doing the homework which I have always done. That kind of situation was rarely seen, I myself also did not know what the reason was, so that day I wasn’t in a good mood.”

“So it was like that, until evening, when the evening drum beat and I saw that the dusk was approaching, I felt slightly better. At that moment, I only thought that most likely my cultivation was not enough and was distracted for a moment. Unexpectedly on that day during twilight, suddenly, I heard a scream from outside Tian Yin Temple entrance.”

Speaking till here, PuHong Master turned his head and looked at FaXiang.

FaXiang nodded, said, “Yes, at that time disciple was patrolling the entrance, saw someone fainted near the temple entrance, disciple hurried over to investigate, unexpectedly...it was PuZhi teacher uncle.”

He sighed and continued, “PuZhi teacher uncle was unconscious, he looked

extremely haggard but his face somehow, looked strangely red. It was until later that I found out, PuZhi teacher uncle, in order to extend his life, took the rare medicine ‘Three Days Must Die Pill’.”

Ghost Li was surprised when he heard that, the medicine pill was really unheard of, he couldn’t help but ask, “What Three Days Must Die Pill?”

PuHong Master said, “This strange medicine is not used in the orthodox way, it was said in the former years, a strange person known as ‘Ghost Doctor’ in Evil Sect, created it using his wildest imagination. Heard that once this pill is taken, no matter how grave your injuries are, this pill will be able to stimulate your body’s capacity and allow you to live three days more, and in these three days, you will have just enough strength of a normal person. However after the three days, the medicine will change to be the world’s number one type of poison, even if your body is in a good condition with exceptional cultivation, you will not be able to defeat the efficacy of the strange medicine and die without question. That is why it has such an unusual name.”

Ghost Li was silent.

PuHong Master continued, “At that time naturally we didn’t know so much, after receiving FaXiang disciple’s urgent report, I turned pale with fright. PuZhi junior brother was intelligent and had gifted aptitude, his cultivation was profound and had always been an outstanding talent in our Tian Yin Temple, I never expected that he would become like that. I immediately ordered them to bring him in, in the meditation room I tried to save him but he remained unconscious, his internal channels were in a mess, he was not only severely poisoned, his body was also heavily injured by a highly skilled martial artist, it was already at that stage where the lantern had exhausted the oil...”

Although it was already several years after the incident, PuHong Master’s face

revealed agonized and dejected expression, clearly this past incident had a huge impact on him.

“That night, I did all I could to save PuZhi junior brother but even though I exhausted all elixirs, spent all of my true vitality, I couldn’t revive PuZhi junior brother, watching helplessly as his breathing became weaker and weaker, I was really in anguish. Could it be that my junior brother, would just die without knowing the reason?”

“His body was so severely injured, it would not be a surprise if he had died a few days earlier, however he struggled to return to Tian Yin Temple, evidently he had something to tell us before he dies, or it could be something urgent that he have to let us know.”

PuHong Master heaved a long sigh, became quiet, as if in his mind, the day’s incident again surfaced.

After a long while, FaXiang coughed softly beside, whispered, “Teacher, I was constantly with you and PuZhi teacher uncle during that time, for the rest of the events, let me relate it for you!”

PuHong Master silently nodded, did not speak.

FaXiang coughed once, continued on, “At that time I was always with teacher, watched teacher and PuFang teacher uncle and the rest tried their best to save PuZhi teacher uncle but it was to no avail, I was burning with impatience too. PuZhi teacher uncle had always treated me very well, I only blamed myself for my meagre skills, unable to do anything for him. Unexpectedly, when my teacher uncles and I were at lost at what to do anymore, that late night, PuZhi teacher uncle regained conscious by himself.”

“Ah...” Ghost Li raised his brows, exclaimed softly and then quickly controlled himself, his face again turned cold.

FaXiang glanced at him, continued, “It was my shift to look after PuZhi teacher uncle, rejoicing, I immediately called teacher and PuFang teacher uncle over. Although it had been several years already but I can still clearly remember, PuZhi teacher uncle’s look on that night, a look of death but only on his face, red like blood, it was really scary.”

“Looking at PuZhi teacher uncle’s condition taking a turn for the better, we were all extremely glad, although PuZhi teacher uncle looked strange but we couldn’t care much at that moment. Teacher was about to ask PuZhi teacher uncle what exactly had happened, how did he get so severely injured? Unexpectedly...unexpectedly PuZhi teacher uncle the moment he saw teacher, he, he...”

FaXiang paused for a moment, it was to compose himself.

The room was silent, PuHong Master closed his eyes, softly chanting, the prayer beads in his hands turned, Ghost Li was instead listening with all of his attention.

FaXiang for some reason, looked terrible but he eventually still carried on.

“After PuZhi teacher uncle regained consciousness, he remained rather quiet but when teacher rushed over upon hearing the news, the moment he saw teacher, suddenly, like being agitated, he trembled all over, leapt up and sat on the bed.”

“We were all shocked, PuZhi teacher uncle’s face was still red like blood, a pair of eyes staring intently on teacher, stretched out his withered hand, pointed at teacher. Teacher immediately went over, grabbed his hand and was about to ask him, PuZhi teacher uncle instead...”

A moment of hesitation flashed past FaXiang’s face, glanced at PuHong Master, PuHong Master’s expression was unchanged, still with his eyes closed.

FaXiang after a slight moment of silence, continued, “PuZhi teacher uncle once he held teacher’s hand, suddenly, it was as if he was totally devastated, like a child, burst out crying on teacher.”

“What?” Ghost Li when he heard that, for a moment forgotten himself, stood up and stared at FaXiang.

In his heart, no matter what PuZhi holy monk had did but the impression he left him, how would he be such a person?

FaXiang sighed, said, “The three of us were shocked too and at lost, we didn’t know what happened to PuZhi teacher uncle, why was he acting so oddly. But looking at PuZhi teacher uncle, he looked extremely remorseful and grieved, we didn’t know what to do. PuZhi teacher uncle while crying, said to teacher: Senior brother, senior brother, junior brother deserves to die, did a heinous crime, even if I were to die ten thousand times, it will not be able to make up one ten thousandth of it!”

Ghost Li’s eyes twitched but he did not speak.

FaXiang's voice was deep, continued, "The shock in my heart, at that moment was already to the brim, looking at teacher's expression, clearly he was like me too. PuZhi teacher uncle demeanour was unstable, almost like mad, we couldn't do anything and could only console him, hoped he would have a good rest and wait till his body recovers fully before doing anything."

"However PuZhi teacher uncle was obstinate, said in order to see us again at Tian Yin Temple, he had already took Three Days Must Die Pill and would definitely die in less than a day. Before dying, he had something very important to tell teacher and teacher uncle, and had something important to entrust. If his words were not heard before he died, then he would not go in peace."

"We were all shocked and anxious when we heard that but before PuZhi teacher uncle, we were helpless and could only let him talk. Initially I thought due to his severe injuries, PuZhi teacher uncle was delirious, nobody expected that with his words, he actually said such a treason against Buddhist heart and human relations, evil deed with infinite sin."

PuHong Master quietly sighed, clasped his palms together and chanted, "Amitabha!"

FaXiang also clasped his hands together and chanted, then looked at Ghost Li, saw his expression slowly turning ashen, continued, "PuZhi teacher uncle grabbed teacher's hand tightly, tears streaming down while recounting the events, the rest of us beside, the more we heard the more dumbfounded we were, almost to the stage where our blood ran cold. PuZhi teacher uncle said: To fulfil his desire to merge Buddhism and Taoism together, several days earlier he went up to Qing Yun Hill again to visit Qing Yun sect Head Reverend DaoXuan, expressed his own thoughts, unfortunately Reverend DaoXuan rejected him. Disappointed, he walked aimlessly down the mountain, came to a small village at the foot, that small village was called 'Grasstemple Village'..."

[Pa!] a muffled sound, almost at the same time when 'Grasstemple Village' was said, the table which Ghost Li had placed his hand on, under his agitated emotion, twisted one corner down, grinded it into powder, spilling finely down from his hands.

FaXiang glanced at that table, sighed quietly in his heart but still continued, "When PuZhi teacher uncle walked into the village and took a temporary rest in one of the diaphilated temple at the back of the village, by chance encountered a group of youths playing, saw two youths after arguing, one of the youth unable to let go of his temperament, almost did a regrettable fatal thing, fortunately PuZhi teacher uncle intervened in time and could be said to save one of the youth's life."

Ghost Li's facial expression again fluctuated, clenching his fists tightly, in his eyes, clearly revealed anguish.

"PuZhi teacher uncle did not think much about this small matter, however that day the sky was gloomy, looked as if a storm was approaching and so decided to stay for a night in the dilapidated temple. Unexpectedly it was that night, something happened..."

Ghost Li's head, buried deep down, refusing to allow anyone, to see his emotions.

The memories like knives, hacked down deep in his heart, blood gushed out like fountain, unable to hold back!

FaXiang's voice unhurriedly reverberated, "It was night, PuZhi teacher uncle woke up with a start from his meditation, discovered that a sorcerer dressed in

black had sneak into the village, intended to kidnap a youth who had extremely good aptitude. PuZhi teacher uncle naturally could not sit and watch and so saved that youth, but strangely, that sorcerer in black was unexpectedly malicious and crafty, actually used that youth as a pretence, his target was in fact PuZhi teacher uncle.”

“That sorcerer in black secretly placed the ‘Seven tailed Centipede’ on that youth, with one hit struck PuZhi teacher uncle, following which while PuZhi teacher uncle’s state of mind was in chaos, he used Evil sect sorcery to heavily injure PuZhi teacher uncle. And it was at that time, PuZhi teacher uncle then realized, the vicious attacks by that sorcerer in black, was all because of that greatly ominous sealed item, ‘Sinister Orb’ on PuZhi teacher uncle.”

Ghost Li’s shoulders moved but he did not raise his head up, from his sleeves, the Sinister Orb’s familiar icy cold sensation faintly travelled up...

Thousands of feelings, ten thousands of emotions and enmities, when it all gushed up to your heart at the same time, you, what kind of feeling is that?

He was taciturn, silent, only his entire body was tensed, involuntarily, trembled slightly...

“Although that sorcerer’s moves were treacherous and murderous but PuZhi teacher uncle was after all deeply skilled, even though he was heavily injured, he still managed to use Buddhist remarkable powers, fought with that sorcerer and both sides were heavily injured, although he was severely injured and on the brink of death but he still successfully chased that sorcerer temporarily away. However during that process, PuZhi teacher uncle discovered in shock, that person actually knew Qing Yun sect Taoism true way skills, evidently he had countless links with Qing Yun sect.”

“When PuZhi teacher uncle was fighting with that sorcerer, for some reason, that youth which he had saved during daytime, came quietly to the dilapidated temple, after a few intense fights, that child was affected and fainted. After the fight, PuZhi teacher uncle chased that sorcerer away but he was also at his limit, severely injured and dying, he had no choice but to consume that ‘Three Days Must Die Pill’ which he happened to obtain it in the past, in order to extend his life.”

“PuZhi teacher uncle firstly knew he was going to die, his mind was already in a mess and unable to handle matters calmly, secondly he was worried that that sorcerer would definitely be back to kill any witnesses, he himself did not fear but the villagers would most likely be annihilated totally by that extremely vicious sorcerer, then wouldn’t he be committing a heinous sin. He intended to seek help from Qing Yun but that sorcerer was clearly involved with Qing Yun Hill, what if something happened to him after he went up the mountain, he was not afraid of losing his life but wouldn’t he be impeding many lives.”

FaXiang’s face looked bleak, he seemed to feel sorrow for PuZhi’s dilemma at that time.

“PuZhi teacher uncle many years ago, once toured the world, at the west great marsh incidentally subdued the world’s most evil object, ‘Sinister Orb’, he, endowed with Heaven’s merciful heart, used Buddhist remarkable powers and suppressed this evil object, day and night he carried it with him, to prevent it from harming the common people. However this Sinister Orb’s cruel energy was innate, although protected by Buddhist powers but it still slyly corroded PuZhi teacher uncle’s mind. Just that on usual days it was shielded by Buddhist powers so it was not discovered.”

“That day, PuZhi teacher uncle facing a hopeless situation, he himself have to

die and yet he had to implicate the people around him, and his entire lifetime grand wish to comprehend Buddhism and Taoism looked like it was going to turn into bubbles, he couldn't help but feel agitated and great sorrow, unexpectedly, when it was all looking hopeless, he actually...actually had the wildest fantasy, thought of another way, to realize his grand wish."

Ghost Li's breathing, started to slowly became hurried.

FaXiang paused for a moment, slowly continued, "PuZhi teacher uncle actually thought of privately passing the Tian Yin Temple Buddhist Supreme Great Brahman Wisdom to a youth, then let him try and join Qing Yun, as such, he could fulfil the grand wish of his lifetime. At that time he was brooding over the matter of Buddhism and Taoism merger, once he had that thought, it was like grasping a straw as lifeline, refused to let it go again. Following which he weighed the matter and chose to pass the Great Brahman Wisdom True Way mnemonic formula to that youth whom he had saved his life, at the same time instructed him not to reveal it to anyone, entrusted his entire lifetime of wish, onto that young man."

"Hei, hei hei...hei hei hei hei..." Ghost Li's extreme suppressed laughter, flowed out from his lowered head, carrying a few degrees of desolation, a few bitterness, and a few chokes with emotions.

Not knowing if he was mocking PuZhi, endless hatred, or was it resentment towards Heaven, complaining his own fate?

FaXiang waited for his laughter to end, a dejected look on his face, continued, "After everything was settled, PuZhi teacher uncle cast spells to make that youth fall asleep again, and because of the Three Days Must Die Pill's effect, his body strength was slowly returning, initially he intended to leave like that, rushed back to Tian Yin Temple within three days, to instruct his funeral affairs.

Unexpectedly at that moment, he suddenly recalled, Qing Yun Sect was very strict in taking in disciples, and because he wanted to maintain his secret, he chose that youth and not that high aptitude youth, thinking carefully, Qing Yun Sect might not take that youth in.”

“Watching as his greatest wish was about to go up in bubbles again, and his death was imminent, PuZhi teacher uncle’s mind was in a mess, in addition his severe injuries, his Buddhist cultivation was already greatly damaged, far from his usual strength, the vicious energy in his body from that Sinister Orb, at that moment, flared up, finally created an irredeemable sin.”

“When PuZhi teacher uncle’s emotions were agitated, he was attacked by that vicious energy, in his chaotic state of mind, he only thought of racking his brains to find ways to fulfil his own wish. While he was pondering wildly, he actually thought of, what if that youth became an orphan, and it was due to a huge accident, because they were located at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, Qing Yun sect would definitely not sit by and watch...”

PuHong Master’s face suddenly revealed grieved expression, the prayer beads in his hands rotated even quicker, his mouth also chanted incessantly.

“And so...” FaXiang’s voice, right now seemed to tremble, “PuZhi teacher uncle actually thought of how, how, how to make this child an orphan, so that he could enter Qing Yun Sect. At that moment, he was already deranged, totally controlled by the evil power of the Sinister Orb, finally, he slowly entered the village, started...started to kill; And after seeing the first blood, he was out of control, the vicious character released, two hundred over villagers in the Grasstemple Village, were totally wiped out, and created this heinous sin!...”

“Enough, do not say it anymore!” Suddenly, Ghost Li shouted, abruptly stood up, on his face, it was already wet with tears.

“Do not say...it...anymore...” His voice hoarse, choking with emotions.

FaXiang was silent, slowly lowered his head. On the meditation bed, PuHong opened his eyes, slowly came down the bed, walked to Ghost Li, stretched his hand out and gently comforted Ghost Li on his shoulders, quietly said, “Child, if you wish to cry or curse, just do it! But the past matter, you will still have to finish listening to it.”

Ghost Li choked with sobs.

PuHong Master quietly said, “When PuZhi teacher uncle regained his consciousness, the grave mistake was already made, standing at the pile of corpses and sea of blood, like the five thunders striking his head, he was totally dumbfounded. His entire life of merit and cultivation, not to mention going down the drain, harming so many innocent people, such a heinous crime, it almost tore his heart apart. In his muddle headedness, he deliriously rushed back to Tian Yin Temple, saw me, what he did was not for anything, it was only to confess to me everything, all of his sins. Filled with remorse, he beseeched me, based on our hundred years of brotherly relationship, to redeem one ten thousandth of his heinous sin, no matter what happens in the future, as long as you are in difficulty, we will definitely try our best to help.”

Ghost Li tried hard to suppress his own feelings but hopelessly, never once cried for several years, a man who was strong like iron, right now reduced to a person in tears. His teeth bit hard into his lips, deeply sunk in, traces of blood flowed slowly out from the corner of his mouth, due to his agitated emotions, he had bit through his lips.

PuHong Master looked upset, said, “PuZhi junior brother after leaving his last

wish, the venom took effect and he finally passed away. On his deathbed, he instructed that his remains not to be cremated and buried, to use Jade Ice Disc to guard it, leaving this remnant body, hope that in the future that youth named Zhang Xiao Fan, if he happens to know the truth, to invite him here and let him deal with this infinite sinful body. To flog or spit on and curse, or to grind the bones into dust and scatter it, all of the monks in Tian Yin Temple, no one is to intervene, this is to repay one ten thousandth of his sin.”

Ghost Li whipped his head up, PuHong Master stared into his eyes, his face solemn and respectful, continued on unhurriedly, “What I have said, you have all understood! Junior brother’s final wish, I have already fulfilled it for him. Now on how to deal with it, will follow your wishes. That small house in the backyard, what you wish to do with it, you just have to go over.”

Ghost Li clenched his teeth tightly, his eyes deep, stared at PuHong Master. For some reason, PuHong Master did not wish to look into his eyes, slowly shifted his gaze.

Ghost Li’s breathings became louder and louder, his chest rising up and down, the expressions on his face fluctuated in seconds, suddenly, as if he had made up his mind, abruptly turned, strided out, hearing his footsteps, it was headed towards that small house at the back.

FaXiang’s countenance changed greatly, exclaimed, “Teacher!”

PuHong Master slowly shook his head, his face revealed deep anguish, spoke quietly, “Let him go! That was your PuZhi teacher uncle last wish. The bitterness of the affairs of the human life, how many are able to accept it? Amitabha...”

He gently clasped his palms together, silently chanted, in the room, instantly

quietened down.

Frighteningly quiet!

,

Chapter 182 - Resolve

The morning bell tolled, the evening drum deep and heavy, Mt Meru immersed in the misty clouds, from the rising sun to the evening glow, the sky in the horizon changed, white clouds changed into grey dogs, rolled past, time after all never once stopped for anyone.

Tian Yin Temple imposing and magnificent, standing majestically on Mt Meru, like a compassionate giant watching the world, countless mortals coming from all directions gathered in the morning, facing the gods statues in the Buddhist temple and prostrating themselves, recounting their own happy or sad wishes, seeking the gods' blessings. Millions of people came, gathered, millions dispersed, left, day after day, never once changed, gathering and dispersing like time. Only the gods and buddha golden statues in the temple, the unceasing altar lamp fire in the hall, the rising curling smoke, saw all of the world's vicissitudes of life.

Ghost Li, or the Zhang Xiao Fan at that time, once again entered into that small house where PuZhi holy monk's remains was, a day and night had passed again, during this period, nothing stirred in the small house. PuHong Master had came once to the small courtyard outside the house, stopped for a long time then sighed and left.

Only FaXiang, ever since he saw Ghost Li entering that house, he had been standing outside in the courtyard, with astonishing patience waited.

Nobody knew, the reason why FaXiang stood there but including PuHong Master, the other Tian Yin Temple monks never asked him, and FaXiang too,

stood there by himself and determined, as if waiting for something.

The remnants of the sun like blood, reflecting the west side of the sunset sky red, watching from afar, there seemed to be a thin layer of golden light at the edge of the clouds, very beautiful. The heaven and earth's beauty, actually has always been beside, only whether do you see it or not, whether do you have the heart to or not.

FaXiang gazed far into the sunset, staring blankly, standing for a day and night, his fine and delicate face did not seem to show the slightest sense of fatigue, instead in his clear gaze, glimmered with deep wisdom glint.

"What are you looking at?" Suddenly, a voice rang out from beside, FaXiang got a shock, came out of his thoughts, saw that PuHong Master had arrived at the courtyard again, standing beside himself, smiling and looking at him.

FaXiang clasped his hands together and replied, "Replying to teacher, disciple is looking at the sunset glow in the west, suddenly was enlightened and lost in my thoughts, didn't realize that teacher is here, neglected teacher."

PuHong Master smiled and said, "Trivial customs and etiquette, don't have to mind, I wonder from that sunset in the west, what have you enlightened?"

FaXiang hesitated for a moment, said, "Disciple stood here for a day and night, watched the stars at night and saw the blue sky in the day, until this moment the bustling of the day receding, the rising sun sinking in the east, only the remnants of the light illuminating the west sky. Couldn't help but feel sorrow, life is just like that, time is just like that, all creations in heaven and earth are just like that, disciple for a moment actually did not know living between this Heaven and Earth, am so insignificantly small like a drop in the

ocean, what is the meaning of living?”

PuHong Master nodded and said, “Your intelligence indeed surpassed others, disciple. The living things in this heaven and earth, each and every of them has their destiny, thus although things are ever-changing, in the end unable to violate God’s will. You are able to comprehend this level of truth from the rising and setting of the sun, it is already amazing.”

FaXiang respectfully bowed to PuHong Master, said, “Thank you teacher for your praise, disciple dare not. Just that although disciple has comprehended that, the bewilderment in my heart instead became bigger. Disciple don’t understand, although one’s fate is destined, all creations in the end will wither and fall, these countless mortals working hard all of their lives, entangled in this world grudges and affections, what is it for? Buddha said to deliver all living creatures from torment, all living creatures can break the cycle of samsara and achieve enlightenment but all living creatures may not be willing to be delivered by Buddha, why is this so? Could it be that the Land of Ultimate Bliss in the west said by Buddha, no resentment no hatred no feelings no desire, can’t actually attract the mortal beings? Disciple is ignorant, teacher please guide me.”

Speaking, FaXiang bent his head low, clasped his palms together and chanted.

PuHong Master watched FaXiang for a long while, slowly nodded, a smile revealed on his face but he did not answer immediately, instead looked in the direction that FaXiang was gazing in just now, the west sunset, after watching it for a moment, said, “What you have just seen, is it this sunset in the west?”

FaXiang said, “Yes, disciple saw time flies past at this moment, the rising sun setting in the west, time no longer around, my heart is grieved and perplexed, therefore seek teacher’s advice.”

PuHong Master smiled and said, "In just a moment, this remnant of the sun is going to set completely, at that time, even this sunset glow, can no longer be seen."

FaXiang felt slightly puzzled, not knowing what PuHong Master meant and could only acknowledged, said, "That's right."

PuHong Master watched the west horizon, saw the sun slowly setting, the sky turning darker, dusk gradually approaching, indifferently said, "The evening sun is heartless, must not be asked to stay. But tomorrow morning, are you still able to see the rising sun?"

FaXiang's body shook, his heart seemed to be moved, for the moment he was speechless, his face revealed his pondering.

PuHong Master turned and looked at FaXiang, a faint smile on his face, he did not speak anymore.

The sky gradually darkened, the evening sun finally disappeared completely, moments later, a bright moon slowly rose from the east, moonlight like water, illuminating clear and bright light, spilling onto the mortal world.

In the night scene, Tian Yin Temple under the moonlight tranquil and beautiful, although no longer as bustling and lively like in the day but it had another kind of silent tranquil beauty.

And the Little Tian Yin Temple on Mt Meru, in that small tiny courtyard, teacher and disciple were silent, quietly stood in the courtyard, in the mountain

breeze which gently blew past and ruffled the corners of their clothes, quietly stood.

For an unknown length of time, the moon gradually moved to the center of the sky, in the quiet small courtyard, a light laughter was heard.

FaXiang had delight on his face, stepped forward a few steps, walked to the middle of the small courtyard, lifted his head and looked at the moon, saw the dazzling moonlight, shining directly on his bluish white monk robe, as if like frost.

FaXiang laughed, turned around, kneeled down before PuHong Master who had been smiling, clasped his palms together bowed and said, “Many thanks for teacher’s guidance, disciple comprehended.”

PuHong Master eyes were full of gratification, looking at the disciple kneeling before him, even though he had long cultivated to the realm where he remained indifferent whether favoured or humiliated, genuine happiness still shown on his face. He stretched his hand and gently patted FaXiang’s head, said three words in succession.

“Good!”

“Good!”

“Good!”

“You are naturally gifted, rarely seen in the world but even more importantly, is your attitude towards Buddhist philosophy and logic, you have another level

of wisdom. That time among the four of us, actually your PuZhi teacher uncle was the brightest, pity although he was intelligent but he chose the wrong path, delayed his Buddhist studies, wishfully sought for what longevity, eventually met with such a bad end. Today you are able to comprehend, it's your good fortune, it is also our Tian Yin Temple's fortune!"

FaXiang was stunned, raised his head and looked at PuHong Master, said, "Teacher, what do you mean by that, disciple do not quite understand?"

PuHong Master shook his head, first extended his hand to support FaXiang up, then the delight on his face gradually faded, faintly said, "These past years, your teacher me day and night is held up by secular tasks, as for Buddhist studies and comprehension, came to a standstill, instead held this secular undeserved reputation in vain, the struggles and fights for half a century, I actually can't give it up. That year when your PuZhi teacher uncle passed away, teacher me wanted to retire from the world, however there was no one to take over, facing this inheritance from our founders, although it is mere worldly possession but eventually can't abandon it casually. Now that there is you, teacher me can leave in peace."

FaXiang was shocked, his face turned pale, he had just stood up and immediately knelt down again, hurriedly said, "Teacher, what are you talking about, how can Tian Yin Temple leave you, moreover disciple also wants to accompany teacher day and night, listen to your teachings. Only beg teacher you must must not abandon disciple and the people of Tian Yin Temple and live in seclusion!" after speaking, he kowtowed unceasingly.

PuHong Master laughed in spite of himself and then sighed, pulled FaXiang up, sighed and said, "Foolish child, foolish child, how could there be a banquet that would never disperse in this world? But teacher's seclusion matter is not that urgent and it is not something that can be done in these days, you don't have to be anxious, I have to settle everything properly so that I can too set my

mind at rest.”

FaXiang was tearful but eventually he knew PuHong Master’s desire to retire was something he could not stop, fortunately like what his teacher said, although he wanted to but it was not that urgent, when there is a chance in the future, he would just have to try to persuade his teacher. Thinking about that, his tears then stopped, stood aside.

PuHong Master lifted his head and looked at the sky, saw the moonlight penetrating, cool and beautiful, he gazed for a long time, suddenly said, “Let’s go in and look at that little patron!”

FaXiang was taken aback, said, “What?”

PuHong Master indifferently said, “The rights and wrongs, gratitudes grudges feelings and enmities, no matter what, eventually it needs to end.”

After speaking, without further words, he headed to that small house, FaXiang slowly followed behind him, watched as that door came nearer and nearer, for some reason, he started to feel nervous.

A day and a night already, during that time, facing PuZhi teacher uncle, what exactly had Ghost Li done?

He, what else would he do too?

The answer, the moment when they lifted the curtain and pushed opened the wooden door, lightly stepped into the house, appeared before them.

The empty house, was still twinkling with 'Jade Ice Disc' silverish light.

What, nothing happened!

PuZhi's remains, still sat cross-legged on the Jade Ice Disc, and opposite him, Ghost Li, or perhaps it was Zhang Xiao Fan, sat cross-legged, backfacing PuHong Master and FaXiang, silently staring at PuZhi's face in the faint light.

PuHong Master inhaled deeply, was about to speak, suddenly felt movement behind him, turned and looked, FaXiang had gently pulled his robe, after he saw that PuHong Master had turned his head around, he signaled with his eyes, towards the place below Ghost Li.

PuHong Master turned and looked, couldn't help but frowned, saw that nothing had changed in the house, only on the ground that Ghost Li was sitting on, the surrounding radius of three chi, the brick ground were all cracked, numerous densely packed thin cracks covered the entire ground around him, the nearer the ground was to him, the denser the cracks were, before him within one chi radius, all of the bricks no longer cracked, instead had completely turned to powder.

This day and night, nobody knew what had happened to Ghost Li, or maybe perhaps, nobody would know it forever.

PuHong Master slowly walked to Ghost Li, glanced at the ground before him, using a calm voice said, "Patron, you have already stayed here for a day, have you thought carefully about it?"

Ghost Li slowly looked away from PuZhi remains, looked at PuHong Master, PuHong Master had a shock, Ghost Li's face was extremely pale, his face looked tired, although it was only a day but he looked as if he was travel-stained with vicissitudes of life, already experienced hundred years of the world.

PuHong Master clasped his palms together, gently chanted, "Amitabha!"

Ghost Li slowly stood up but halfway, his body trembled, seemed unstable, FaXiang and PuHong Master frowned, FaXiang was about to step forward to assist him but Ghost Li had already once again stood firm, breathing deeply then straightened his body again, faced PuHong Master.

One look and it could be seen that his body was frail but for some reason, he right now, looked big and tall, steadfast.

"Master..." his voice was slightly hoarse.

PuHong Master clasped his palms together, said, "Yes, what instructions does little patron has?"

"The deceased is buried into the ground to rest, you take his...PuZhi teacher's remains to be cremated and buried!"

PuHong Master and FaXiang both got a shock at the same time, looked at Ghost Li, the next moment, PuHong Master heaved a long sigh, seemed to sigh endlessly, quietly said, "Patron, have you looked past the matter?"

Ghost Li laughed sadly, glanced at PuZhi sitting cross-legged in the faint light, his facial muscle tensed and released, slowly said, "I only have one night of fate

with this master at that time, yet once kneeled before him, willingly kowtowed to him and called him 'Teacher'. He saved me before, also harmed me but without him, there would not be me, he is already dead. Although I am not a Buddhist disciple but I know Buddhists regarded reincarnation the most, he refused to be buried at his deathbed, it could be seen he was bitterly remorseful..."

Icy cold breath, indistinctly emitted from his hand, PuHong Master and FaXiang both felt it at the same time, that surging strange evil power.

"The intensity of the vicious energy from Sinister Orb's evil power, all these years I feel it and receive it in no small measure, more or less I can also understand the circumstances and cause then." Speaking till here, Ghost Li slowly turned around, headed towards the door, his hoarse voice from time to time coughed once or twice.

PuHong Master and FaXiang both at the same time behind him, clasped their palms and chanted, PuHong Master, following which said, "Little patron has a good heart, touching the heavens and earth, old monk here thank patron on behalf of my unworthy deceased junior brother PuZhi. Old monk will solemnly obey patron's instructions, in a little while will carry out the rituals and cremate junior brother's remains, in addition bury him, just that not sure before these, does patron has any other instructions?"

Ghost Li by now had already reached the door, his hand stretched out towards the door panel but the next moment, he paused, he seemed to freeze there. PuHong Master and FaXiang did not know what he was thinking, for the moment only looked at him, did not speak.

Ghost Li slowly turned around, again saw that aged and faintly anguish face. That face, he had only saw it twice in his life, several years of time, in that

instant surged up his heart, in the end, finally only leaving that pounding rain and violent wind night, his kind and gentle smile before him.

He was Ghost Li, or maybe Zhang Xiao Fan, who would know?

And who would care?

[Pu!]

That man, just at that entrance, facing that sitting on the jade disc faint light, an entire lifetime of suffering body remains, like when he was young, kneeled towards him, properly kowtowed three times, then, he lifted his head, respectfully, with infinite deep distress on his face, said, “Teacher!...”

...

Silence!

“Teacher, you...rest in peace!”

He quietly said, then stood up, without any more words, turned and opened the door, walked out.

Cultivators of the way like PuHong, FaXiang, for the moment were stunned and speechless, only watched Ghost Li walked out of this small house.

In the silence, FaXiang sighed, said, “He, he really has great wisdom and great

knowledge, great merciful heart ah! Really a rare man of the world, amitabha...”

PuHong Master turned around, looked at PuZhi, after a long time, clasped his palms together and said, “Junior brother, you can finally rest...eh?”

PuHong Master’s exclamation, surprised FaXiang, he quickly followed PuHong Master’s gaze direction and looked, immediately was also shocked, his face full of astonishment.

PuZhi who sat cross-legged on the disc, right now out of the sudden something was happening, in the spots of frost-like-snow-like silverish white faint light, PuZhi remains, like sandstone weathering into powder, little by little transformed into fine and hardly visible by naked eye, sands, slowly falling. And on his aged face, for some reason, the faint trace of anguish had disappeared, instead revealing a hint of gratified smile.

Watching this transformation rapidly speeding up, the entire body soon disappeared, PuHong Master’s eyes teared, clasped his palms and said, “Junior brother, junior brother, your wish is fulfilled, senior brother is happy for you. From today the Buddha sea is boundless, look out for yourself!”

PuZhi’s remains swiftly eroded, finally completely became white sands, from the silverish white faint light emitted by the Jade Ice Disc in the mid air, slowly fell. And also at this moment, after the Jade Ice Disc received those sands, the magical weapon brilliant light suddenly surged, in the tightly enclosed small house, suddenly with inexplicable power, a wind started blowing.

In the unseen world of spirits far away, there seemed to be Buddhist Sanskrit song, faintly travelling over.

The light from the Jade Ice Disc shone brighter and brighter, the speed of the wind became faster and faster, PuHong Master and FaXiang's robes flapped in the strong wind, both of them looked at each other stunned. Suddenly, a light sharp whistle was heard from the disc, resplendent light exploded, numerous powder immersed in the frost-snow-like faint light, scattering in all directions, a loud rumble, burst forth!

[Rumble!]

The dust flew, following which covered by a huge resplendent radiance, the surrounding walls of this small house were instantly destroyed by the Jade Ice Disc's strange brilliance, without leaving any traces, the moonlight shone high, clear bright like snow, reflecting on this mountain summit, in this quiet world, there was actually such a rare sight.

The Jade Ice Disc in this resplendent glory, slowly rose up from its original position, beside this magical weapon, silverish white powder-like dust danced, like a spirit pursuing over. In the courtyard outside the house, Ghost Li silently stood there, looking up at the sky, his face streaming with tears.

The Jade Ice Disc flew over by itself, circled Ghost Li three times, finally paused before Ghost Li.

Ghost Li stared at the bits of smoke and dust, clenching his teeth tightly, almost not himself.

Then, in that almost solidified radiance, in the paradise-like cool beautiful night, the Jade Ice Disc emitted a light sound, like ice breaking, the clear sound reverberated, before Ghost Li, this rare treasure of the world too transformed into numerous powder dust, under the moonlight sparkling bright, like falling

snow vast and various, magnificent and dazzling.

From far, the mountain breeze blew, numerous powder dust drifted with the wind, floated in the mid air, carried by the wind to the distant, finally gradually vanished...

，，

Chapter 183 - Haze

Qing Yun Mountain, Big Bamboo Peak.

Since the Qing Yun battle, many days had passed, the battlefield that was once the witness to monumental events, over time turned peaceful, all traces of the war, in the process of cleaning up, were quietly erased.

On that day, how many had lost their friends and loved ones, at Tong Tian Peak, piles of numerous bodies, from the summit till foot, like the said Hades prison.

Or perhaps it was luck! The least populated Big Bamboo Valley in this big battle, not one disciple died but almost all were injured, even Tian BuYi who remained in Big Bamboo Valley to guard and activate the Heaven Seal, appeared exhausted. Among the disciples, second disciple Wu DaYi, fourth disciple He DaZhi were the most seriously injured, they were still confined to bed until now but the good fortune in the midst of bad, their tendons or bones were not hurt, after Tian BuYi personally examined them, they only needed to rest and recuperate. Given time, it will not hindered their cultivation and practice.

But even so, in a battle of life and death where victory was narrowly won from the Beast Deity and did their best to save the common people from the catastrophe, everyone in Big Bamboo Valley, however looked extremely depressed. The disciples were unable to lift their spirits up after the war, even Tian BuYi kept frowning tightly too.

This day early in the morning, Tian BuYi was summoned by a disciple dispatched by Sect Head Reverend DaoXuan to visit Tong Tian Peak for discussion, after returning in the afternoon, on his round plump face, dark and heavy, his brows twisted so tightly together that it looked like it could not be apart again.

Around early afternoon, Tian BuYi ordered all Big Bamboo Valley disciples to Observed Silence Hall, even Wu DaYi and He DaZhi who were confined to bed, Tian BuYi sent men to assist them to the hall, sitting on the side.

In the usually cold and cheerless Observed Silence Hall, rarely was filled with people, Tian BuYi's wife SuRu also stood beside the seat of honour, her graceful bearing was still beautiful, just that her left hand was wrapped in white cloth bandage, obviously was also injured in the big battle.

Tian BuYi clasped his hands behind and paced a few times in the hall, glanced at the disciples who were either sitting or standing in a row, in a deep voice said, "Today I called all of you here, it's not for anything else but again for the Zhu Xian ancient sword matter."

The disciples were solemn, not many revealed shocked expressions, evidently most had expected it.

Tian BuYi met SuRu's gaze, again looked at the disciples, said, "This morning sect head reverend called me over again, only Little Bamboo Valley ShuiYue Master was there with me, as for what we talked, all of you can probably guessed. The matter of Zhu Xian ancient sword sustaining damage, no matter what, all of you have to keep it a secret, must never reveal the slightest."

The Big Bamboo Valley disciples looked at each other, finally first disciple

Song Daren coughed, said, "Teacher, you know the few of us well too, such an important matter, we will definitely rather die and dare not say a single word." Speaking till here, he hesitated for a moment, looked at Tian BuYi, suppressed his voice and said, "Teacher, not including you and your wife reminding us repeatedly, just sect head reverend and Tong Tian Peak side, including this time, it is already the fourth time word was sent over. Don't tell me...don't tell me they not only don't trust us, even teacher and teacher's wife they can't trust too?"

Tian BuYi frowned, suddenly bellowed, "How dare you! What are you, actually dare to preposterously presume your sect head reverend and elders!"

Song Daren's countenance changed, lowered his head and said, "Yes, disciple is wrong."

SuRu stood aside, sighed, walked over and tried to smooth things, said, "Alright, alright, these are all what sect head reverend instructed, and the matter of Zhu Xian ancient sword being damaged, the implications are too great, it's not surprising that sect head senior brother is so uptight over it and therefore it's understandable that he enquired more than a few times and instructed more than a few times."

Tian BuYi twisted his head to the side, did not speak, Song Daren and other disciples all lowered their heads said, "Disciples know now."

SuRu looked at the disciples, softly said, "I know all of you feel rather wronged, thought that sect head reverend and the other teacher elders don't trust you all, actually when it comes down to it, all of these are due to the gravity of the matter, no choice. After that war, for a moment our Qing Yun sect among the Good Faction was unrivalled, beat down all of the other fellow sects. But all of this, putting it bluntly, is because sect head reverend at Tong Tian

Peak, held Zhu Xian celestial sword in a vicious battle with the Beast Deity, defeated it in return for this. Everything our Qing Yun sect has today, the weight of this Zhu Xian celestial sword, I think all of you are as clear as me.”

SuRu smiled sadly, continued, “But it is never ever expected, that this sword will...” she paused, looked to be composing herself before she could continued, “That day outside Illusory Moon Cave, other than sect head reverend and the branch leaders teacher uncles who rushed over soon after, only Big Bamboo Valley disciples and a few Small Bamboo Valley female disciples witnessed the sword being damaged. Therefore for the sake of our sect’s reputation and prestige in the world, sect head reverend has much to worry about, and so instructed more than a few times, this is also what his role should do. Don’t take it to heart, only need to remember to bury this matter forever in your heart, understand?”

Song Daren and the others looked at each other, said, “Disciples understood, will solemnly obey teacher and teacher’s wife’s commands.”

SuRu turned to Tian BuYi, Tian BuYi was frowning, the grave expression was still on his plump face, did not seem to be consoled at all by SuRu’s words, only stretched out his hand and waved to his disciples, said, “What your teacher’s wife said, you all better bear in mind. Alright, dismissed!”

Song Daren and the rest bowed, turned and went out together, Wu DaYi and He DaZhi had difficulty walking, Song Daren, Du BiShu and the others helped to assist, soon, the group walked out, leaving only Tian BuYi and SuRu in the hall.

SuRu looked at Tian BuYi’s darkening face, slowly walked to his side, whispered, “What is it, is it that sect head senior brother is throwing his temper again?”

Tian BuYi grunted faintly, said, "I am not the only one he is throwing his temper at, even ShuiYue that kind of person, he scolded her too, much less me."

SuRu was surprised, said in astonishment, "What, sect head senior brother even scolded ShuiYue senior sister?"

A trace of impatient revealed on Tian BuYi's face, his pacing speed obviously increased, his brows frowning even tighter.

SuRu saw his expression, was quite worried but did not know what to say, could only say, "You too don't worry too much, sect head senior brother is only being anxious for the moment, therefore then..."

Tian BuYi abruptly looked up, interrupted loudly, "If he is really over-anxious, even if he scolds me a thousand and ten thousand times, I also won't care?"

SuRu lowered her head but swiftly lifted up, a shock look on his face, urgently asked, "What did you just say?"

Tian BuYi kept mumbling, pacing with quick steps in the hall, the anxiety look on his face turned more restless, indistinctly a trace of worry too.

SuRu was even more worried, anxiously said, "What do you mean exactly, quickly say it!"

Tian BuYi walked to SuRu, stopped his pacing, hesitating for a moment, in a

heavy voice said, "These few days, DaoXuan senior brother summoned ShuiYue and me many times, repeatedly warned that our sect disciples must keep the secret, this originally is understandable. However the recent few times, I noticed there is increasingly something wrong with DaoXuan senior brother."

SuRu was taken aback, said, "Something wrong, what do you mean?"

Tian BuYi frowned and said, "In the past, do you recall DaoXuan senior brother scolded anyone rashly?"

SuRu was silent, after a long time shook her head said, "Sect head senior brother has deep cultivation, upright moral conduct, does not show his delight and anger, how will he scold anyone rashly."

Tian BuYi nodded, said, "That's right, it is like that, even you also know this. But after the big battle, DaoXuan senior brother's personality seemed to change greatly, getting more and more impatient, these few times he summoned us over, forget it that he warned us repeatedly, but yet each time in the beginning he would be pleasant, until the end for some reason, because of some baffling trivial matters he would get furious, or reviling, or vent his anger, anyway..."

He shook his head, slowly looked up at SuRu, hesitated then walk nearer to SuRu, suppressed his voice, "I suspect, DaoXuan senior brother in the war with the Beast Deity is already hurt by the Zhu Xian sword's spiritual vicious energy, so he then..."

SuRu's countenance changed, quickly said, "Stop." She walked with quick steps to outside of the hall, glanced left and right, after checking that there was nobody around, walked back and quietly spoke to Tian BuYi, "This is our Qing Yun sect secret, you, you mustn't say baseless thing!"

Tian BuYi sighed and said, "The implications of this matter is so great, how would I dare to spout nonsense. But in that battle, DaoXuan senior brother in order to win, disregarded my repeated dissuasion, forced opened the Heaven Seal that sealed Qing Yun seven mountain summits spiritual energies for generations, amplifying Zhu Xian ancient sword's power. Just that each time I recall the final instructions our ancestors left, stated that the Zhu Xian sword's vicious energy is too violent, the death aura defy the natural order, classified it as an ominous object, I cannot turn a blind eye and do nothing. Today when I came back, parting with ShuiYue at Tong Tian Peak, although we have never get along but when we looked at each other before parting, I felt that we both sensed something. I suppose that ShuiYue, must be thinking the same thoughts as me, however because of the gravity of this situation, both of us do not dare to say it out that's all."

SuRu was silent for a long time, her voice slightly hoarse, said, "Although it is so but in the end it is still the Zhu Xian sword. Now that Zhu Xian is already damaged, even if sect head senior brother is unfortunately hurt, but firstly there is no basis, secondly his cultivation is divine, only after time passes, most likely he will slowly come to realize it and probably will resolve it by himself!"

Tian BuYi's grave expression did not dispel the slightest, faintly said, "Hope it is so, if not, with his status in Qing Yun, in the event should something happen, the entire Qing Yun... really don't know how to resolve it."

SuRu pondered and then also sighed helplessly, dejectedly said, "Forget it, this is also not something we can control, don't worry about it too much. There is also one more thing, I have been wanting to ask, after Zhu Xian sword was damaged, how was it taken care of?"

Tian BuYi said, "I have enquired about this from a senior brother who knew

about it, heard that DaoXuan senior brother reprimanded everyone not to reveal it to the outsiders, immediately picked up Zhu Xian sword which broke into two, walked into Illusory Moon Cave and forbid anyone from entering the cave. So until today, nobody knows what happened to that ancient sword? Or maybe, there is still hope of repairing it?”

Tian BuYi spoke the last sentence to himself but followed that with a shake of his head and a bitter laugh, evidently even he himself also could not believe that. After a few bitter laughs, he spoke, “We can’t do anything about the sword, instead the trip to Tong Tian Peak today, other than being admonished for no reason, I also heard a strange thing.”

SuRu was surprised, said, “What strange thing?”

Tian BuYi shrugged, said, “You won’t believe it too, in that battle, many of our disciples and elders died, currently in Tong Tian Peak Crystal Hall a public memorial service is being conducted. But our DaoXuan senior brother, each day only shows up for a moment at Crystal Hall and then disappear, instead he goes to the Founders Ancestral Hall everyday to keep vigil, isn’t that strange?”

SuRu was stunned, asked in surprise, “Keeping vigil, what happened at Founders Ancestral Hall, don’t tell me a senior elder has passed away?”

Tian BuYi shook his head, sneered and said, “Where would there be any senior elder, I heard a few junior disciples secretly conversing, it was an old man who had kept watch and maintained Founders Ancestral Hall for ten over years, for some reason coincidentally died on that day. How he died, that nobody knows, only that when DaoXuan senior brother found out, for the moment was dumbstruck, the next moment instead flew into a rage, heard that for several days he was beside himself, in the end he insisted to place this old man’s spiritual tablet in Founders Ancestral Hall, but the strangest thing is, the

spiritual tablet that he places in the Founders Ancestral Hall, is actually blank!”

SuRu looked even more perplexed after hearing it, shook her head said, “This, this what is this exactly, don’t tell me sect head senior brother is really, really somehow muddleheaded?”

Tian BuYi sneered, said, “Whether he is muddleheaded or not, nobody knows, anyway someone did dissuade him before but he refused to listen. And he did not take a good look at those disciples’ spiritual tablets in Crystal Hall, instead stared in a trance at that blank spiritual tablet in Founders Ancestral Hall. If he continues like this, I think this Qing Yun sect, sooner or later something will happen, sooner or later it will be destroyed at his hands...”

SuRu was silent, after a long time, faintly sighed, looked out of the hall, saw on this quiet afternoon, the outside was empty too, only the distant clear blue sky.

The mountain breeze blew past, bamboo rustling sounds were heard indistinctly, but for some reason, it instead increased the feeling of loneliness.

Qing Yun Hill, Tong Tian Peak, Founders Ancestral Hall.

Here was as tranquil and solemn as usual, the lofty hall was still towering, surrounded still with lush green forest, as if the earth-shocking big battle that happened on Qing Yun Hill few days ago, had no impact at all here.

Other than the missing old man who swept the grounds, and on that dim altar, in a unremarkable area among the numerous tablets, an additional unfamiliar and empty spiritual tablet.

Lin JingYu silently kneeled before that empty tablet, wearing mourning clothes, before him was a fire pan, on the table two white candles were lit, three sticks of joss sticks, faint smoke curling up, gently floating, soon merging into the offering incense, inseparable.

Lin JingYu looked grieved, his lips closed tightly together, woodenly kneeling on the ground, slowly placing paper money into the fire pan, watched them slowly curled and turned yellow, gradually reducing to ashes, then slowly placing another fresh set.

In-between, he looked up frequently to that tablet. When the old man's tablet was placed into the Founders Ancestral Hall, it was Qing Yun sect head Reverend DaoXuan solitary insistence, the other branch leaders disapproved, however all along Qing Yun sect head's words carried weight, in addition after Reverend DaoXuan defeated the Beast Deity, his reputation was even more prestigious, the rest of them saw that he was determined and so followed his wishes.

Just that although this matter was unexpected for Lin JingYu, but what followed afterwards, was even more shocking, Reverend DaoXuan actually placed an empty tablet in the hall, as for that, Lin JingYu was even bold enough to ask Reverend DaoXuan who came to offer prayers.

Unexpectedly Reverend DaoXuan only indifferently asked in return, rendering Lin JingYu speechless, "Then do you know his name?"

Lin JingYu was stunned, although he had trained under this mysterious elder for ten years but as for this elder's past, he had never revealed a single detail to him, right now for Lin JingYu to say any of it, he was really helpless. But looking

at Reverend DaoXuan, evidently he knew something of this old man's past but he did not intend to reveal.

Lin JingYu although had suspicions but after all he did not dare to be presumptuous before Sect head Reverend, he could only back away silently. Anyway to him, this elder although his tablet was empty but his voice and face were clearly etched in his heart, not the slightest faded.

The public memorial service at the front mountain, he had also been there to pay homage, but he still felt that, over there numerous disciples offered prayers but this elder, although had unparalleled skills but left quietly like that, no matter what he had to send him off, and Reverend DaoXuan also seemed to implicitly allowed him here, to handle the funeral arrangements for this old man. And with his position as sect head, he ignored the surprised looks from the sect disciples, frequently came to visit this elder's tablet, as such it aroused many speculations but Lin JingYu couldn't care less.

Right now, footsteps were heard behind him again, these past few days, Lin JingYu was already familiar with the footsteps sounds, once he heard it he knew it was Reverend DaoXuan.

He rose and turned, quietly said, "Sect Head."

Reverend DaoXuan slowly walked into the hall.

The hall was dimly lit, although Lin JingYu had been there all along but for the moment couldn't see DaoXuan's expression clearly, he saw DaoXuan's figure in a blur, standing in the shadows, quietly looking at that blank tablet.

For some reason, Lin JingYu watched that blurred figure in the darkness, suddenly felt something was wrong but as for what it was, he could not say it, just that an inexplicable palpitation, indistinctly felt tensed.

“He, still well?” Reverend DaoXuan finally spoke, his voice seemed rather deep, somehow hoarse, and seemed to exert force and suppressing something, very different from his usual tone.

Lin JingYu felt even more bewildered but still answered, “Disciple has been keeping vigil day and night for senior, burning incense on schedule, never once neglected.”

The person in the shadows seemed to move, slowly said, “He has you who is sincerely sending him off, his teachings to you for ten years is not in vain. He he...” His laughter was cold, felt eerie in this dim hall, “Not knowing if I was dead too...”

He suddenly stopped, seemed to sense that he had said the wrong things, Lin JingYu naturally did not dare to speak further, stood there with his hands by the side.

The hall sank into silence, after a moment, Reverend DaoXuan said, “Leave me for a moment, I have some words which I need to tell him privately.”

Lin JingYu was surprised, acknowledged and said, “Yes.” Speaking, he strided out.

Once out of the hall, standing on the empty ground in sunlight, Lin JingYu immediately felt invigorated, he then realized, just now in that hall, he seemed

to feel a pressure.

He walked one round around this empty ground, waited for about an hour but still did not see Reverend DaoXuan, while he was wondering, he turned and saw a back figure disappearing on the small path heading towards Illusory Moon Cave. Ever since the war ended, Illusory Moon Cave had again become a forbidden ground, the only one who could enter, naturally was only Reverend DaoXuan.

Lin JingYu took a few more glances, shook his head, turned and walked back to the hall. He went to that blank tablet, saw before it, three thin joss sticks were offered again, and on the fire pan, it seemed to have many more ashes, like someone had burned some paper money in it.

Lin JingYu contemplated, slowly raised his head, only saw that empty tablet was still quietly standing in that secluded corner, in silence...

,

Chapter 184 - Wordless Jade Wall

The bell tolled, again reverberated around Mt Meru, announcing the start of another new day.

The rising morning sun, a small little halo peeking out from the east horizon, spilling a thread of light into the world. Early morning on the mountain path, it was already full of commoners, following the path and stairs towards the imposing temple, many of them carrying joss sticks and candles for worship, plain devotion on their faces.

Among them some families also brought their children along for prayers, the children innocent and pure, they were not tired from walking on the mountain path instead many young ones jumped around and ran ahead and back, looking excited.

The morning mist had not dispersed completely, lingered outside Tian Yin Temple, the damp moisture could be still felt in the air. The monks whom had risen early had completed their mandatory morning lessons, right now were sweeping the courtyard, gently sweeping the trees leaves which had fallen during the night, to the side.

The entire Tian Yin Temple, right now appeared solemn and peaceful, immersing in the faint mountain breeze, accompanying the breeze, there was still a faint fragrance from the leaves.

The bell peals drifted, guiding the people below the mountain, also hovered in the temple, awaking the people who were sound asleep.

He from slumber, slowly awakened.

How long had it been, sleeping at ease, waking up calmly, even in his sleep, there wasn't even dreams, only deep sleep, peaceful deep sleep.

So, this was such a feeling of happiness.

He quietly listened to the bell tolled, as if the tolls were not drifting in the vast world outside the house, instead in his heart, he even had this feeling that the bell, tolled especially for him.

Until, the tolling of the bell gradually ceased, he then slowly got up, opened the room door and walked out, lifting his head, expanded his chest, inhaled deeply.

The damp air in the mountain gushed into his heart, on his face, a rare expression of satisfaction slowly appeared, he really wished to continue standing like that, just that at that moment, a sound was heard outside the courtyard entrance.

“Zhang patron, you have awakened?”

Ghost Li turned over, saw FaXiang smiling, standing not far from the door entrance looking at him, then nodded, said, “Morning!”

FaXiang assessed him with two glances, smiled and said, “Patron after this period of quiet recuperation, most of your injuries have already healed, just

that it is said the initial recovery from a serious illness, thirty percent it will relapse, patron still need to watch out for yourself. Mt Meru topography is rather elevated, the days and nights are different from the secular land, the chill is heavy here, patron must be careful.”

Ghost Li nodded, said, “Thanks for the concern, I will remember it. Also, not sure if abbot PuHong Master is free today, I hope to visit master, will like to bother him for a moment.”

FaXiang smiled and said, “Such a coincidence, I am carrying my teacher’s instructions, came especially to invite Zhang patron to meet teacher after your morning meal.”

Ghost Li was surprised, said, “Why, abbot master is also looking for me?”

FaXiang said, “This little monk won’t know but guess it would be to enquire after your injuries!”

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, said, “Since it is so, I will go pay a visit to abbot master in just a moment.”

FaXiang brought his palms together, said, “Patron do not have to hurry, abbot has especially instructed just now, not to hasten patron. Teacher is still at Little Tian Yin Temple meditation room, if patron is free later, just go ahead by yourself.”

FaXiang smiled faintly, said, “In Tian Yin Temple, only if patron wish to, patron can go anywhere you want to, there is nothing to be concerned of.”

Ghost Li's heart was moved, looked at FaXiang, FaXiang's words indistinctly had obvious subtle meaning, as if they already treated him like one of Tian Yin Temple people, or maybe, in those Tian Yin Temple monks' hearts, he who once prostrated before PuZhi's seat, eventually was also considered one of Tian Yin Temple?

FaXiang turned and retreated, Ghost Li watched his back figure, silent for a moment and then returned to his own meditation room.

From the moment he stepped foot onto the summit, Ghost Li involuntarily paused his body slightly, to him, this was really a place that stirred all sorts of different emotions in him.

Under the morning sun, Little Tian Yin Temple simple and unadorned situated ahead, the low walls, small courtyards, where were the signs of that soul-stirring night?

Looking back, gazing, indistinct human voices again travelled over from Tian Yin Temple, the prosperous joss sticks offered, a bustling sight, or maybe, those people who were living peacefully, instead were happier?

He quietly turned around, walked into Little Tian Yin Temple, soon, the unique quietness of this place enveloped him, in the whole courtyard, seemed like only his footsteps reverberated.

When he reached that meditation room entrance, Ghost Li stopped, subconsciously glanced towards the back of the yard, that small path was blocked by the boundary walls but he could still see that it extended towards the back, just that at this moment, that last courtyard, most probably only a blank slate remained!

Like, humans who came empty handed, left empty handed.

He knocked on the door, very quickly, PuHong Master's voice was heard, "Is it Zhang little patron, quickly come in!"

Ghost Li faintly acknowledged, pushed the door opened and walked in. In the room right now, PuHong Master was alone and sitting on his meditation room, a smile on his face greeting Ghost Li who had just walked in.

Ghost Li nodded to PuHong Master, said, "Master, I heard from FaXiang that you are looking for me?"

PuHong Master instead asked, "That's right but I heard that little patron happens to also have something to discuss with me?"

Ghost Li pondered for a moment, nodded and said, "Yes, actually it's not a big deal, mainly that I have troubled you all for many days, now that my injuries are almost healed, I really should not continue to trouble."

PuHong Master smiled, said, "Little patron you're too formal."

Ghost Li shook his head and said, "That day at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, master has already saved my life, and afterwhich here, master helped to undo the knot in my heart, I am really beyond grateful. Just that I am afterall from Evil sect, in the long run, inevitably this will hurt the clean reputation of your honorable temple."

PuHong solemnly said, "Little patron, I have a word, not sure if I should say it?"

Ghost Li said, "Master please say."

PuHong nodded his head and said, "Since so, forgive this old monk direct words. Looking at little patron's physiognomy and complexion, you are absolutely not an utterly evil disciple, degenerated into the Evil Way, it is because your fate dictates it so, definitely not little patron's mistake. And little patron has such a predestined relationship with PuZhi junior brother, which is also a predestined affinity with our Buddha, and even so an affinity with Tian Yin Temple. Only if little patron is willing to turn back to the shore, Tian Yin Temple will naturally do our utmost to shield you, not to mention Qing Yun sect, even if the world's Good Faction all come together, our temple will not fear the slightest. Buddha said, enlightening a person is utmost merit, little patron since you are a person with affinity, why not put down the secular baggage, receive this peace and be at ease, isn't this better?"

Having said that, his expression earnest, looking at Ghost Li.

Ghost Li naturally did not expect PuHong would say such words, for the moment was stunned. These few days in this Tian Yin Temple, his mind and heart was completely different from the past, main difference was he was comfortable and at peace, deep in his heart, he very much liked it that way, just that men like him, in the end still had matters he could not put down.

He was silent for a long time before slowly raising his head, bowing deeply to PuHong Master, said, "I know, master is sincere to me, deliberately enlighten the ignorant and stubborn, however I am a secular man, bobbing along with the waves, in the secular world, there are even more countless of worries but yet I am unable to give them up. Master's good intentions, forgive my inability to accept."

Having said that, he heaved a long sigh, about to turn around and walk off, PuHong Master instead said, "Patron don't go yet."

Ghost Li said, "Master, is there anything else?"

PuHong Master looked like he was contemplating, slowly said, "Patron's heart is like a huge rock, this old monk will not dare to force too but if patron is willing to, our humble temple has a request, hope that patron will grant it."

Ghost Li was slightly surprised, said, "What is it, abbot master there is no harm saying it."

PuHong Master looked at him, said, "PuZhi junior brother met with such an ending, although it is because of his own sins, an unforgivable crime but tracing it to the source, that evil object, 'Sinister Orb' cannot avoid responsibility. And now that PuZhi junior brother had already passed away but this evil object is still on patron's body, encroaching onto little patron!"

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, said, "Master meaning..."

PuHong Master brought his palms together, said, "Little patron don't get me wrong, this old monk has no other intention. This Sinister Orb contains strong evil power, harming others and yourself. That time after PuZhi junior brother passed away, for several years this old monk grieves and laments, never once did not think about that, received Heaven's bequeathed sympathy, actually thought of an idea, maybe it is a method to restrain Sinister Orb this type of evil object's vicious energy. Not sure if little patron is willing to try?"

Ghost Li's countenance changed, the Sinister Orb although had infinite power but its vicious energy during these ten over years, made him suffered much, even his character, seemed to be changed gradually by it. Sometimes he also recalled PuZhi's situation, each time he thought of himself being controlled by this vicious energy too, he couldn't help but break out in cold sweat. However this matter could not be told to others after all, although he was worried but he did not have any good solution to it, unexpectedly today upon hearing PuHong Master's words, it instantly hit the matter close to his heart.

Ghost Li thought for a long time, then slowly said, "Didn't expect that abbot master has such a good plan, not sure how is it to be done?"

PuHong Master's face was serious, said, "The method is actually simple, frankly, it is only using the Buddha's remarkable powers, boundless mercy, to degrade all of this world's vicious energies. In the rear mountain of Tian Yin Temple, there is a 'Wordless Jade Wall', more than seven zhang tall, smooth like jade, it is said that Tian Yin Temple founder attained enlightenment under that Wordless Jade Wall, and from then started Tian Yin Temple."

Ghost Li frowned, did not understand the relations it had with the Sinister Orb, heard PuHong continued on, said, "It is from that realm, from the centre of Mt Meru, the Buddhist energy is the most solemn and propitious, little patron only need to sit there for a period of time and in addition, I will lead a group of monks to form the 'Vajra Ring' formation, with such strong propitious energy, maybe it can suppress the Sinister Orb's vicious energy that is in your body, we do not know."

Ghost Li's body trembled, he did not expect that PuHong Master had such exceptional foresight, had saw through that the internal channels in his body was in a disorder. After contemplating for a moment, decisively said, "Master's good intentions, I received it. Since then, I will sit under the Wordless Jade Wall for a few days. Just that after which, I will treat it as farewell and leave."

PuHong Master brought his palms together, nodded his head, smiled and said, "Patron just be assured, our humble temple will definitely not prevent patron."

Ghost Li nodded his head, turned and walked out. PuHong Master watched his back figure disappeared, sighed, muttered to himself, "Junior brother, if your spirit is in Heaven, you have to bless and protect this child..."

The Wordless Jade Wall was as what PuHong Master said, even though it was located at Mt Meru rear mountain, Ghost Li assumed it would be easy to find, however on that day, following FaXiang and FaShan who led the way, there was no sign of it after walking for almost an hour.

Ghost Li felt bewildered in his heart but did not speak it out, instead it was FaXiang who was attentive and noticed the puzzled look on Ghost Li's face, guessed his thoughts and smiled, said, "Zhang patron, are you thinking why is the Wordless Jade Wall so far away?"

Ghost Li did not deny, said, "Boldly asking senior brother, where exactly is this Wordless Jade Wall, and how did it come about?"

FaXiang laughed while walking, "This is quite a long story. When did the Wordless Jade Wall appear, naturally this nobody knows, it is only known that thousand years ago, when Tian Yin Temple founder was still an itinerant monk, travelling around, one day for some reason, strayed into Mt Meru lofty ridges and towering mountains and was lost, unable to get out. Having no choice, our founder walked randomly in this forest, it was also predestined Buddha affinity, the smooth like jade stone wall was spotted by him. At that moment, our founder was already hungry and thirsty and exhausted, and so rested under the

wall.”

FaXiang paused, Ghost Li could not help but asked, “Oh, then what happened later?”

A bifurcation appeared in the mountain path before FaXiang, FaXiang headed to the left and led Ghost Li down a slope, at the same time said, “It was said that our founder sat under the jade wall for three days and three nights, for some reason, gradually from unbearable hunger and thirst to a composed state, his heart at ease and his mind calmed, entered into our Buddhist Great Perfection Realm, after three days, he attained enlightenment under the Wordless Jade Wall. Other than that, it was said...”

FaXiang turned and smiled mysteriously to Ghost Li, continued, “It was further said, under the wall, our founder actually comprehended our Tian Yin Temple supreme true way Great Brahman Wisdom which is passed down from generations to generations, and so established Tian Yin Temple’s position among the world’s cultivation sects.”

Ghost Li was stunned for a moment, shook his head, felt the legend of this Tian Yin Temple founder was quite amusing, several parts of the story felt unreal, actually also somehow absurd. Initially towards PuHong Master’s method this time, he had some expectations but after hearing FaXiang narration of the story, he instead felt disheartened, could not help but secretly sighed.

FaXiang was observant, saw Ghost Li’s change of expressions, only smiled and continued to lead the way, did not speak, as for the tall and sturdy FaShan monk behind them who remained silent all the way, also did not speak.

The three of them followed along the mountain path for about an hour,

walked among the twisting lofty mountains, unknowingly had already left Tian Yin Temple far behind them, unable to see it again.

Ghost Li did not expect that the mountain terrain behind Tian Yin Temple was actually more extensive than he had imagined but watching the peaks and ridges, layers of green, the mountain breeze blew gently, along the way odd rocks towered, all kinds of strange things, or steep cliff waterfalls, pouring from the sky, rumbling and looking like jade belt.

Along the way, he felt his chest lifted, looking at the beautiful scenery in the surroundings, he instead did not feel that depressed anymore.

Suddenly FaXiang was heard saying, "It will be ahead."

Ghost Li was surprised, looked ahead but saw the path was still winding, beside the path was dense forest, the other side weeds and brambles, outside three chi was a cliff, where was the more than seven zhang tall Wordless Jade Wall that they said?

"Boldly asking senior brother, where is this jade wall?"

Smiling, FaXiang walked a few steps ahead, came to that cliff, looking back, said, "It is here."

Ghost Li went to his side, standing on the cliff, he looked up, saw the mist permeating below, like surging waves, turbulent, seemed like a valley. And an indistinct mountain silhouette could be seen in the distance, but it was at a very remote place.

Ghost Li pondered, turned and said to FaXiang, “Don’t tell me it's in this valley?”

FaXiang smiled and said, “It is below our feet.”

Ghost Li was stunned, FaXiang was already laughing and said, “Let’s go down!”

Speaking, FaXiang leapt down, FaShan followed after.

Ghost Li standing on the cliff above, deliberated a moment but also jumped down.

Soul-devouring in the mist, flashed with dark-green light, slowly enveloped Ghost Li, protected him and slowly descended.

The mist seemed peculiar, appeared dense but not dense, threadlike entangling together, allowing the mountain breeze to ruffle it but it did not show any signs of dispersing. During the descend, Ghost Li looked towards the mountain wall but only saw white mist in front.

Feeling bewildered, he grasped and urged the Soul-devouring to go nearer to the mountain wall, he only saw layers of cloud-like mist scattering, slipping away to both sides before his eyes, just when he was focusing, suddenly, a silhouette appeared in front of him.

Ghost Li was startled and quickly paused his body, looking carefully, he received quite a big shock, before himself he saw someone who looked exactly like himself, with a shock look looking at himself.

That person's gaze was deep, his face appeared to show the vicissitudes of life, in his hand was also holding a Soul-devouring evil stick. While Ghost Li was in shock, a Sanskrit song was suddenly heard from the sky, like a heavy drum beat, heavily reverberated in his ear.

Following this Sanskrit song, a solemn and dignified force instantly charged up from an unknown realm below his feet, like an enormous wave shooting up to the sky and the surrounding mist immediately rolled up into it, consuming that figure completely. Ghost Li felt a pain in his heart, the ice-cold feeling in his body actually moved on its own accord, like repelling violently against this Buddhist force, retaliating back on its own.

In his shock, Ghost Li again felt that other than the evil power from the Sinister Orb stirring in his body, like being influence by this Buddhist energy, his own cultivation Great Brahman Wisdom also seemed unwilling to submit to another force, surged up, seemed intending to have a show-down with the Sinister Orb evil power.

Before even starting, his body already had such great impact, the energy in this realm, was really inconceivable. Ghost Li was shocked, for a moment forgotten about the strange silhouette, only urged his own cultivation, protected his heart and slowly descended.

Soon, the fog gradually thinned, the scene below his feet immediately became clear, it was a small stone platform, the surface smooth, a radius of three zhang, sparse trees, surrounded it were several Tian Yin Temple monks sitting around. These monks were either sitting near or far, in no order but it seemed to have implicit meaning, faint Buddhist power flowed within, indistinctly forming a formation.

Ghost Li carefully looked, suddenly felt somehow familiar, carefully thinking, he recalled an image of a Buddhist mantra primitive character.

Ghost Li very quickly reached the ground, looking around, saw FaXiang and FaShan were already sitting among the monks, clasping their palms together in silent, with their heads bowed and not looking at him. And the leader of the monks, was Tian Yin Temple abbot PuHong Master, sitting below on his left, whom Ghost Li had saw him before, was PuFang holy monk who had demonstrated his great martial prowess on Qing Yun Hill.

Instead it was a monk who was sitting below on his right, looked rather weird, Ghost Li had never seen him before but looking at his haggard face, complexion sallow, like a dying person, and his aged appearance, was even far older than PuHong Master. Just that he did not know who this person was but he was ranked together with PuHong and PuFang these two holy monks, evidently was a great figure in Tian Yin Temple.

Ghost Li without further words, bowed to PuHong Master, PuHong Master clasped his palms back in greetings, smiled and said, "Little patron has come."

Ghost Li nodded, "Yes but what does abbot wants me to do?"

PuHong Master pointed to the platform, said, "None other, little patron only has to sit on that platform, meditate and sit for a few days."

Ghost Li nodded his head, looked back to that platform and then looked up again at the surrounding, saw the thick mist lingering above but where was the legendary Wordless Jade Wall? He could not help but ask, "Abbot Master I will like to ask, where is the Wordless Jade Wall?"

PuHong Master smiled, "Little patron will see it in a moment."

Ghost Li was surprised, nodded his head, turned around and was about to sit on that platform when suddenly a faint sharp whistle was heard in the sky, it was wind, it was the howl of a beast, traversing the clouds and mist, a beam of brilliant light following closely behind, tore opened a crack in the thick mist, shone down onto Ghost Li.

Ghost Li retreated a step back, looked up and saw within the valley rumbling sounds, like undulating peals of thunders, waves suddenly formed in the thick mist like sea, from gentle risings turning into huge waves, billows undulating, following which many more cracks appeared, the thick mist also became thinner and thinner, revealing beams after beams, rays and rays of light.

Facing this spectacular sight, Ghost Li watched for a long time, the thick mist finally dispersed completely, light shone down, instantly resplendent light filled the world, nobody could look at the light directly. After a moment, it gradually dimmed.

When Ghost Li once again opened his eyes, he got a shock, saw the legendary Wordless Jade Wall.

It was just In front of him, behind that small stone platform, under the cliff, a precipice that looked like mirror, hanging down perfectly straight, more than seven zhang high, more than four zhang wide, the texture like jade but not jade, extremely smooth, reflecting the beauty of heaven and earth, near and far mountains, actually were all in this jade wall. And Ghost Li with the other Tian Yin Temple monks under this wall, looked insignificant like ants.

Compared with the creations of heaven and earth, humans were so tiny!

Ghost Li was silent, after a long time let out a long breath, without a word, went up to the platform sat cross-legged down, did not look at anyone, took a deep breath and closed his eyes, sat there like that motionless.

PuHong Master watched Ghost Li for a long time, turned to the monks behind and nodded his head.

Dozens of Tian Yin Temple monks, including PuHong Master, PuFang holy monk and that mysterious monk beside PuHong, FaXiang, FaShan etc, brought their palms together and chanted.

Dozens of faint golden lights, slowly rose, indistinct Sanskrit song, seemed to come from the sky!

Suddenly, golden light increased greatly, in the monks formation, golden light flowed, dignified Buddhist energy, the golden light from the monks turned more and more dazzling, after a moment deafening rumbles were heard, a golden resplendent large 'Buddha' incantation appeared above the formation, slowly rising.

The Sanskrit song became louder and louder, heaven and earth solemn, that golden Buddha word rose higher and higher, slowly reached the mid-air, erected. In the sunlight of the horizon, glowing more and more resplendently.

As if activated by the Buddhist mantra, on that precipice, on the smooth jade wall a reflection of the Buddhist word slowly appeared but it was not like the usual mirror, instead started from small to big, gradually emitting golden light, the Buddhist word image slowly appearing and when it grew large on that jade wall, the Buddhist mantra in the air seemed to dim down.

Very quickly, the Buddhist mantra on that jade wall grew almost bigger than the one in the air, the entire wall dazzled with golden light, sparkling, accompanying the waves of Sanskrit song. Suddenly, on that jade wall a faint ray of golden Buddha light revealed, slowly shone out, enveloped Ghost Li who was sitting cross-legged.

Ghost Li's body trembled, a trace of pain shown on his face but he did not open his eyes, instead tolerated it. Very quickly, the pain expression on his face disappeared, sitting motionless.

The jade wall shone out faint Buddhist light, did not have any changes, the golden light slowly glimmered, an indescribable dignified feeling.

And surrounding Tian Yin Temple monks' countenances did not change too, chanting softly, the light on their formation flowed slowly, supporting the Buddhist mantra in the air.

Time flowed, quietly passed by like that...

After three days, the Buddhist mantra on the jade wall did not show the slightest sign of weakening, the faint Buddhist light shining, still enveloping Ghost Li.

Ghost Li's face was calm, these three days to him seemed the same, like the first day he arrived, instead it was the monks below PuHong Master, although the formation did not change but their faces faintly showed tiredness.

PuHong Master from his meditation slowly opened his eyes, looked to Ghost

Li who was still sitting peacefully, after a long while sighed quietly, “Foolish child, foolish child, in the end still unable to let go?”

Speaking, he shook his head gently, sighed incessantly.

PuFang holy maid who was sitting on his left side lightly said, “We worked so hard, arranged this Buddhist Subdue Devil formation, first is to help him degrade Sinister Orb vicious energy, even more importantly, to resolve the demons in his heart. But his heart is tightly locked up, hard to eliminate the demons in his heart, even if the Sinister Orb vicious energy is neutralized, who knows one day if he will also turn into a demon too? The things that we did today, most likely are instead taking the side of the evildoer!”

PuHong Master frowned, his face darkened, said, “Junior brother, this young man has deep affinity with our Tian Yin Temple, no matter what we cannot give up lightly, why did you say such words?”

PuFang’s countenance changed, brought his palms together, “Senior brother is right to lecture. I am not having any prejudice towards this young man, it is because of that time...that scene of our senior and junior brothers dying, my heart is in sorrow, I really do not wish to see him taking the evil route again. Junior brother spoke inappropriately, senior brother please chastise.”

PuHong Master’s face eased, said, “Not that I have not thought the same way as you, if not I would not lay down this Subdue Devil formation, deliberately used Buddhist true way great ability to enlighten him. But before this jade wall, he seemed to too...”

While speaking, suddenly in the tranquil and solemn mountain valley a loud sound issued out of thin air, the entire jade wall seemed to tremble once, the

Buddhist mantra in the air and on the wall seemed to be shaking too.

PuHong Master and the other monks turned pale, in shock for a moment, quickly hastened their spells, unexpectedly a pain expression appeared on Ghost Li's face, the Soul-devouring which had been suppressed by Buddhist power these three days suddenly lighted up, a burst of black energy instantly covered his face.

PuHong Master did not expect that the Sinister Orb's evil power was so strong, after being suppressed for three days and three nights, it still had strength to resist, he was able to call everyone to hold on to the formation, Ghost Li who was unable to bear it any longer, issued a cry and leapt up.

The Buddhist mantra in the air suddenly dispersed, Ghost Li raised his head and made a long cry in the air, his demeanour like mad, at the same time turned and looked at the jade wall, saw that in addition, it had rays of red lights, the golden light and red rays, fighting incessantly.

While the lights were in chaos, strange forms varied and brilliant, a shock of thunder heard out of sudden in the horizon, the sky darkened down.

Winds and clouds rolled over from all directions, on the smooth jade wall, from top to bottom, spots like deep engraving, a row of characters appeared, other than that, numerous golden crude incomprehensible words, like seething on the jade wall between the golden light red rays glimmering and quivering, a dazzling display. And that row of words instead were unmistakably clear, it was --

Heaven and Earth heartless, treats all living things as straw dogs!

'''

Chapter 185 - Heaven Punishment

On that Wordless Jade Wall, numerous golden crude words appeared, such bizarre thing, even PuHong Master and all of the other Tian Yin Temple monks had never seen it before. On that Jade Wall, majestic auras rose at times, glimmered with dark red light at times, solemn and dignified golden light mixed with strange unfathomable red light, gave one a feeling of suffocation.

Ghost Li in the air, lifted his head up and gave a long scream, he looked like he was in pain, his eyes then shifted to that Wall, saw the wavering seething words. Around him, the Soul-devouring strange light turned brighter and brighter, the evil power emitting from his body, also turned stronger and stronger.

Even the monks on the ground, felt a never-before ice cold energy, coming from Ghost Li's body, enveloping them. These three days after being grinded by the Buddhist formation, the Sinister Orb's evil power did seemed to weaken, instead it seemed to trigger all of its power out, unprecedentedly powerful.

PuHong Master seemed anxious, right now was the critical point of the situation, his expression like the weather in the horizon, changing constantly, unable to decide his move.

PuFang instead was worrying, he looked at Ghost Li who was bathed in dark green light, his brows frowning, looked at PuHong Master and shouted, "Senior brother, what shall we do now?"

PuHong Master took a deep breath, decisively said, "This person is the

descendant of PuZhi junior brother, he also has his lifetime of great aspiration, we cannot stand by.”

He had just finished speaking when he shouted an order, again sat cross-legged down, his mouth chanting, SanSkrit song indistinctly started again, following which, the monks around him saw the abbot casting spell, all followed too. The next moment, a solemn dignified golden light, again floated out from these Tian Yin Temple monks.

Just that the Buddhist golden light this time, was different from the Buddhist formation in the past three days, in the solemnness it was less merciful, more stern and harsh. However Ghost Li, did not notice the rising golden light below which was approaching himself, his attention right now seemed to be totally absorbed in those glimmering words on the Wall.

Nobody could have expected, even if those Tian Yin Temple monks saw with their own eyes, would not understand it, right now glimmering on the Wordless Jade Wall, on this most revered noble and unsullied sacred Jade Wall, was the legendary fourth volume of the Evil Sect Classic <TianShu>!

The heavenly laws boundless, the things of the world changeful, how much can one predict?

Tian Yin Temple monks day and night performed ceremony for the Buddha, still did not know it; Ghost Li with his rough lifetime of experiences, vicissitudes of life in the world, he too didn't know!

But Ghost Li right now, how would he consider so much, in his eyes, almost instinctively mesmerized by those glimmering words.

Every pulsing sentences, were all of the missing and unexplainable portions of the strange skill <TianShu> which he arduously trained in solitary, one by one appearing before him, like one whose road ahead was full of countless cliffs and precipices, hesitating at the dead end, suddenly there was a road in the cliff, bridge across rapids, what kind of exhilaration that was, how could he still be distracted and care about other things?

For a moment, the arduous and obscure parts of his past cultivation, suddenly like seeing the light, slowly revealed. From the first <TianShu> volume of general principles seen ten years ago in KongSang Mountain Thousand Bats Ancient Cave Blood Dripping Cave, ten years of time like tide elapsed, this man hovering in the horizon of changing situation, for the first time felt, breathing as one with Heaven and Earth, yet forgetting each and every living thing.

Panting, deeply panting!

From top to toe, every part of his body felt like it was going to explode, numerous and complicated strange whistling noise, tightly shrouded him. The different breaths in his body seething like huge waves, all surging and turbulent. The Sinister Orb evil power cold, Inferno Fire Mirror pure yang energy blazing harder and harder; TaiJi Xuan Qing Way gentle and unbiased, Great Brahman Wisdom solemn like mountain; in addition drifting out from the different areas of the body, Ghost Li past cultivated three volumes of <Tian Shu> true vitality energy, copious amount and unable to stem.

Heaven and earth changing, creating miracles!

Under the dark clouds, the strange light emitted from the figure in the air increased in brightness while the sky turned darker and darker, a direct show of might rebelling against the heavens. The thunder rumbled in the horizon, flashes of lightning were seen scurrying within the clouds, as if the heaven was

already infuriated. In the clouds, strong winds blew, the clouds slowly started to spin, just above Ghost Li, gradually evolving into a giant vortex.

And Ghost Li, his attention still on the Jade Wall, oblivious to the surroundings.

And at this moment, the SanSkrit chant on the ground burst into power, solemn golden light charged to the sky, immediately enveloping Ghost Li. This golden light was extremely powerful, accumulating several Tian Yin Temple monks' cultivation forces, how would it be ordinary, instantly suppressed the evil power from Ghost Li, containing it tightly.

Once the golden light rose, enveloped Ghost Li, the force of the thunder and lightnings in the horizon seemed to be restrained, immediately slowly turned weak, the huge vortex forming in the sky also seemed to gradually disintegrate.

PuHong Master gazed at the firmament, slowly let out a breath, the withered old monk beside him suddenly spoke coldly, "This person's lifetime of cultivation actually invoked 'Heaven Punishment Stern Thunder', the powerfulness of the evil power can be seen, heaven is intolerant too. Abbot disregarded everything to save and protect him, I'm afraid it might not be correct too."

PuHong Master's countenance changed, turned and looked at him, that withered old monk coldly stared back, PuHong Master for the moment was speechless. Actually with PuHong Master's level of skills, how would he not sense the waves of malevolent evil power emanating from Ghost Li, definitely not Good Faction's skills, what he did today, it really could not be said to be right. Just that once he thought about his PuZhi junior brother who passed away in bitterness, and Ghost Li's great merciful act towards PuZhi's remains a few days ago, PuHong Master who was deeply touched could not watch and do

nothing.

PuHong Master did not speak, after a long pause was about to speak, suddenly a stir of commotion was heard beside, many of them exclaimed, at the same time a strange energy emanated from the formation, it seemed to have change, he quickly looked up, immediately his face changed.

Under the protection and suppression of the great Buddhist formation wielded by many of the Tian Yin Temple monks at the same time, Ghost Li's evil power was forcibly suppressed, all of it contained in the golden light formation. The mysterious storm in the sky was unable to find its target, slowly dispersed. Unexpectedly at this moment, the weak beams of light on Ghost Li, suddenly lit up again, and its turbulent energy, was even more powerful than before.

[Rumble]

A shock of thunder, exploded out in the horizon.

Wild winds raged, in the thunder, Ghost Li again screamed long to the sky, light flashed around him, dark-green, red, gold, bright red, rotated ceaselessly, finally in the end merged, evolved into the most simple black white colours, this black white colours were also rather strange, at times totally white, at times totally black, unpredictable but the indistinct power in it, was felt by all of the Tian Yin Temple monks.

In the mid air, consolidating several Tian Yin Temple monks' power, that golden light formation, seemed unable to resist Ghost Li's newborn power, slowly weakened. At the same time, wind and clouds rolled in the sky, the enormous vortex appeared again, and its speed surpassed the previous, swiftly formed and just above Ghost Li.

Looking up from the ground, in that layers of cloud vortex, lightning flashed madly, thunder sounds rumbled, there was also a strange [si si] whistle, like the sky's ferocious mouth, was about to pick someone and devour.

The monks on the ground, their faces revealed pain, it had become a struggle to maintain this formation, right now not only Ghost Li's body was resisting the golden light, in the sky, that mysterious vortex, a powerful force descended, clashed heavy on top of the golden light formation.

The golden light formation received attacks from the front and back, its light swiftly dimmed, PuHong Master and the rest were shocked, and at this moment, a sound of thunder suddenly in the sky, from that unceasing bottomless vortex, a thick lightning struck down from the firmament, onto the golden formation.

Deafening cracking sound, PuHong Master and the rest of the monks' bodies shook, those monks who were lower-skilled, their faces flushed red, some already spat out blood. The golden formation wavered and flashed, finally dispersed dejectedly, vanished.

PuHong Master's felt a tightness in his chest, as the leader of the formation, he received the hardest hit but right now his attention was all on the sky, in his anxiety, he actually stood up.

Since the golden light formation had broken up, Ghost Li no longer was restrained, the pressure on his body instantly disappeared but felt that although his body was relieved, the newborn vitality energy in his body revolved ceaselessly, growing incessantly, absolutely free from inhibitions.

Then, without waiting for any actions from him, he who had raised the alarm in the heavens, deep inside the dark clouds in the sky, rolling cracks of thunder rumbled, like a light beam descending from the sky, overwhelmingly, as if directly penetrating through Heaven and Earth, struck down with a loud crash, it was heading straight towards him.

Where it traversed, blazing fiercely, the sides of the column made [chi chi] sounds unceasingly, not knowing if it was because the temperature was too high, all of the things beside it were all reduced to malleable. And what Ghost Li was facing, was this colossal might of Heaven and Earth, unavoidable, inescapable...

Looking as Ghost Li was about to be hit by this colossal light beam, body to be smashed to pieces, PuHong Master and the rest of the monks could not bear to watch, all closed their eyes and turned their heads over, PuHong Master felt even more grieved, couldn't figure out, he was only having a good intention to enlighten Ghost Li, hoped to resolve the evil energy in his body, how did it turn out to be like this, invoking not seen for ten thousand years, existing only in legends, the Heaven Punishment Stern Thunder!

Don't tell him, Heavens really could not accept this man?

The light beam looked to be arriving soon, before it reached his body, Ghost Li's face pale, in the howling wild storm opened his mouth and shouted but there was no sound at all, all were drowned in that colossal might of Heaven and Earth. But he, wrapped under the divine might, blood flowing out of his face's seven apertures, his expression desolate and despair, even the Soul-devouring evil baton which had always protected him loyally, this moment facing the Heaven Punishment, was suppressed and had no light.

Everything, seemed about to end!

The dominating firmament, a dirge seemed to be heard faintly, reverberating in the horizon.

Suddenly, behind Ghost Li, the Wordless Jade Wall which had gradually dimmed, seemed to sense something, numerous glimmering words again flashed up, especially the nine words in the center: Heaven and Earth heartless, treats all living things as straw dogs! Dazzled with glaring intensity, lighted up, looking at its impetus, it indistinctly carried a trace of insufferably arrogance and obstinate air.

Even if, facing the heaven which countless of mortals prostrated in worship, that Heaven Punishment which seemed eternally invincible, the light on the Jade Wall, did not retreat the slightest!

The light on the wall reached its ultimate, it was as if the most resplendent meteor ablaze in that instant, no one could look at its light. The light which seemed to go into a frenzy, in an instant blotting out the sky and covering up the earth, charged over, from bottom upwards, entirely enveloping Ghost Li's body within, at the same time, an even bigger unparalleled brilliance charged up to the sky, that infinite impetus, actually charged directly towards that enigmatic colossal vortex in the horizon.

[Hong!]

[Hong!]

[Hong long!]

The canopy of the heavens, deafening thunder sounds, each seemed to have the force of cracking the sky, like being agitated, in that instant, that incomparable might of the Heaven Punishment light column shifted a few degrees, leaving Ghost Li, struck onto that unyielding brilliance that rose up from that Wordless Jade Wall!

Two forces of blazing light columns, collided with a crash between Heaven and Earth, the mountain ranges on the ground quaked, numerous giant rock walls cracked opened, in the rumbles of thunder, thousands of beasts cried out, like the end of the world had arrived.

Between Heaven and Earth, the dazzling light which could not be viewed!

Heaven and Earth froze, seemed in that instant.

On the jade wall, the polished-like-mirror stone wall, cracking sounds were heard, from the center of the wall, [pu] a crisp sound, a small opening cracked opened, following which numerous thin fissures extended out from this opening, enlarging. Finally, in the confused cries, a sound of loud rumble, this huge stone wall, stones and rocks flew, collapsed!

In the horizon, the huge light beam slowly dispersed, the looming dark clouds seemed to have vented their anger, the wild winds slowly ceased, thunders too. Following which, heaven and earth seemed to resume its tranquility all of a sudden, the dark clouds gradually scattered, that calm sky, gradually lit up.

A figure, slowly fell from the sky, it was Ghost Li, blood streaming from his face, unconscious, and protecting his body, was a faint mysterious light, after his body landed, wavered a few times, eventually dispersed, leaving not a trace.

The Tian Yin Temple monks stared dumbfoundedly at the ruins of the Wordless Jade Wall, looked at Ghost Li who actually by a stroke of luck escaped from the Heaven Punishment, speechless.

This sleep, seemed to be another distant slumber.

Seemed like during this time, many people walked past himself, extremely busy, some spoke beside him, the volumes loud and soft at times, and at times, there seemed to be arguments too. But most of the time, it was quiet.

He in this insipid peace, not knowing how long he had slept, indistinctly felt some sensations but still did not regain consciousness.

Maybe, remaining in this deep slumber, instead was the ardent hope deep inside his heart!

Footsteps were heard outside the door, FaXiang, in the meditation room, glanced out, quickly stood up, put his palms together and bowed to PuHong Master who was walking in. PuHong Master nodded, glanced at the sleeping Ghost Li on the meditation bed, quietly said, "Is he still good?"

FaXiang nodded and said, "Since that day, Zhang patron has been unconscious like this. Just that his breathing is at ease, there is no abnormal sign, and his body did not have any other injuries, by right should long be up but for some reason, he is still unconscious like that?"

PuHong Master was silent for a moment, said, "He is fortunate to escape death under the Heaven Punishment, as such it is already a tremendous luck. Thinking back that Heaven Punishment is a rare divine power in ten thousand

years, unexpectedly it would happen on him, it can't be...he is really an evildoer intolerated by Heaven?"

FaXiang's countenance changed, secretly glanced at PuHong Master, PuHong Master looked grave but there was no other expressions, thus he placed his suspended heart back, quietly said, "Teacher, is it that the other teacher uncles argued with you?"

PuHong Master laughed bitterly but did not speak.

FaXiang was silent.

After a long time, PuHong Master slowly said, "The Wordless Jade Wall was our Tian Yin Temple sacred ground treasure, moreover the Buddhist remains handed down by our founders, this time destroyed by Heaven Punishment, it is all because of my selfish motive. I have decided after Zhang patron regain consciousness, I will resign from my position as abbot, from then face the wall and comprehend Buddhist truth, so as to atone for my sin."

FaXiang's countenance changed greatly, exclaimed, "Teacher, how, how can you say that, this is not your fault!"

PuHong Master shook his head, said, "Your teacher uncles are right, I was filled with gratitude to Zhang patron for resolving PuZhi junior brother's resentful spirit and vicious energy and so presumptuously made the decision, overestimated myself and assumed to use Buddhist power on the sacred ground to enlighten him. Thus invoking the Heaven Punishment, destroyed the Jade Wall, this is really my sin. Just that..."

He smiled instead, said to FaXiang, "Just that I never once regretted, do you know why?"

FaXiang silently shook his head.

PuHong Master smiled and said, “On that day, when the Heaven Punishment struck down, this Zhang patron by right would not be spared but the Jade Wall on its own accord saved Zhang patron. Although the reason for it, we all do not know but the Jade Wall had spiritual intelligence, it must be it was not willing to watch Zhang patron die under the Heaven Punishment and therefore did so. Since the Jade Wall did that, it can be seen what I did was not wrong. Therefore although it is my fault that the Jade Wall is destroyed, I intend to seek forgiveness but in my heart, I did not regret a bit.”

FaXiang clenched his teeth, raised his head and called out, “Teacher...”

PuHong Master patted his shoulder, smiled and consoled with a few words, walked to Ghost Li side and carefully looked at him, nodded and said, “Seems like he is looking much better already, if nothing unexpected happens, I guess he will wake up in these few days, you must take good care of him.”

FaXiang put his palms together, said, “Teacher please be assured.”

PuHong Master nodded, took another look at Ghost Li, turned and about to walk out.

Just when he was about to step out, suddenly, Ghost Li moved, making a soft groan.

FaXiang was shocked, said in pleasant surprise, “Teacher, he seems to be awakening.”

PuHong Master was greatly delighted, strided over, sat beside Ghost Li on the bed. Under the watchful gazes of the teacher and disciple, Ghost Li's eyes gently fluttered, finally slowly opened.

，，

Chapter 186 - Difficult to enlighten

Like the usual days, the melodious morning bell once again sounded, echoed in Mt Meru, among the mist and mountain breeze. It traversed countless of years and time, repeated day after day and in the future days like this, continued to echo.

Standing in the morning sun, Ghost Li clasped his hands behind and stood, listening.

He closed his eyes slightly, as if the leisurely echoes of the bell, must be savored. Ghost Li at the moment, for some reason, his appearance did not change but he looked like a different person, from his bearing, expression, compared to previously, more calmness, less vicious.

Perhaps, those Buddhist formations really had an effect?

This question among the monks in the temple, many after Ghost Li awakened, had this query.

The day before yesterday, Ghost Li woke up again, PuHong Master and etc checked him carefully, his body seemed fine, even the impacts he received after being heavily struck did not seem to exist on his body. PuHong Master was overjoyed and just in case, kept Ghost Li a few days more at Tian Yin temple, Ghost Li did not reject and so stayed at Tian Yin Temple.

In the past few days, Ghost Li was even more taciturn than usual, for

someone like him who could actually angered the Heaven and invoked Heaven Punishment, most of the monks avoided him, only PuHong Master and FaXiang had no scruples, came to see him frequently. And Ghost Li himself did not seem to pay attention to those, did not leave the room, only when the morning bell and evening drums sounded, he would go to the small yard and quietly listened.

[Dong...]

The last bell, carrying infinite lingering echoes, reverberated long over Tian Yin Temple sky, finally turned silent. Ghost Li then slowly opened his eyes.

Submerged in Tian Yin Temple's morning breeze, underneath his peaceful appearance, his breathing was instead pulsing strongly, as if his entire being wanted to soar up. Tian Yin Temple monks would not know, but Ghost Li himself, understood it in his heart.

On that Wordless Jade Wall, unexpectedly appearing, was the legendary Evil Sect classic <Tian Shu> fourth volume, others might not understand but he was the only one in this world who practised the first three volume of <Tian Shu>, with one glance he knew that was what he had always been yearning for during his cultivation, the crux fourth volume.

The numerous seemingly indestructible, insurmountable problems in his training, at this moment, he had already mastered the keys to it, in front of him, was almost like a broad and open road, extremely smooth. He even had this thought, walking down this road, it would definitely be very smooth, or maybe, he could peep into realms that he dared not even have wild hopes of in the past.

And when he looked upon the past feelings, the human affairs before him, he

actually had a transcend feeling, like owning a new world, looking back anew at the past.

Just that for some reasons, in his heart, in this wonderful situation, he still had a faint trace of disappointment but he could not describe it. A somewhat incorrect thought, still wrapped around his heart.

Ghost Li stood still for a very long time, no one knew what he was thinking, and no one came in to disturb him. Until he suddenly turned, for several days, for the first time walked out of this small little courtyard.

Leaving this courtyard, he never looked back.

Following the steps under his feet, he slowly walked, it was said that this road, was once that monk, in order to carry forward the Dharma, made a great wish and used great supernatural powers to build it. Today, countless people were still using the road he built, but how many would know, he was already scattered ashes and dispersed smoke.

Walking on this road, the simple and crude layers of stone steps, stepping up onto it, a feeling of levelled ground was felt. That earth-shaking scene a few days ago, after an unexpected phenomenal fight, Mt Meru temple hall had varying degrees of damages, only this levelled stone-steps mountain road, was not damaged in the slightest, stayed paved sturdily on the ground, allowing numerous people walking past its chest.

Or perhaps, for the unpredictable Heaven Divine, this road too had some special sentiment?

Ghost Li did not know, and did not want to know, he walked on the road, only silently recalled the past and the deceased, while in his thoughts, he gradually arrived at Little Tian Yin Temple at Mt Meru Peak.

The door was left unlatched, here was as usual quiet, Ghost Li slowly walked in, from behind the door, conversations were heard.

He knocked on the door.

The talks suddenly ceased, then someone like being surprised, made a soft [yi] and the next moment, [zhi ya] the door opened, FaXiang appeared.

Saw that it was Ghost Li, FaXiang revealed a smile, Ghost Li nodded his head, said, "Is abbot in?"

FaXiang smiled and stepped aside, said, "Yes, please enter!"

Ghost Li went inside, saw PuHong Master sitting cross-legged on the meditation bed, smiling at him too. Ghost Li walked towards PuHong Master, bowed and said, "Abbot Master."

PuHong Master looked at Ghost Li, assessed him from top to bottom, and finally looked at his feet, suddenly nodded his head, put his palms together, said, "Didn't expect within such a short period of time, patron's skills has improved greatly, it is really gratifying!"

Ghost Li's brows jumped, did not speak, FaXiang was surprised, carefully assessed Ghost Li from beside.

After a moment of silence, Ghost Li lowered his head slightly towards PuHong Master, said, “A few days ago because of me, the Wordless Jade Wall at your honourable Temple sacred site was destroyed, I am really disturbed.”

PuHong Master gently shook his head, indifferently said, “It is a small matter, not worth mentioning.”

Ghost Li was slightly startled, said, “That Wordless Jade Wall was your honourable temple treasure, isn’t it valuable?”

PuHong Master put his palms together, said, “The affairs of life moves around, all beings each and every are nothing, who will know what will happen after that? Today it is precious and important, who knows how it would be on some other days? If patron has a mind to, “ He pointed outside the window, said, “To the right outside of Tian Yin Temple there is a huge rock, patron can go take a look, maybe you will understand the Way of Buddhist mind.”

Ghost Li nodded and said, “Yes. But I came over today, is to bid farewell to abbot master.”

PuHong Master did not seemed surprise, expected Ghost Li’s words, he only nodded and said, “If patron wishes to go, old monk do not dare to stop. Just that before patron leaves, old monk has a few words, wishes to speak to patron.”

Ghost Li said, “Master please speak.”

PuHong Master said, “Patron during this period of time, suffered many

calamities but eventually is able to overcome every one and break through, I see that patron seemed to have been enlightened, I wonder if it is so?"

Ghost Li pondered for a moment, nodded and said, "Master is discerning, in my survival after the calamity, I indeed had some thoughts. Looking back on my life, there are many regrets."

PuHong Master's eyes glinted, said, "Patron is really a person with great wisdom, since you have looked past it, why not look past the secular feelings, come join my Buddhist sect? With old monk's appraisal, what patron longs for and thinks, it's only just a 'quiet' word, how is it?"

Ghost Li was silent, stood for a long time, bowed to PuHong Master, faintly said, "Master enlightens me, I am very grateful. But although I have enlightenment thoughts but I have not looked past the mortal feelings. To me, the secular feelings, I am unable to let go."

PuHong Master shook his head, said, "Buddha said: color is emptiness! [Translator note: It means the sensory world is an illusion] Aren't all things in the secular world like this, resentment, gratitude, feelings, enmity, beauty, foes, all are only a 'colour' word, trapping humans psychologically, disturbing humans' peace, patron why do you have to be so stubborn?"

Ghost Li lifted his head and inhaled, with a loud laughter, turned and walked out, loudly saying, "Master, wrong. Colour is emptiness and emptiness is also colour. You want me to look past the mortal relations but how can we look past the mortal relations? I am at between heaven and earth, resentment, gratitude, feelings, enmity, are exactly my lots in life. You want me to look past and attain peace, yet you do not know, after looking past, am I still me?"

The voice gradually became low and deep, finally inaudible, that man had already went far from this meditation room.

FaXiang was silent for a long time, said to PuHong Master, “Master, you have tried to enlighten him several times but unfortunately...”

PuHong Master lightly replied, “He comprehends the way and cultivation, in future I’m afraid he will be the number one figure in the world. But a person like him actually not able to see past his own demons, in the future various situations, it will depend on his own fortune.”

FaXiang bowed his head, put his palms together and chanted, did not speak again.

Ghost Li left Little Tian Yin Temple, when he walked out of the temple gate, he suddenly stopped, paused and instead turned to the right, in a few steps, he indeed saw a large stone about half the size of a person fallen to the ground.

He went up and looked carefully at the stone, saw that the stone was scarred all over but not a single word or sentence, there was no artificial chisel marks, did not understand what the mystery of this stone was about.

Ghost Li frowned, pondered for a moment, suddenly his eyes narrowed, it was attracted to the tip of the boulder.

The boulder was mottled all over, evidently experienced countless years of sharp winds and biting frost, full of scars but at that spot, a shape could be vaguely seen. Just that over the years, it had become indiscernible.

Ghost Li stretched his hand over, gently swept the dust and sand from the stone, carefully checked, after a long time, he recognized that that was a shell shape but due to the long period of time, it had turned into stone, merged as one with this stone. Ghost Li then again carefully looked at the boulder but did not find any other unusual spots.

His gaze, once again back to the shell, unless what PuHong Master wanted him to see, was this ordinary-looking shell, and in this, what was the mystery of it?

He recalled PuHong Master's words again in his mind, his eyes looking at that shell and slowly lit up. The towering mountain ranges of Mt Meru, in the near and far thousand miles distance, there wasn't any deep sea or ocean but this stone, clearly belonged to Mt Meru. Thousands and thousands years ago, for all you know, perhaps this place was a big ocean.

The lifetime of a human, compared to the revolution of the earth, the vicissitudes of the world, like a drop in the great ocean, a Mt Meru mustard seed.

However, he was silent, turned towards that quiet little monastery and bowed, when he turned back, his expression was indifferent.

Where his sleeves flung, faint white light floated, his figure transformed into a light, headed to the sky, gradually disappearing in the firmament.

Look past!

Who is able to look past?

The affairs of human life will go through the great changes to the world by time, but how could it be compared to that moment in my heart, that faint light in that moment.

.

Qing Yun Hill, Big Bamboo Peak.

The battle at Qing Yun had already passed for some time, and after that because of the Zhu Xian Sword matter, Reverend DaoXuan kept a close watch on Big Bamboo Valley for a period of time but lately perhaps because Big Bamboo Valley disciples were too obedient, sect head did not send the warnings as frequent. Actually! In the Big Bamboo Valley disciples' hearts, although this matter was of great important but Reverend DaoXuan's actions were a little too much.

But no matter what, after all right now they had not been disturbed for a long while, Big Bamboo Valley gradually returned to its usual tranquility. Wu DaYi, He DaZhi both of their injuries also slowly healed, after examination by SuRu, it looked like they had mostly recovered. They were able to walk around on their own now but still unable to handle heavy tasks.

Therefore, as in the past, when the cleaning of the rooms were done, that room at the secluded corner which belonged to their junior brother who had left, also continued to be cleaned. This day, Song Daren and Du BiShu again walked towards that room.

Both were chatting and laughing, like countless times in the past, walked into the yard.

But at that moment, suddenly, a gray shadow flashed past that little yard

which should be undisturbed.

That grey shadow was extremely fast but Song Daren and Du BiShu both saw it almost at the same time, both of them shocked, immediately placed their cleaning tools down, shot forward like arrows. However that shadow vanished in an instant, the two of them searched the entire yard, even the rooftop, but still did not find anything.

Standing in the courtyard, Song Daren and Du BiShu looked at each other, Song Daren frowned, “Did we see wrongly?”

Du BiShu tilted his head and thought, about to speak when suddenly he whispered, “Senior brother, look over here.” Having said that, he pointed to the back of Song Daren.

Song Daren quickly turned to see, following the direction where Du BiShu was pointing, little junior brother’s room door was initially shut tight but the window beside the door, since when a gap was left. And the room had always been left unoccupied, naturally the window would be closed tight.

Song Daren and Du BiShu looked at each other, saw the suspicions in each other’s eyes. Song Daren composed himself, whispered, “Let’s go in and take a look.”

Du BiShu for some reason, felt nervous, while nodding he could not help but lowered his voice and spoke to Song Daren, “Big senior brother, don’t tell me...will junior brother he...”

Song Daren’s eyes jumped, obviously he had the same thoughts but even he himself felt afraid at that thought, perhaps, if it was really that little junior brother who was now already a stranger, he wouldn’t know how to face him

right?

His hand, when he touched that wooden door, Song Daren and Du BiShu again looked at each other, then, as if he had made up his mind, Song Daren gritted his teeth, shouted loudly, “Who is it?” While shouting, he fiercely pushed the door.

Almost at the same time, the grey figure in the room flashed past, it seemed to be startled, from the table jumped to the bed, turning around at the same time, its two bright eyes looking around, facing the two people standing at the door stunned, [zhi zhi zhi zhi] cried out.

“Xiao Hui!”

Song Daren and Du BiShu at the same time called out.

[Gu]

Xiao Hui swallowed down the fruit in its mouth, picked up another wild fruit beside it and bit into half in one mouthful, happily eating. Big Bamboo Valley Observed Silence Hall, right now were scattered with fruit pits from Xiao Hui, thrown everywhere, compared to its usual solemn appearance, it looked rather comical.

Right now everyone was gathered here, even the usual bad-tempered Tian BuYi looking at this scene, only frowned but did not lose his temper, his face dark, not knowing what he was thinking.

For the past ten years, all of them knew, Xiao Hui had always been with that

person, never once separated, now that Xiao Hui was there, where was that person?

On that day before Qing Yun Hill Tong Tian Valley Illusory Moon Cave, Song Daren and the others saw Ghost Li, also witnessed that once little junior brother heavily injured by the Zhu Xian ancient sword, and then pursued by numerous people, although since then, there was no longer any news of him, they also vaguely heard, he was already rescued by his accomplice.

But, why would Xiao Hui appear here?

Xiao Hui's appearance here, then where would that person be?

The same question, lingered in everyone's hearts, weighed heavily. And in Observed Silence Hall, only Xiao Hui impertinently ate with big mouthfuls, other than that, there was still one extremely excited, completely different from the rest!

Da Huang.

This big dog, at the moment was very excited, simply ignored his master's gloomy face, [wang wang wang] barking incessantly, circulated ceaselessly around the table which Xiao Hui was crouching, occasionally sticking out its tongue, licking Xiao Hui a few times.

Xiao Hui grinned, scratched his head and then snatched up an apple from beside, waved it before Da Huang and then threw it out of Observed Silence Hall. Da Huang with a [wang] loud bark, immediately jumped up, its four legs speeding, dashed out of the hall, everyone was surprised, looked out and saw

Da Huang actually reached before the apple landed, caught it in the air and at the same time ran back immediately, laid down beside the table, its dog teeth loosened, the apple fell onto the table, rolled a few times.

Everyone was dumbstruck, Tian BuYi grunted.

Only Xiao Hui [zhi zhi zhi zhi] laughed non-stopped, obviously meeting its good friend the old dog, it's in a very good mood, its monkey tail curled, jumped down from the table and onto Da Huang broad back, hugged Da Huang's body.

Da Huang [wang wang wang] barked incessantly, looked up raised its chest and ran out, not knowing where one monkey and one dog running off to play again.

Song Daren glanced to Tian BuYi and SuRu, stood up, about to go out and bring back the two animals but only heard Tian BuYi spoke coldly, "Let them go! That monkey has stayed on this mountain for many years, since it has come, it will not go."

Song Daren acknowledged, slowly sat down.

Tian BuYi was silent for a moment, said, "Other than this monkey, you and lao liu did not see anyone else?"

[Translator's note: Lao liu is an affectionate term for number six]

Song Daren and Du BiShu shook their heads at the same time, said, "Nope."

Tian BuYi looked displeased, suddenly waved his hand, said, "Alright, you all

are dismissed!”

Song Daren and the others looked at each other but their teacher’s command was like the mountain, eventually dared not defy and could only retreated out slowly, on their way out, He DaZhi was thoughtful, asked SuRu, “Teacher’s wife, the pits are everywhere, do you want disciple to clean up?”

Before SuRu could speak, Tian BuYi slightly angrily spoke, “We’ll see tomorrow, didn’t you hear I told you to go out?”

He DaZhi silenced, with a [suo] sound retreated, in a blink of an eye disappeared.

SuRu rolled her eyes at Tian BuYi, said, “For what do you vent your anger on them?”

Tian BuYi looked occupied, pacing back and forth, suddenly looked up at SuRu said, “You think lao qi...that person, will he be nearby too?”

SuRu pondered for a moment, lightly said, “That person, has always valued relationships the most, if he wanted to see you, it is also understandable. Just that with his identity, most probably he is unable to reveal himself.”

Tian BuYi’s expression changed, his plump face looked uncertain, an inexplicable strangeness.

SuRu looked at him, sighed and said, “I know what you are worrying, that day outside Illusory Moon Cave, although he was hurt by Zhu Xian ancient sword but he after all, did not die, and didn’t rumors claimed that he was rescued by his accomplice? Daren and the rest after reporting to us, all said that the grey monkey was not with him, in my opinion, perhaps he knew the danger at that

time and so deliberately did not bring the monkey with him. And after he escaped with serious injuries, the monkey wandered among Qing Yun Hill wild mountains, since it cannot find its master, it is not surprising that it came to us.”

Tian BuYi frowned tightly, suddenly mumbled something, like cursing someone.

SuRu did not hear clearly, asked, “What did you say?”

But Tian BuYi did not answer, grunted, spread out his brows, with his hands clasped behind headed to the rear hall. SuRu looked at his back figure, shrugged his shoulders, quite helpless.

Just when she turned around, suddenly heard Tian BuYi’s soft cry, SuRu was surprised, quickly turned around and saw, could not help but smiled.

Tian BuYi seemed occupied, did not watch where he was stepping, actually accidentally stepped onto a fruit pit, slipped a bit. Just that Tian BuYi was after all not an ordinary person, with his skills, almost immediately stabilized himself, even it was so, SuRu had already laughed out.

Making a little fool of himself before his wife, Tian BuYi blushed with shame, his face darkened even more, bitterly cursed, “Stupid monkey, see when I will skin you, then see if you will still eat!”

After speaking, not even turning back, he walked into the rear hall, leaving the hall full of fruit pits, SuRu smiled standing.

Chapter 187 - Secret Command

In a blink, the monkey Xiao Hui was already back at Big Bamboo Peak for several days, during this period, it did not look like it had left Big Bamboo Valley for almost ten years, every single blade of grass and tree over here, the monkey was still so familiar with it. Xiao Hui and Da Huang played the whole day, running around, the usual tranquility on Big Bamboo Valley, seemed like in the recent days, became slightly bustling again.

The sounds of dog barking and shrill mischievous monkey laughter, frequently echoed in Big Bamboo Valley, actually making it more lively.

Early morning, streaming out in groups from their rooms, the Big Bamboo Valley disciples looked at the monkey and dog which were already running and playing on the empty ground before Observed Silence Hall, couldn't help but broke out into smiles.

He DaZhi smiled and turned back to the crowd said, "Ever since little junior sister married, it has been a long while since the place is so lively."

Everyone nodded, a rather regretful feeling, and at this moment, someone suddenly coughed once in the hall, the cough forceful, everyone was surprised, saw Tian BuYi standing there, quickly went up to pay their obeisance to their master.

Tian BuYi dismissed them with a wave then his gaze was also attracted to Da Huang and Xiao Hui, looking at them for a while, grunted, said, "Two ignorant animals, early in the morning barking like crazy, really don't intend to let

anyone sleep."

All the disciples were stunned for a moment but because he was their teacher, in the end they did not dare to comment anything. Tian BuYi grumbled a few more sentences, mainly complained about raising this stupid dog for so many years in vain, in the end still this useless, actually played so happily with a stupid monkey, everyone found it funny but naturally did not dare to laugh out loud.

Unexpectedly after a moment, Da Huang who was having fun over at a distance, suddenly started to bark loudly at Tian BuYi who was at Observed Silence Hall:

[Wang wang wang, wang wang, wang wang wang] - a series of jarring dog barks early in the morning, and Da Huang's dog face looked arrogant, sticking out its tongue, appeared very displeased with Tian BuYi, it seemed to have heard Tian BuYi's curses, a disgruntled look.

The disciples had the same thoughts, couldn't it be that Da Huang already had some cultivation, if not at such a distance, even how sharp its dog ears were, most likely it could not hear clearly, but if it was an old dog that had some cultivation, then naturally it would be another matter.

While everyone was secretly speculating, Tian BuYi was turning red with anger by Da Huang's sudden rebuttal, angrily shouted, "Rebelling, rebelling, now even a dog dare to jump out and make noise. Lao liu!"

Standing next to the crowd, Du BiShu, was startled, quickly stood out and said, "Teacher, disciple is here, what instructions do you have?"

Tian BuYi looked extremely infuriated, pointing to Da Huang who was still barking loudly with Xiao Hui, angrily said, "Today at noon slaughter that stupid dog, cook a pot of dog meat to eat!" then he hatefully turned and entered the Observed Silence Hall.

Du BiShu stood dumbfounded, cold sweat breaking out, hoarsely said, "What? Teacher, this"

Before he could finish, Tian BuYi was already gone, the next moment, the group of people behind Du BiShu [hua] with loud laughs burst out, Song Daren and the rest laughed till they were out of breath. Du BiShu, anxious and angry, said, "What are you all laughing at, this, this is commanded by the teacher, what should I do?"

Song Daren came forward, put away his smile, although his eyes were still twinkling but his face had a solemn expression, patted Du BiShu's shoulder, he seriously said, "Junior brother, this is an important task that teacher entrusted you to, you must perform it well."

Du BiShu almost cried out, anxiously said, "Who are you lying to, who doesn't know that teacher's favourite is Da Huang, even if we were to pull out a strand of dog fur, teacher will show us his displeasure. Now this, this, if I really follow Teacher's order, later on if Teacher regrets, will I still be alive?"

Song Daren [he he] laughed, turned and walked away, second disciple Wu DaYi walked over, nodded seriously to Du BiShu, said, "Lao liu, you are indeed a smart person, you know what Teacher really meant, since it is so, just don't listen to Teacher's order will do."

He DaZhi lifted his head and looked at the sky, slowly walked away but he was

muttering, whether deliberately or not, said, "But heard that the thing that Teacher dislikes most is that we these disciples disobey Teacher's command, once Teacher knows that lao liu dare to treat Teacher's words like wind, this"

His laughter drifted over with the wind but he was already far away, Du BiShu, like ants on a hot pot, paced around on the spot, when he turned around, the rest was already heading towards the kitchen, he could not help but angrily shouted to the back of his senior brothers, "You these unloyal fellows, sooner or later there will be retribution!"

His voice travelled over, not knowing if Song Daren and the rest heard it, from far he could only see that Song Daren did not even turn his head, only stretched out his right hand to wave once, indistinctly, their laughter seemed to be heard again.

X

x

x

"Stupid dog, foolish dog, dead dog"

[Wang wang wang, wang wang!]

"What, you still dare to bark at me!" Du BiShu gritted his teeth, scolded Da Huang who was tied a tree stump, "It's because you are meddlesome, caused me to be assigned to do such a damm task by Teacher."

Nearing noon, Du BiShu while his senior brothers were gloating, caught Da Huang who was running amok in the mountains, and tied him to the tree stump

outside the kitchen entrance, Xiao Hui using his tail, hung on a tree branch nearby, also did not seem to understand what Du BiShu was trying to do, swinging left and right, watching the human and dog arguing.

As for Da Huang, obviously at the moment it did not have any good feelings towards Du BiShu, its dog face looking ferocious, barking incessantly at Du BiShu

Du BiShu although kept scolding Da Huang but he resolutely dared not as what Tian BuYi said, slaughter Da Huang and make dog stew. Just that his Teacher's temper was eccentric, more likely than not later when he comes out and sees Da Huang here, he might vent his anger on him. Thinking of these, Du BiShu felt anxious, not knowing what he should do.

Da Huang was obviously very displeased being tied to the stump, its dog mouth opened wide, revealing sharp fangs, howling loudly to Du BiShu. Du BiShu was fretting, glared at Da Huang, shook his head and said to himself, "Forget it, forget it, just consider me unlucky, better go prepare the meals first. Hopefully teacher's mood will be better later."

Then, he turned and headed to the kitchen, his face looking worried, did not bother with Da Huang anymore. Until he was inside the kitchen, Da Huang was still barking incessantly, but he assumed it was just because Da Huang was alone, did not meant anything much and soon quietened down.

In order to please Tian BuYi, Du BiShu put his heart into the preparation of the meal, focused hard and wholeheartedly absorbed, in-between he heard a few barks from Da Huang and then became muffled, following by low [wu wu] sounds, Du BiShu did not pay much attention to it, only concentrated on making the meal. Besides, his senior brothers, teacher and teacher's wife would not come here now, he was enjoying the peacefulness.

After a hard time to prepare a good meal, Du BiShu finally was relieved, took out a handkerchief to wipe his sweat, walked out of the kitchen, unexpectedly he was stunned, only the rope was left on the tree stump, Da Huang and Xiao Hui were missing. Du BiShu was very anxious, looked left and right, couldn't see any trace of the monkey and yellow dog, wondered if one of his senior brothers was playing around with him at this time?

He immediately ran to the disciple dormitories, asked each one of them but no one knew anything, some still made jokes. Only Du BiShu did not have the mood to joke around, feeling low spirits and turning around in circles. And at this moment, suddenly a loud and clear dog bark was heard from a distance, everyone was surprised, Du BiShu was even the first to rush out, carefully checking, it was coming from the room of Zhang Xiao Fan.

Du BiShu quickly rushed to the room, the other Big Bamboo Valley disciples also rushed over, entering the room, only Da Huang was in the courtyard, barking loudly to the sky, and Xiao Hui was gone.

Everyone looked up, but only saw the high blue sky, infinite blue, not the slightest abnormality. Song Daren and the rest quickly searched, all the rooms were searched but Xiao Hui was not seen. Just like his mysterious appearance, Xiao Hui this monkey, again mysteriously disappeared.

For some reason, in Da Huang's loud barks, everyone was perplexed.

That day at noon, while Du BiShu was anxiously anticipating lunch time, only SuRu appeared in front of the disciples. Everyone felt strange, Du BiShu instead was delighted and surprised but he still asked with concern on his face, "Teacher's wife, why did teacher not come?"

SuRu gave him a cold stare, did not bother with him, only indifferently glanced back at Observed Silence Hall, her face had a strange look, after a moment she then said, "Your teacher is having some thoughts, and in a bad mood, did not wish to eat today."

Everyone was surprised but looking at SuRu's expression, did not dare to ask more.

At Big Bamboo Valley, it seemed to resume its usual tranquility, other than occasionally Da Huang barking loudly to the sky, it looked like nothing had happened before.

X

x

x

A silhouette, drifted down from the depths of Qing Yun mountain range, brisk and mysterious misty, like the legendary mountain spirit. Just that this figure swept onto a certain area of the mountain foot, suddenly paused on the ground, making a low whistling sound due to the high speed in the air, abruptly stopped, creating [sha] sounds from the grasses and trees below his feet, many fell forward by the wind.

It was Ghost Li.

No one knew which boundary Ghost Li came out from Qing Yin Hill but on his shoulder, Xiao Hui once again crouched there, reunited with its master again after a long time, Xiao Hui was evidently very happy, its long tail curled, its end

still wrapped around Ghost Li's arm. And not knowing since when, that big wine bag on Xiao Hui was again bloated up, wine fragrance emanating, Xiao Hui was even more delighted by this, hugging that big bag, opening it to take a mouthful at times, a satisfied look on its face

But Ghost Li was clearly not like Xiao Hui, at the moment his face was indifferent, swept his gaze around, the surroundings was thick with trees, silent and still, only indistinct birds chirping were heard in the distant.

Ghost Li suddenly sneered, indifferently sad, "Come out."

No one answered, Ghost Li did not speak again, only slowly turned around, facing a certain area and quietly stood, after a while, suddenly someone sighed and said, "Only a few days, unexpectedly GongZi your skills actually advanced so much, this is really admirable!"

A silhouette flashed, from deep inside the woods a man in black walked out, it was Mr Ghost.

This person, seemed to be perpetually unfathomable and mysterious, always appearing in places where nobody expected him.

Ghost Li looked at him, his eyes cool, although he did not reveal his abhorrence but clearly he he did not like this person, said, "You are here waiting for me, what is it?"

Mr Ghost eyes roamed, first looked at Xiao Hui on Ghost Li's shoulder, especially stared for a moment at the third eye on its forehead, then looked at Ghost Li, said, "Why, vice sect leader doesn't wish to meet me?"

Ghost Li snorted, did not speak.

Mr Ghost nodded his head and said, "This is also up to you, but this time it is not me, instead it is sect head Ghost King who sent me a message few days ago, asking me to convey some words to you."

Ghost Li frowned and said, "What happened?"

Mr Ghost said, "After Ghost King sect head heard that you were injured at Qing Yun Hill Illusory Moon Cave, was very concerned, ordered our men who are hidden spies in Central Plains that they must find you, and convey his message, if they found vice sect head you, and if vice sect head is in bad health and injured, he could turn back to Wildlands to recuperate, his health is more important; if fortunately vice sect head is well, there is one matter which needs to trouble vice sect head."

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, said, "Speak."

Mr Ghost behind his black veil, seemed to laugh faintly, his laughter deep and low, said, "Ghost King sect head already knew, the Beast Deity has lost in the battle at Qing Yun and fled. This fang massacred countless of our holy sect disciples, he is our holy sect foe which cannot exist under the same sky, now is the rare opportunity to kill this fang. His escape this time, must be to the southern border which he is familiar with, and in our sect only vice sect head is more familiar with southern border, hope that vice sect head can go into the southern border to pursue him, it is also considered doing a great service for our holy sect."

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, nodded his head, said, "Alright, I will go."

Mr Ghost nodded slightly, but suddenly stepped forward, came near to Ghost Li, suppressed his voice and said, "But this trip, sect head especially privately commanded me that I must convey to you this, pursuing the Beast Deity although is important, but the most most important thing, is still another."

Ghost Li was stunned, said, "What?"

Mr Ghost's eyes glinted, whispered, "Sect head instructed, there is a ferocious beast TaoTie beside the Beast Deity. In any case, even if the Beast Deity escape, this ferocious TaoTie, must be caught alive and brought back to Wildlands. This is a very important matter, vice sect head must bear in mind, bear in mind!"

Ghost Li's eyebrows wrinkled, stared deeply at Mr Ghost, said, "What does sect head wants with TaoTie?"

Mr Ghost stood up straight, his tone back to normal, lightly said, "This, is not something I can know."

Ghost Li looked at him for a long time, suddenly turned, without even turning back to look, his figure like a flash, instantly swept out, disappeared. Leaving only Mr Ghost standing at the same spot, looking at the direction where Ghost Li headed, after a long time mumbled to himself, "Strange, how is it that his skills in such a short time, advanced to such level?"

"That day, that group of men in black that saved him, who are they exactly?"

His low mumblings, drifted with the wind, quietly echoed in the forest, eventually disappeared.

”

Chapter 188 - Mad Dog

After the calamity with the Beast Deity, from north to south, appalling desertion sights were seen everywhere, not a single human for thousands of miles, not a sound from hundreds of villages, were some of the frequent encounters. Due to the short period of suffering, the north was slightly better, heading towards the south, the tragic scenes became more serious.

Ruins, defeated towns, were everywhere. And even in the wild fields empty grounds, eerie white bones could be discovered at times, a ghastly sight. Wind and smoke souging, a bleak, desolate scene, this secular world, humans like ants, all unable to control their own fates.

Many people fled to the north, after ensuring that this calamity was indeed over, started to return to their hometowns. The infinite desolate lands, begun to have humans presence. But this also, contained much sorrowful sentiments, both sides of the road, still often had corpses, some killed by evil beasts, some, after the calamity, unable to withstand the hunger and cold on their way back, died. In-between, occasionally some remote places, a few small evil beasts remained, at times rumours of evil beasts killing humans spread. However, at this time, the huge catastrophe was after all over, although the small evil beasts were causing alarm but it could not deter the wishes of many more people who wished to return.

And even those lingering evil demons, in fact also soon disappeared. Because among the countless commoners who were returning home, there were many Good Faction disciples, whenever news of the evil demons were heard, very quickly they were subdued by those Good Faction disciples.

On the day of the great battle at Qing Yun Hill, the Beast Deity defeated by Zhu Xian sword but it did not die, the Good Faction were not fools too, what the Evil Sect knew about hitting a person when he is down, eliminating the roots, the Good Faction naturally also understood the logic of ‘eradicating evil completely’!

They were all various Good Faction sects’s dispatched talented disciples, some of the smaller sects even came out in force, if there is a chance to catch the Beast Deity, taking a broad view, this merit and reputation, how would it be ordinary? Moreover the Beast Deity was an exceptional demon, if there wasn’t any exceptional weapons with it, even fools would not believe it.

These speculations, mixed in the crowd, like the tide spread out, gushing towards the south, behind the gradual descending peace, it seemed however that many were holding their breaths to wait and see. In contrast, the commoners’ woes, not many cared.

Following this crowd heading towards the south, travelling in it together were Zhou YiXian, Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist, their sentiments were different from others.

Zhou YiXian was still holding that bamboo pole, and the white banner with the words, ‘Immortal Guide’, was still hanging on it, just that the white cloth, in this turmoil and chaos of war, turned an uneven black and yellow, it still had a few tears at some places. Even the cold wind blew past, the cloth still welcomed and fluttered but there wasn’t any more celestial air, instead it was all broken and dejected.

As for Wild Dog Taoist, for this long period of time, was still following Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, the three of them roaming the world. But right now he had a cloth covering his face, not for anything else but just that at this time, the

commoners around him were more sensitive towards people who looked slightly strange, inadvertently he might be misunderstood to be one of the evil demons, if so then it would be most injustice. After experiencing several such misunderstandings, without Zhou YiXian rolling his eyes at him or Xiao Huan persuading him, Wild Dog Taoist also could not stand it, found a cloth and covered his face up.

Among the three, Xiao Huan looked most refreshing, of course, a young and beautiful girl, naturally would be eye-catching and good-looking. In this sorrowful and dejected crowd of people, she seemed to be the most beautiful figure.

Along the way, very different from the rest, she always wore a smile but it was not the gloating kind, instead, disregarding Zhou YiXian incessantly nagging, tried her best to help the helpless commoners around her.

Someone who fell due to tiredness, she stepped forward to support; or someone in hunger and cold, she delivered food and clothing; or someone sick or weak, she seemed to have some medical skills, went up to examine; even looking at the bodies lying along the road, she would gently quietly walked past, not avoiding the stench, roughly buried them, regarded as a form of comfort.

Along the way, wind and dust covered them, other than facing the graveness of the sick, weak and dead, Xiao Huan seemed to be forever smiling, on this dim and dark path, she was like the compassionate fairy. Zhou YiXian was still perpetually quietly nagging and Wild Dog Taoist followed behind Xiao Huan, never discouraged her once, as long as whatever Xiao Huan wished to do, he would rushed to do it first: burying the bodies, he moved to dig; saving and helping the weak, he personally assisted the person. Along the way, in his eyes, there seemed to be only that delicate young girl, what Xiao Huan did, he did it too, even how hard the times were or how tired the journey, he seemed not to be bother at all.

However, they were after all not immortal, without mentioning the rest, so many were hungry and cold and only a little food, even theirs were soon gone. Having no choice, this day they had to leave the crowd temporarily, headed to the wilds, hoping in that mountain they were able to find some food.

In the catastrophe, miserable conditions like this!

Zhou YiXian holding the bamboo pole, watching the gradual fading sky, shook his head, sighed, "The times now, it's really hard to survive."

Xiao Huan walked beside him, smiled but did not speak. But in this short period of time, although her face was stained slightly with travel but she was still beautiful as ever, with addition of some maturity which wasn't present in the past. Wild Dog Taoist behind her, his tall figure seemed to join with Xiao Huan slender form, his face hidden behind the cloth, nothing could be seen, except a sparkling pair of eyes.

Right now they were already a distance from the main road, standing at the summit of a small hill, the night thick with dark clouds, only a few spots of stars in the distant, not a glimpse of the moon. The surrounding wild countryside, right now was silent, only cries of insects from somewhere, sometimes long sometimes short, not knowing where it came from.

Xiao Huan paused, as if recalling something, turned to Wild Dog Taoist, smiled and said, "Priest, now there isn't anyone else, you can take down your face cloth, wrapping for a day, I am afraid you must be terribly uncomfortable."

Wild Dog Taoist's eyes seemed to flash a faint glint in the dark night, slowly removed the cloth, revealed his strange face, whispered, "Uh, actually I am fine

but you have a long day today, you should be exhausted right?"

Zhou YiXian also stopped, looked around, saw a dead wood beside, hurriedly walked over, sat right on top of it, then made a long stretch, after which he rolled his eyes at Xiao Huan, said, "Yes, only she is busy, only she is merciful, therefore gifted others her grandfather's dried rations, and now even your grandfather is starving."

Xiao Huan turned red, walked over and stood behind Zhou YiXian, stretched out her hands and gently beat on Zhou YiXian's shoulders, said, "Grandpa, we are still considered fortunate but look at those people, if they do not eat something, they really will have no strength to go on, I'm afraid they might die."

Wild Dog Taoist looked left and right, said, "You both sit here, I will go into the woods to see if I can catch some wild animals, temporarily fill our stomachs."

Xiao Huan smiled to Wild Dog Taoist and said, "Ok, have to trouble priest."

Wild Dog Taoist grinned, Zhou YiXian suddenly snorted, sneered, "What are you laughing at? And just laughing, but why old man me see that your smile is so vulgar, don't tell me you are having some unvirtuous thoughts in your head?"

Wild Dog Taoist was shocked, quickly put away his smile, glanced at Xiao Huan, saw Xiao Huan looking at him slightly apologetic, his eyes immediately brightened, how would it have any hint of anger, totally disregarded Zhou YiXian and straight ignoring him, said to Xiao Huan, "Then you both wait for me to come back." Speaking, he walked with quick steps into the forest.

Zhou YiXian snappily mumbled a few words, Xiao Huan behind him slightly annoyed said, “Grandpa, that Wild Dog Taoist has been with us for so long, why can’t you show him a good face, besides, all thanks to him taking care of us along the way, and furthermore he is not a bad person!”

Zhou YiXian snorted and said, "What do you know about a good or a bad person? He follows us, isn't it because"

"Grandpa!" Xiao Huan cried out, cut off his words. Zhou YiXian grumbled a few words and did not speak again.

X

x

x

[Suo suo] sounds were heard in the woods, then another burst of fluttering sound, after a long while, a burst of footsteps swiftly came, Wild Dog Taoist beaming, ran out from the forest holding a wild bird. A few days ago after that catastrophe, all livings things in extreme distress, even among the mountains, these wild animals and birds, seemed much lesser than before, today Wild Dog Taoist seemed lucky, actually caught a bird that slipped through the net!

Wild Dog Taoist excitedly rushed back, loudly said, “See, look what I’ve caught” Suddenly, his voice stopped, on the open ground, there was nobody, Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, were gone.

[Pa da] the wild bird from Wild Dog Taoist’s hands dropped onto the ground.

The night wind cold, the chill seemed to instantly soaked through deep into

the bones, Wild Dog Taoist body for some reasons, started to tremble. Step by step he walked forward, that dead wood on the ground, still even had traces of Zhou YiXian sitting on it.

"They are gone, gone" Wild Dog Taoist's mind in a chaos, his dog face changed with different emotions, mostly fear and sadness. He at the moment, dumbstruck like a wooden bird but after a moment, he suddenly shook, his eyes lit up, behind that dead wood, there were a few spots of disorder footprints, and on the soft ground beside the footprint, there was a larger than ordinary footprint, three claws in front, definitely not a human being.

Wild Dog Taoist's countenance changed greatly, first overjoyed, then shocked, then at the moment, a long howl seemed to be heard in the distant, its sound mournful, like a vicious wolf howling to the moon. Wild Dog Taoist subconsciously took a step back, but after a moment, his dog facial muscles slightly trembling, suddenly with a loud roar, he charged into the dense forest towards the howl direction, looking at his demeanour, it looked like a mad dog.

A crazy dog!

Just when Wild Dog Taoist dashed into the forest, on the dark night sky, a white light suddenly lit up, streaking swiftly from the north, across the horizon, not the slightest pause, straight to the south, like a meteor. And on the ground, after a while, while the remnants of the white light was still in the horizon, a black figure appeared near that empty ground, looking carefully, he was covered all in black cloth, but he was slightly panting, stopping in the forest, he muttered to himself,

"How did his skills improved so much, really met a ghost." While he was resting, suddenly, he seemed to sense something, turned and glanced into the forest, heard indistinct fightings from the depths of the woods, the black-attired

man hesitated for a moment, again looked up to that white light in the horizon, shook his head, sighed. Then his body flashed but it was light like a ghost, flashed into where Wild Dog Taoist had dashed in.

X

x

x

Wild Dog Taoist held his weapon fang in his hand, looking tense, but the next moment, his shoulder turned dark red, like already wounded. But before him, there was two huge demon beasts, tiger head and lion's body, as tall as a human, Wild Dog Taoist before them, looked like he would collapse at the first blow.

Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan right now were standing behind the two beasts. In this forest, the two demons seemed to have made a den in this desolate place, many branches, grasses and leaves piled in a mess, the heavy smell of blood assaulted the nose. But the most terrible thing was, dead bodies were scattered all around, and other than Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, there were still seven or eight humans alive, but they looked unconscious, even if they were conscious, they were as thin as sticks, in dreadful states.

Nobody knew from where the two beasts abducted so many people but it could be imagined that in this demon beasts calamity, how tragic it was!

Facing the two huge beasts, Wild Dog Taoist panted heavily, in full alert. Earlier on when he charged into here, saw that Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan were still alive, before he could rejoice, he was already attacked by the two beasts. After exchanging moves, these two demon beasts were not ordinary, had huge strength and could actually slashed Wild Dog Taoist's shoulder. But even so,

Wild Dog Taoist was after all a cultivated person, different from the ordinary people, in his panic, he wielded his weapon and at the same time, hit one of the beasts, right now that beast's front paw was dripping with blood, clearly it was not better off.

Just that the two demons looked extremely ferocious, saw the blood but it did not backed away, instead it stare deathly at Wild Dog Taoist, they were only wary of his weapon so for the moment only stood facing him. And Wild Dog Taoist was lamenting in his heart, that fight, he knew it well, if it was only one beast, he might still have a slim chance to win but two together, he would definitely lose his life.

However he perhaps could turn and flee, but for some reason, his eyes intentionally or inadvertently glanced at that terrified and anxious pair of eyes behind the beasts, and he could not move his feet to escape alone.

Some things, are really inescapable?

Ferocious roars started, finally unable to bear it, pounced over. Two figures in the shadows sweeping up the stench of blood, accompanied by Xiao Huan's cries.

Wild Dog Taoist's throat turned dry, both legs trembling, his instinct to turn and run, but, but, his body, instead leapt up, heading towards that ferocious demon beasts, as if --

Mad dog!

The result was known in an instant, the two beasts' four claws almost

simultaneously tore into Wild Dog Taoist's body, and Wild Dog Taoist's fang weapon stabbed into that wounded beast's chest.

Beast and Wild Dog Taoist screamed at the same time, Xiao Huan's exclamations had turned into cried.

Blood sprayed, Wild Dog Taoist only felt as if his body was shattering, like being tore into two, staggering backwards, in his panic he only saw the four blood wounds on his body, blood pouring out like a fountain.

Ahead, that beast roared a few times, its legs crumbled and collapsed on the ground. The other beast whined, actually did not attack Wild Dog Taoist, and instead beside the fallen beast, constantly used its head, using its claws to shake his comrade. However the beast's wound, the fang had stabbed into its heart, after struggling a few times, its head drooped and died like that.

[Pa] a light sound, Wild Dog Taoist also could no longer sustain, fell kneeling to the ground, his upper body almost soaked in blood, a sheet of red, panting with huge mouthfuls, his dog face pale.

The noise however alerted the remaining beast, watching its companion died, this demon beast looked even crazy, roaring loudly to the sky, its fangs like blood, again pounced over.

Watching helplessly as Wild Dog Taoist was about to lose his life under the beast's claws, suddenly a confusion, a beam of yellow light flashed, a few talisman papers drifted down, Wild Dog Taoist actually disappeared, the beast demon pounced onto empty ground.

The beast demon was shocked, but a moment later, suddenly heard [ai ya], Zhou YiXian with Wild Dog Taoist actually fell from the sky, he was still holding a few talisman papers in his hands.

This was naturally Zhou YiXian using his so-called ancestors' celestial skills, when the beasts suddenly attacked them, they were caught unaware and the next moment both of them were caught, in the beasts' bloody mouths, they didn't have any chance of escape. Luckily Wild Dog Taoist hot-headedly came to rescue them, they then had a window to escape, initially wanted to take the opportunity to escape, unexpectedly Wild Dog Taoist's life was in peril, with no choice, Zhou YiXian had to first save him.

But his tactics seemed to be only shallow skills, although it was similar to Taoist's 'Five Ghost Moving House' skill, teleported Wild Dog Taoist but the skill was only halfway, for some reason he slipped and in the end the two of them actually fell from the sky, in an extremely sorry plight. And fortunately, Wild Dog Taoist landed on Zhou YiXian's body, else with this impact, most likely would cause him his death.

But at the moment it was also not the time for them to think so much, that beast in a blink discovered, in a rage, again pounced over. Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist heads were still spinning, Wild Dog Taoist was slightly better but sustained heavy injuries, in the end would not be able to escape in time. Helpless, he could only wait for death. On his dog face, a lost expression quietly brush past, he turned his head to look, like he wanted to see something?

But at this flint-spark moment, a figure abruptly appeared, blocked in front of them, that person loudly shouted, "Grandpa, Priest"

Under the cold claws and sharp fangs, Xiao Huan's desperately crying yet solemn face!

In that instant, Wild Dog Taoist only felt a gush of blood rushing up his head, his entire body like boiling up, looking at that figure, weak yet beautiful!

X

x

x

[Zhen]

A loud noise, the two figures collided.

Xiao Huan staggered and fell to the side, her body covered with mud, but she did not notice all these, looking back, she saw only Wild Dog Taoist who had pushed her, leapt forward, entangled with that beast and knocked that beast on the ground. That beast in its fury slashed madly onto Wild Dog Taoist, blood and flesh flew everywhere in that instant, and Wild Dog Taoist actually held onto a death grip on the beast, never releasing.

Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian turned pale, and the group behind them were also stunned with fright, the next moment, someone shouted, those that were mobile rushed out, surrounded that beast, took all the weapons that they could find, those that could not use their own hands and legs and even teeth, attacked desperately on that fierce beast demon.

The beast initially was still loudly roaring, struggled with its might to fight back but after a while, its voice gradually weakened, becoming deeper and deeper, finally silence. And the people around it seemed to go crazy, attacked with all of their might.

Until, Zhou YiXian was the first to come to his senses, quickly shouted for them to stop, it was more important to save lives, the rest then slowly stopped. And with this release, immediately many collapsed on the ground.

Xiao Huan's face had a few drops of blood but did not care at all, quickly used all of her effort and pulled the beast's body, trying to pull Wild Dog Taoist body from beneath it. However, after a long time, the beast and Wild Dog Taoist were still entangled together, Xiao Huan was stunned and anxious, almost crying out.

Finally, it was still Zhou YiXian who was still sensible, after carefully looking, he saw Wild Dog Taoist's hands had tore through the beast's tough fur, penetrated directly into its chest, stuck inside, no wonder they were inseparable. After discovering this, Zhou YiXian quickly called the rest to help, with their assistance, finally pulled Wild Dog Taoist's bloody hands out and separated the two bodies.

Xiao Huan with her pale face, placed Wild Dog Taoist on the ground, was about to ask when her countenance changed, using her hands to check Wild Dog Taoist's breath, immediately froze.!

"He Priest he"

Zhou YiXian said, "How is he?"

Xiao Huan with her lips slightly trembling, her eyes full of tears, voice trembling cried, "Priest he he is already dead."

Zhou YiXian for the moment was also stunned, struck speechless.

In Xiao Huan's cries and chokes, under the faint light in the darkness, Wild Dog Taoist's strange face, was full of pain but a twisted faint smile indistinctly could be seen.

He died, like a mad dog that had died!

In this world, who was once sober?

， ， ，

Chapter 189 - Capture Soul

Those that were lucky to escape, after resting, were either quiet or after offering a few words of comfort, left this bloodied terrible place one by one. In this troubled times, whose life wasn't valuable, and who would care about another's life? Every day and every night, every secluded unfamiliar area, didn't it stage the same scenes of life and death too?

Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan also left, the beast's' lair was disgusting and heavy with stench of blood, it was really not a place for humans to stay. They struggled to move Wild Dog Taoist's body from the lair, placed it at the same empty ground at the entrance of the forest.

Wild Dog Taoist's body, seemed to be still warm, but, eventually it would start to turn cold.

Zhou YiXian frowned, sitting beside, shaking his head and sighing, Xiao Huan was kneeling beside Wild Dog Taoist, choking with tears.

The night wind blew whistling, shaking the treetops, in the shadow, the mysterious man in black saw all that had happened. Even though to him, it would not cost him any effort to eliminate the two beasts but he seemed to be cold-blooded, from beginning to end he only watched silently in the dark. At the moment, his eyes was assessing Xiao Huan and again to Zhou YiXian.

After a long while, Zhou YiXian was heard saying quietly, "That's enough, Xiao Huan, he, he is dead after all, let's find a place to bury him, let him rest in peace."

Xiao Huan's body shook, her sobbing cries turned louder, suddenly cried to Zhou YiXian, "Grandpa, don't you know everything, why don't you think of a way to save him?"

Zhou YiXian smiled bitterly, "I am not the nine netherworlds Yama King of Hell, and neither the Heavens' deity, how would I know those back-to-life magic spells?"

Xiao Huan choked, "But Priest he died to save us."

Zhou YiXian sighed, his eyes shifted to Wild Dog Taoist's face, nodded his head and said, "Speaking of which, I was wrong about him, didn't think that someone like him, would also have real feelings and character. Ai, but now it's too late for words. Xiao Huan, listen to grandfather, let's bury him well."

Xiao Huan stared off in a daze, only tears kept streaming down, drop by drop, wetting Wild Dog Taoist's palm.

In the shadows, that man in black's eyes glinted but there wasn't the slightest grief or pity, in his eyes, the world's mortal emotions were all like scenes of play, only he, coldly watching from the side.

Zhou YiXian got up, searched around, in this desolate and wild forest, how would he be able to find any convenient thing. Searching for a long time, in the end he could only broke off a branch, scraping it on the ground a few times, only a little soil was dug out, if a pit was to be dug to bury someone, God knows how long he has to dig.

Couldn't it be that even a good burial was hard to achieve?

Zhou YiXian abandoned the stick and sighed long, a weary look indistinct on his face. After signing away, he looked back, suddenly frowned. Xiao Huan had already stopped crying, after wiping away her tears, she also found a branch, started to sweep away all of the twigs and leaves beside Wild Dog Taoist.

Zhou YiXian initially thought Xiao Huan expected that digging a pit would be hard and so tentatively tidied up the area around Wild Dog Taoist. Unexpectedly, the more he watched the more he felt that something was wrong, after sweeping out about a radius of about five chi, she threw the stick away, slowly walked back, her expression was sad, yet had a few degrees of resolution.

Zhou YiXian noticed Xiao Huan's strange expression, walked a few steps forward, said, "Xiao Huan, what are you doing?"

Xiao Huan quietly said, "I want to save him!"

Once the words were spoken, Zhou YiXian was greatly shocked, even the man in the shadows was shocked, his eyes immediately stared at Xiao Huan. Zhou YiXian asked in shock, "What did you say?"

Xiao Huan's tone was still low but her words were extremely clear, "I want to save him!"

Zhou YiXian shook his head and said, "Yes, Xiao Huan, I understood what you meant, no, not this, I mean, how are you going to save him?"

Xiao Huan stretched out her hand and straightened Wild Dog Taoist's corpse, both hands placed in a rather strange position, raised up above the shoulders, one hand towards the sky, another hand clenched into a fist, at the same time she said, "Priest was killed because of us, I, I can't do nothing."

Zhou YiXian frowned more tightly, watching Xiao Huan continued to straighten Wild Dog Taoist's feet, placing the right feet below the left feet, his expression turned ugly, suddenly shouted loudly, "Are you crazy, Xiao Huan, don't tell me you want to use 'Collect Soul Spell'?"

Xiao Huan was silent for a moment, whispered, "Grandpa, I only know this, maybe, maybe it can really save a life?"

"Bullshit!" Zhou YiXian for the first time berated Xiao Huan so fiercely, "What nonsense are you talking about? That 'Collect Soul Spell' although has the ability to collect souls but this spell has always been an unorthodox method, not to mention the unpredictable risks, disturbing the roaming souls, it is even a greater taboo of the netherworld ghost realm, you don't want your life anymore? Also, this spell has always been used on a living body, with them still breathing and their souls around, as such the spell can be casted, to a dead person how are you going to do it? He has stopped breathing and his soul would have been scattered, even if you have this spell, how are you going to find his soul, don't tell me you want to go to the nine netherworlds Hell to look among the innumerable souls?"

In the darkness, the pair of eyes glistened, it seemed to discover something inconceivable out of the sudden.

Xiao Huan, with her eyes red, cried, "Grandpa, he, he just died not long ago, perhaps his soul is still in the vicinity, there is still hope maybe. If we still delay then there is really no hope."

Zhou YiXian's countenance turned pale, with big steps went up to Xiao Huan, pulled her up, in a deep voice, said, "Xiao Huan, I am telling you, do not be delusional. I know what you are thinking in your heart, the last time you used your own ability and collected back that Jin PingEr's almost dispersed souls but I am telling you, this is different from that time. I repeat again, this spell must be used on a living person and this type of Ghost Sect skill, it will damage your Yin merit, that time you have only saved Jin PingEr once and you have already lost one year of your life. Now if you rashly do it again, casting the spell on a dead person, it's already hard to tell if you will succeed but your own body will at least be destroyed of your cultivation foundation, your life maybe twenty years and above. Have you thought about it carefully?"

The last few sentences, Zhou YiXian almost roared out the words, Xiao Huan for a moment was stunned too, she at the prime of her life, it would be a lie if she was not afraid of death, just that facing Wild Dog Taoist lying on the ground, she couldn't help herself. However when she thought about the horrible endings, her breathings quickened too.

The atmosphere froze for a moment, the next moment, Zhou YiXian softened his tone, softly said, "Xiao Huan, life is decided by fate, nobody can change it. I guessed Heaven wants Wild Dog to die today, let's bury him properly, it is also considered doing a service to him, alright?"

The expressions on Xiao Huan's face changed a few times, at times struggling, after a long time, suddenly looked up and said, "Grandpa, his life is not determined by Heaven."

Zhou YiXian looked at Xiao Huan expression, his heart sank, making a dry laugh, he said, "What?"

Xiao Huan let out a long breath, decidedly said, "Priest's fate, was decided by him, it was he who disregarded everything and ran over to save us, this then resulted in his unfortunate demise. If he had turned and left, anywhere on earth could be his choice to settle down." The young girl's face was pale, looking grieved, whispered, "Therefore, he died for us, without him, we will be long dead, how would we be discussing about what years of life?"

She looked at Zhou YiXian, Zhou YiXian for some reason, looked away, "Grandpa, I want to save him. No matter how dangerous this spell is, it will not be comparable to what he had to face in order to save us right?"

She resolutely said.

Zhou YiXian knew then her mind was made up and would not change again, he could only look up the sky and heaved a long sigh. And that man in the darkness, right now his eyes were looking at Xiao Huan, glimmering, radiating brilliance.

X

x

x

In the woods, right now it was deep in the night, Yin energy at its greatest.

In the dim light, that strange spell, slowly started.

The first drop of blood, dripped from a cut made on Xiao Huan's fair arm, slowly landed beside Wild Dog Taoist, then, Xiao Huan circled Wild Dog Taoist, using her own blood, made drops beside him, watching her shaking her wrist

slowly, the dripping blood dropped onto the ground, slowly formed a strange pattern.

In the dense forest, with the red-blood pattern gradually forming, faint ghost wails started. Zhou YiXian stood beside and watched, the corner of his eyes slightly twitching. And that man who had been watching from the shadows for a long time, right now suddenly frowned.

This scene, he seemed to have seen it before somewhere!

The great Shaman.

That man in black involuntarily, trembled slightly!

The blood formation that Xiao Huan made, clearly looked similar with the one the great shaman made when he tried to save BiYao but after Xiao Huan made a circle, the formation completed, the man in black already could tell, Xiao Huan's formation was still different from the great shaman. Not to mention the rest, just the scale of the formation was a lot smaller, maybe because both used blood as the medium and Xiao Huan used only her own blood, clearly could not be compared to the great shaman.

Perhaps it was also because of this reason, Xiao Huan's formation, the drawings were much simpler than the great shaman's but even though it was so, after one drawing, Xiao Huan was already swaying, her face pale.

Zhou YiXian did not say a word, went up to assist her. Xiao Huan was slightly weak, looked back at him and slightly smiled, and then slowly at the top of the formation, which was also three chi from Wild Dog Taoist's head, sit down

cross-legged.

In the dim dense forest, a ghost wail abruptly pierced the air, instantly the entire forest was filled with strange cries, eerie energies overwhelming surged over. The Yin wind blew and blew, blowing from all directions, shaking the surrounding trees, behind all of the trees' shadows, there seemed to be countless of cold eyes watching over here.

Xiao Huan looked solemn, slowly closed her eyes, a pair of fair hands together on the chest, her mouth chanting quietly a mysterious incantation, a moment later, her slender hands opened, slowly put down, into the blood-drawing before her.

The blood drawings around Wild Dog Taoist instantly lighted up, like suddenly receiving life, started to flow in the drawings. At the same time, Xiao Huan's pale face, seemed to have a few degrees of strange black energy.

The Yin wind became stronger and stronger, the entire forest at this moment seemed to darken down, only this formation started to glisten. The vibrant flowing blood, looked most delicious, attracting numerous spirits over.

Zhou YiXian looked more and more worried, he knew very well the dangers of this spell, imagine, ordinary human actually trying to snatch souls from the underworld, how dangerous this was. But Xiao Huan had cultivation, and only casted the spell within the forest boundary, its effect was considered not that strong, most likely it would not alert those powerful protectors of the ghost realm, else if one of them noticed this, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Just that right now, with just this formation, Xiao Huan looked like it was hard

to manage, the dark energy on her face increased, her body also started to tremble. Casting this spell, was different from saving Jin PingEr, there was still remnants of Jin PingEr's soul, as such relying on it to collect the remaining souls was much easier. That day when the great shaman was trying to save BiYao, although the formation was much larger but it was also because BiYao's remnant soul was still in the 'HeHuan Bell', and so the spell relied on that to probe the underworld, forcefully collected the remaining souls back. But it was also because of that, the great shaman exhausted his life's energy, secondly it alerted the protectors of the ghost realm, counterattacked by the ghost realm energy, in the end perished.

And right now Xiao Huan with her inadequate cultivation, performing the most difficult spell in the Ghost Sect, and missing the crux soul, even though the difficulty was to find Wild Dog Taoist's soul among the wandering souls of this forest, the risks of it, were already unimaginable for an ordinary person.

The two demon beasts had taken unknown number of lives, and unknown number of ghosts which died unjustly wandered around here, unable to reincarnate. And Xiao Huan making this formation here, clearly intended to collect a soul for this body, how wouldn't the surrounding ghosts go crazy over that?

Suddenly, the wind and clouds changed countenance, numerous indistinct black gases fought to be first and charged towards Xiao Huan, and the pained expression on Xiao Huan's face increased, her countenance almost shrouded entirely by the black gases.

Looking at this situation, most likely Xiao Huan would not be able to last long but for some reason, she refused to give up, so many grieved ghosts beside her circling around, either ghost wailings or howlings, or begging endlessly, or fiercely compelling, all various kinds, the world's anguishes, hopelessness, all of

the negative emotions, all seemed to be piercing into her brain, but Xiao Huan still held on bitterly, with her remaining spiritual energy left in her, searching within the sea of souls.

If she fails this time, most likely there would not be another chance!

Zhou YiXian was already drenched in sweat but dared not disturb Xiao Huan, only paced all around, sighing. And that man in the darkness, although all around them was ghastly and eerie atmosphere but he seemed not to care at all, on the contrary, those ghosts seemed to be afraid of him, keeping a distance. Right now that man's gaze, stared unblinkingly at Xiao Huan, subconsciously nodded his head, after a long time, his voice so soft only he could hear it, said, "How can it be possible, this young girl using Ghost Sect's skill and with such high aptitude, is still able to hold on. If she has a Ghost Sect teacher, with guidance, it's not even imaginable."

While speaking, he actually also strangely showed some hesitation.

And at this moment, Xiao Huan whose face was covered with black gases, suddenly revealed delight, her right hand which was immersed in the blood formation suddenly lifted up, grabbed empty air and then quickly placed down, grabbed Wild Dog Taoist's right hand. After which she quickly lifted her left hand out, with the same action grabbed the air, instantly, the ghosts wailed loudly at the same time, almost all sank into an uncontrollable rage, the ghostly air was as thick as iron, instantly the black gases enveloped over, shrouding Xiao Huan's body entirely.

Outside the formation, all of the trees within three zhangs suddenly withered, it was as if they could not bear this boundless vicious energy.

Zhou YiXian was frightened, helpless, he saw Xiao Huan panting heavily, a few times she tried to place her left hand onto Wild Dog Taoist's right hand but the infinite black energy pressed around her tightly, the ghosts wailing incessantly, Yin wind blew gusts after gusts, there seemed to be a strong force that prevented her. And Xiao Huan's countenance looked paler and paler, her body shaking, blood trails flowed out of her mouth.

Looking as this formation was about to be destroyed, Zhou YiXian panicked, was about to disregard everything and dashed in to pull Xiao Huan away, although he did not know what would be the consequence but it would be better to be away from these ghosts. Unexpectedly before he even moved, a black figure blocked before him. Zhou YiXian was shocked, looking at him, this black man seemed similar to the surrounding spirits.

That man in black's hoarse voice coldly spoke, "If you want your granddaughter to live, you better stand there and don't move."

Then, the black figure flashed, the man was already near Xiao Huan and the formation, without any more words, his arms swung in successions, black stuffs flew out of his hands, [ba ba ba] broke through the ground and sunk in, inserting around the formation.

Those things looked dark, similar to iron but not iron, unable to determine what it was but when those things inserted into the formation soil, the blood in the formation seemed to receive some force, the flow speed almost instantly increased twice, like boiling. A red glow lighted up from the formation, enveloped Xiao Huan.

The layer of red light seemed to be particularly effective towards the surrounding spirits, immediately the ghosts started to retreat, enveloped by the red light, Xiao Huan's countenance was quickly restored, her left hand which

was in the air immediately pressed down, grabbed Wild Dog Taoist's left hand.

The moment her hand grabbed Wild Dog Taoist's arm, a light exploding sound was heard, a dark red light started from Wild Dog Taoist's palm, like lightning, extended down, in a blink covered Wild Dog Taoist's body, closely following which, Wild Dog Taoist's entire body also lighted up, the next moment, again dimmed down, back to normal.

At that moment, Xiao Huan managed to open her eyes, stared intently in front of her, Wild Dog Taoist's head, suddenly tilted, actually let out a breath.

Xiao Huan was overjoyed, relieved, darkness suddenly in front of her eyes, she had already fainted.

, , ,

Chapter 190 - Ghost Way

Deep into the night.

Wild Dog Taoist who had passed through the gates of Hell and by luck was pulled back, right now most of his injuries were already bandaged up. Although he still looked weak but lying on the ground, his breathing weak yet gentle, for the time being his condition was not critical.

And Xiao Huan who had saved Wild Dog Taoist, was still unconscious but she was only exhausted, no major injuries, the other two people who were conscious were clearly aware of this point, and so they were not that worried.

As for Zhou YiXian, right now his concern was, or should say what he was guarding against, was the mysterious man who had helped saved Xiao Huan. Right now, he had already recognized that this man was not a stranger and had once met him not long ago, at Qing Yun Mountain foot HeYang City, that mysterious man inside the manor, unexpectedly they met again.

Zhou YiXian sat beside Xiao Huan, his eyes kept glancing back at that black figure who stood with his hands clasped behind. With his experience, he naturally knew that this person was highly-skilled in the unorthodox sect Ghost Way, just that that day he seemed to be a foe rather than friend but today the man actually saved Xiao Huan. The other time fortunately they had Ghost Li helping them, Zhou YiXian and the rest then managed to escape, now this situation, although the man's intention was unknown but their lives were now in his hands.

While Zhou YiXian was contemplating by himself, the man in black, also the same Mr Ghost who was secretly following Ghost Li into the south, looked to have a well-thought-out plan, never imagined that he was also deliberating. His action this time, was really not something he would have done usually, just that the Ghost Way art he was practising, had always been regarded as strange and evil by people, out of the three great true ways sects Taoism, Buddhism, Evil and southern border shaman art skills, flying one's banner on a solitary tree. However, according to what the secular world says, even the ill repute Evil Sect, also despised Ghost Way, for so many years, the Ghost Way members quietly continued on almost in a kind of darkness, Mr Ghost being able to receive the hospitality of Ghost King Sect Ghost King, was an exceptional case, and also had its reason.

And it was also because of that, the Ghost Way which started off mysterious and unfathomable although still continued on today but its members were extremely few and rare, nobody knew for sure when it would die off. To think of it it was also true, most ordinary people, not many would thought of practising this strange art which deals with the eerie ghost realm all the time.

Mr Ghost who had practised for so many years, his skills and power considered one of the top in the world, and in the Ghost Way, there was none comparable to him. His temperament had always been hard and stiff, this was also the result of practising the Ghost Way, he didn't expect tonight to see Xiao Huan, with her young age, actually used the Ghost Way advanced skill of Collect Soul Spell, he was really shocked, firstly because Xiao Huan who looked like a young and beautiful girl, in Ghost Way skill, looked to have unimaginable high aptitude; secondly the more shocking thing was, this Collect Soul skill although was one of Ghost Way secret skills but it had been lost for many years, even he as Ghost Way great master, great expert, also did not know, but Xiao Huan could actually use it, how would he not be shocked?

When Xiao Huan collected souls by force, although Mr Ghost did not know

the spell but with his high attainments in Ghost Way, his discernment also had distinctive qualities, one look and he knew Xiao Huan although had natural aptitude but she was asking for too much, and as expected after a while, even though Xiao Huan had surprised him when she managed to find Wild Dog Taoist's soul among the countless souls, she had already agitated the countless souls' vicious energies, counterattacked by them. When she looked like she was about to lose her life, for some reason, Mr Ghost could not stand by and eventually made a move to save her.

Although he did not know Collect Soul Spell but facing these ordinary ghosts, it was more than enough, once he made his move, immediately he activated a formation to protect Xiao Huan and allowed her to complete the Collect Soul Spell successfully. However after which, he had some hesitations and did not know what to do next.

The atmosphere in the scene, for a moment was that awkward, until a long time, Xiao Huan moved and finally awakened, softly called, "Grandpa." then opened her eyes.

Zhou YiXian was extremely delighted, quickly helped Xiao Huan up, she looked tired, had no strength in her limbs but looked fine, after she collected herself, she immediately turned to look at Wild Dog Taoist, saw him lying there with serious injuries but his breathings gentle, clearly resurrected, Xiao Huan then smiled.

She glanced around, then noticed Mr Ghost, she was surprised and then recognized him too, this person was that mysterious black-attired man at HeYang City, she couldn't help but shrank back, exclaimed, "Grandpa, he, he why is he here too?"

Zhou YiXian helped Xiao Huan up, quietly said, "I also don't know why is he

here out of the sudden, but just now when you are casting your spell at the critical juncture, it was him who helped you, you and Wild Dog then managed to avert the danger.”

Xiao Huan heard Zhou YiXian’s words, immediately recalled too, at the moment when she was unable to handle the souls’ backlash due to her inadequate ability, her formation suddenly received a boost and chased off all of the ghosts, it was actually because of that mysterious man in black.

Recalling that, Xiao Huan slowly nodded to Mr Ghost, said, “Many thanks to this senior.”

Mr Ghost seemed to ignore Xiao Huan’s gratitude words, suddenly coldly asked, “Miss, I have a few questions, will like to ask you, I hope you can answer me truthfully.”

Xiao Huan was surprised, at the same time felt Zhou YiXian’s hand tugged her, couldn’t help but hesitated for a moment but eventually said, “What question Senior has, feel free to ask?”

Mr Ghost nodded, said, “Ghost Way has always been secretive and undeclared, where did you learn this kind of Ghost Way skills?”

Xiao Huan was stunned, said, “Ghost Way, what Ghost way?”

Zhou YiXian beside her secretly sighed, Mr Ghost was instead stunned but looking at Xiao Huan’s expression, did not seemed to be fake, she genuinely seemed not to know Ghost Way. After a moment of silence, Mr Ghost said, “The Collect Soul Spell that you used just now, actually is Ghost Way’s advanced

and ingenious skill, don't you know?"

Xiao Huan shook her head in shock, said, "I, I do not know."

Mr Ghost immediately asked, "Then who did you learn this skill from?"

Xiao Huan shook her head and said, "Nobody taught me."

Mr Ghost was taken aback, Xiao Huan continued, "This Collect Soul Spell, at that time when I was young and naughty, in my grandfather's old residence while playing and making a mess, slipped and fell into a dry well, discovered and remembered these skills from the well's wall. I was still young at that time and so casually learnt it and for so many years I only used it once. Why, senior are you also interested in this skill?"

Mr Ghost was speechless, after a long while, he heaved a long sigh instead, his voice was rather desolate, a melancholy feeling.

Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian looked at each other, did not understand why did the man in black's mood turned melancholy out of a sudden but after a moment, Mr Ghost's hoarse voice ahead was suddenly heard, "Miss, what is your name?"

Zhou YiXian frowned, Xiao Huan had already answered, "My name is Xiao Huan."

Mr Ghost nodded, said, "I have some words to speak to you privately, can you walk over here?"

Zhou YiXian frowned deeply, clearly unwilling to leave Xiao Huan with this ghastly-looking fellow, but Xiao Huan did not thought much, recalling that this person had after all just saved her, she nodded and said, "Alright." After speaking, she ignored Zhou YiXian's covert obstruction, walked over.

Mr Ghost watched Xiao Huan came before him, slowly nodded, as if approving this young girl, until Xiao Huan came near, slowly, like he was deliberating something in his heart, quietly said, "Are you willing to practise the Ghost Way skills?"

Xiao Huan was taken aback, for a moment speechless but looking at Mr Ghost's black veil, the pair of eyes blazing, clearly he was not joking, couldn't help but had some hesitations.

Mr Ghost with his years of experience, carefully watched Xiao Huan's expression, guessed her thoughts, he did not force her, only said, "Just now when you casted the spells, facing the countless ghosts, what did you feel?"

Xiao Huan blushed and then turned pale, quietly said, "I, I was somewhat afraid."

Mr Ghost indifferently said, "It's nothing to be ashamed of, the mortals are ignorant, most fear ghosts and spirits, yet do not know the theory of ghost, it is only a kind of species after humans died and before being reborn. What humans fear, most likely it's their own demons."

He pointed to Xiao Huan, said, "Taking you as example, you had fear when you casted the spell, although you were still able to cast the spell but before you, there must be numerous illusions in front of you, all kinds of hideous

ferocious images right?”

Xiao Huan nodded in succession, said, “Yes.”

Mr Ghost snorted, said, “Actually the so-called Ghost Way, most important is to control your own demons, if you remained unruffled, all of the ghosts and spirits would not be able to sway your resolution. And if you think carefully, the reason those spirits got angry and counterattacked, looked extremely vicious and violent, didn’t imagined that they were like the innumerable humans in the world, once when they saw a chance to escape, a chance to return to their predestined lifespan, how would they not turn berserk over that?”

He clasped his hands behind and coldly said, “The mortals, criticized the ghostly things as evil and ferocious but they do not know themselves are the same, isn’t it funny?”

Xiao Huan looked thoughtful, slowly nodded.

Mr Ghost said again, “I know what you are thinking, you detest the Ghost Way reputation but what you used just now is Ghost Way skill, saved that Wild Dog’s life, it can be seen that Ghost Way is not without a single redeeming feature. Today I see that you are endowed with a natural aptitude not seen for a hundred years in Ghost Way, I really can’t bear to let it slip therefore have the intention to teach you, “speaking till here, he smiled faintly, said, “As for the future, even if you discover my conduct are mostly evil, and want to kill me, it is also fine. We in the Ghost Way, view those conventional etiquette as mere rubbish.”

Xiao Huan was stunned, took a step back.

Mr Ghost was silent for a moment, his eyes looked at Xiao Huan’s face, saw

her very hesitant, her delicate beautiful face kept frowning. Mr Ghost did not speak more, took out a book about half a finger thick with black wordless cover and threw it to Xiao Huan, Xiao Huan subconsciously caught it, looked at him stunned.

Mr Ghost indifferently said, "What this book documented, is half of my lifetime comprehension of the Ghost Way cultivation, in it various methods of smelting weapons, I believe in the world there is nothing on par to it. Whether you choose to learn it, or not learn it, it is up to you." Speaking, he turned and was about to leave.

Xiao Huan looked at his back figure, subconsciously called out, "Senior, wait."

Mr Ghost paused, said, "What?"

Xiao Huan instead held her breath for a moment, said, "I, I still do not know senior's name?"

Mr Ghost, backfacing her, did not move, after a long time said, "I passed you skills, is not for you to remember me, good luck."

Speaking, he again was about to leave, Xiao Huan feeling anxious, suddenly loudly said, "This, this you saved my life, and passed me skills, I feel that, feel that I should call you teacher right?"

Mr Ghost's body shook, as if this young delicate girl's words behind him, compared to the five sounds of thunders over his head, were even more intense. Just that he was after all highly skilled, very quickly recovered, slowly turned around, black veil covered his face, nobody could tell his expression but

from his glistening pair of eyes, anyone could see, his current unusual emotion.

“You called me teacher?”

Xiao Huan blushed, felt somehow embarrassed, stammered, “This is this is my own idea, if, if senior you are not willing, I, “

Mr Ghost suddenly interrupted, “Alright, don’t say anymore.”

Xiao Huan was surprised, looked up, Mr Ghost only stared deeply at Xiao Huan, nodded, again took something out from his bosom, passed it over to Xiao Huan, said, “Looking at the fact that you called me teacher, I will gift this to you.”

Xiao Huan looked down, saw a pile of seven dark triangular items, each half an inch big, smooth sides, unable to tell its material, like iron but not iron. Xiao Huan hesitated for a moment, looked at Mr Ghost, saw his eyes slightly gentle and so took it. Looking at it carefully, saw a small hole at the top of the items, dark red strings strung them together. Every triangle-shaped item, both sides had different dark red mysterious patterns, some looked like flames burning, some like beasts roaring, all different. Receiving it, she felt it cool to the skin, at the same time it contained a faint smell of blood.

Zhou YiXian standing behind eyes narrowed, one look and he recognized that was the item Mr Ghost used when he saved Xiao Huan.

Mr Ghost indifferently said, “This thing is called ‘Blood Jade Bone Piece’, also one of the treasures of Ghost Way, has the special ability to stimulate Ghost Way’s spells, cultivation of only level five, with this treasure, at least can be

brought up to level seven, with good aptitude, it can even go up to level ten.”

Xiao Huan was surprised and delighted, nodded her head in succession, Zhou YiXian at a distance was instead shaking his head.

Mr Ghost watched Xiao Huan for a long time, suddenly shook his head and sighed, quietly said, “Considering tonight, I have only met you twice, to think that forget it, this is also fate. If in the future you have achieved success in your training, if by chance, “He lifted his head up to the sky, said, “Then help me save someone.”

Xiao Huan was surprised, said, “Save someone, who?”

Mr Ghost quietly shook his head, like bitterly laughing, said, “We will talk about it in the future.”

Speaking, he abruptly turned, as if like he did not wish to remain any longer, his dark figure like apparition, instantly shot out, disappeared in a blink into the dense dark woods. Xiao Huan couldn't call out in time, she had just opened her mouth and that figure was gone. For some reason, that man in black gave her a faint feeling of kinship, Xiao Huan sighed, held the item tightly in her hand.

Zhou YiXian snorted, walked over, took the item in Xiao Huan's hand and looked at it carefully, turned it over face by face, Xiao Huan was puzzled, said, “Grandpa, what is it?”

Zhou YiXian sneered, said, “A good teacher that you have acknowledged, you know what is this thing made of?”

Xiao Huan was stunned, said, “What is it?”

Zhou YiXian said, “This ghostly item is smelted out of the skull of an extremely Yin person, in it it contained countless of live souls, to achieve this degree of power.”

Xiao Huan was shocked, took it and looked, but couldn’t tell that it was human bones, looked more like jade stone, couldn’t help but rolled her eyes at him, said, “Grandpa, is it really true, how does this look like human skull?”

Zhou YiXian immediately was enraged, said, “You found a fellow that look like a ghost and not human to be your teacher, and so don’t believe me anymore?”

Xiao Huan stuck out her tongue, placed the item into her bosom, laughed and said, “Alright, grandpa, anyway in the future I will only use this item to do good deeds, not bad ones, alright?”

Zhou YiXian snorted, turned and walked, mumbling to himself, “It’d be a wonder if I believe you.”

Xiao Huan [he he] laughed, extremely sweet and charming, followed along.

’ ’ ’

Chapter 191 - Surprise Appearance

Over at Zhou YiXian side, they rested and treated Wild Dog, Wild Dog after knowing he was pulled back from Hell, felt really fortunate, secretly felt confused over his brave acts at that time. But whatever it was, after that, Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan’s relationships with Wild Dog Taoist became closer, after all they had been through life and death together, Zhou YiXian was not as cold to Wild Dog as in the past, however he was still the same when he was ordering Wild Dog to do tasks but as Wild Dog Taoist was still recovering from his injuries, Zhou YiXian instead had to do more, as such again making the old man grumbled and complained.

But Xiao Huan and Wild Dog were still the same as before but Wild Dog Taoist looked even more nervous than before when he was before Xiao Huan, and spoke lesser to her. Although it was puzzling but Xiao Huan did not sense it, those days her attention was mostly on that strange book with black wordless cover.

Wild Dog Taoist had never seen Xiao Huan read that book before, felt rather bewildered but Xiao Huan never revealed the origin of this book, Zhou YiXian also did not explain, as time passed, he too slowly got used to it, just that occasionally felt that Xiao Huan looked different, gradually, she seemed different somehow but he was unable to put a finger to it.

X

x

x

The demon beast catastrophe, started from the middle of southern border ten thousands great mountains, the first to suffer would also be southern border.

The torments that those various tribes suffered, compared to Central Plains, were far more serious. Nine out of ten houses were empty, that was almost the inevitable end for many of the villages and towns, even for an entire village with no survivors, that was also frequent.

After the catastrophe, the remaining small groups of demon beasts in southern border, were much more than those in Central Plains, the people who survived, had to endure the demons harassments, that kind of life was really dark days, like in an abyss of suffering.

Ghost Li in that kind of situation, once again set foot onto southern border vast land.

Along the way, he did not discover any traces of the demons but saw numerous swarms of Good Faction members, among them also including Qing Yun, FenXiang etc those great sects. Those people were like berserk, all looking for the Beast Deity but very obviously, so many of them searching but none found him.

After defeated in Qing Yun battle, the Beast Deity escaped with serious injures and seemed to disappear into thin air, no one could find him. But this southern border ten thousands great mountains was still his home, no matter what, he would eventually come back right?

With that thought, Ghost Li entered southern border. Also entering the southern border, were also numerous Good Faction disciples, FenXiang Valley

sect was back to their home ground, but for the other Good Faction disciples, naturally they were not only there to eliminate the remaining demon beasts.

But no matter what, because of those people, the remaining fearless demons temporarily exercised restraint, these Good Faction disciples after all, to the best of their abilities, eliminated those demons. As such, the mood in different areas of the southern border also received a boost.

Just that nobody, saw even the shadow of the Beast Deity in the southern border realm, now the only possibility, was only within that barren mountains and unruly rivers, strange and mysterious ten thousands great mountains.

In the layers and layers of dark mountains ranges, nobody knew how much secrets it concealed!

Ghost Li before entering the mountains, first went to the southern border Miao Tribe Seven Miles Cave, for no other reason than because of what the great shaman did for BiYao, he also wanted to offer his respect.

TianShui Stockade, Seven Miles Cave, walking along the route, the original bustling scenes were gone, tragic scenes along the way, even his hardened heart also could not help but be moved.

What was it for, that resulted in such a great calamity?

His own cultivation achieved results, in the huge waves of wickedness he stayed out of it but what about the countless of commoners who suffered? What did they do wrong, why must they suffered such calamity?

Recalling his days at Tian Yin Temple, the countless of commoners day and night prayed to the Gods and Buddhas, looking at the world, there were many much more people who also did that, prostrated in worship to the Heavens deities. But when the catastrophe came, who helped them?

And so, was there still a use for that kind of worship?

Or should it be said, it was really a response to the mysterious words which consistently appeared throughout the <Tian Shu>:

Heaven and Earth heartless, treats all living things as straw dogs?

X

x

x

Stepping Into Seven Miles Cave, Ghost Li sucked in a breath of cold air, this place which was once a picturesque scenery in his memory, was already devastated and ruined beyond recognition. The undulating rows of houses, only almost left broken walls, the usual crowded streets were gone, not to mention kids running around.

The number of remaining people looked to be only one or two out of ten, most were standing before the houses, despondently trying to salvage usable things from the ruins, however, more often than not, what they could find, were only the remains of the deceased.

In the entire Seven Miles Cave, a sad and decayed atmosphere permeated the air, occasionally few children, staring blankly, their eyes dazed and full of fear,

appeared and the next moment, there would be an adult appearing behind, pulling them back in.

Ghost Li slowly walked along the street, soon that attracted some of the Miao tribe people's attention, their eyes, thick with wary. In the unusual atmosphere, even Xiao Hui, seemed to turn much obedient, although it was still peering around.

Ghost Li secretly sighed, did not wish to see anymore, quickened his pace, straight to that altar up the mountain, as he walked further in, the surrounding houses and roads clearly revealed even more, the extent of the destructions. Ghost Li was silent, vaguely saw the traces of that fateful day when the catastrophe arrived, the countless Miao tribe warriors battling the vicious demons in order to protect the holy ground, putting up a desperate fight!

Even the air, seemed to be permeated with a faint smell of blood.

At the foot of the mountain, two young Miao soldiers stopped him. Ghost Li quietly stopped, looked at them, those two people, armed with spears and armours but they were only fifteen, sixteen-year-old boys only, even their armours, looked larger than their bodies, not knowing if those were left behind by the once heroic warriors.

"Gu lu ji ji hu?" A man asked in Miao language.

Ghost Li did not understand but surmised what he was asking, and so did not speak, only lifted his head and gestured to the mid-mountains. He did not use his fingers, because he still remembered, Miao people regarded that behavior as disrespectful.

The two juveniles were startled a moment, looked at each other, then one of them who appeared older, shook his head, both of them did not make way. Ghost Li felt slightly anxious but really did not wish to pick a fight with the great shaman tribe people, and after watching the devastating scene in the Seven Miles, he couldn't bear to make a move.

He was silent for a long time, when the hostility in the eyes of those two teenagers increased, he sighed, turned and was about to leave.

But he had only taken a few steps when suddenly, there was a stir from the mountains, he turned around and looked, someone quickly ran down from the mountain, first spoke in Miao language to the two teenagers, the two young men nodded a few times, stood to the side, then, the person who looked to be a priest aged around forty or so, used broken Central Plains language to speak to Ghost Li,

"Hello, great, great shaman invites you up."

Ghost Li was surprised, frowned, "Great shaman?"

The man nodded, Ghost Li took a deep breath, nodded his head and followed the man up the mountain.

The cave was still there but the entrance architecture and altar, were beyond recognition, broken stones fragments, littered everywhere. Among the rocks, there was a young Miao person, looked to be only thirty or so, wearing the great shaman robes, smiled and watched Ghost Li walked over.

His eyes, glistened faintly, like a passion of flames burning within it,

completely different from the people below.

Ghost Li went before him, that young man smiled, surprisingly used fluent Central Plains language, said, "Hello, Mr Ghost Li, I am southern border Miao tribe new generation of great shamans, I have long heard of your great name."

Ghost Li was stunned for a moment, nodded in return, before he could speak, that young great shaman had already smiled and said, "Come on in, I'll take you to see the previous great shaman."

Then he took the lead and walked into the dim cave. Ghost Li followed behind him and too slowly merged into the darkness.

The cave was still as dim, the young shaman figure wavered slightly ahead, for some reason, Ghost Li felt he looked familiar, carefully recalling, he realized the great shaman had called out this young man when he was here the last time, didn't expected that after such a short time, he already assumed the position of the great shaman.

And like the last time, the young shaman brought Ghost Li to the hut deep within the mountain which worshipped the Dog Deity, the huge fire was still burning, emitting crackling sounds, just that that withered old figure was no longer around.

The young man stepped forward, bowed respectfully towards the Dog Deity statue and then from the statue's mouth, took out a wooden box, respectfully placed it on the ground and spoke to Ghost Li, "Our Miao people customs, after the death of the great shaman, under the Dog Deity status, to be worshipped for a year, this is the elder's ashes."

Ghost Li was silent, looked at the small wooden box, the box was unadorned, not a single embellishment, even the wood used, was also from the most commonly seen trees in southern border, the great shaman like numerous Miao people, laid quietly here in peace.

Ghost Li bent his body, made a deep bow.

The monkey Xiao Hui with a [zhi] sound, jumped down, ran off by itself.

The young shaman, in accordance with their customs, also bowed to return the gesture and then carefully placed the simple wooden box into the statue mouth again.

The two people beside the fire, sat on the floor, the fire reflected in their eyes, dazzling in the darkness.

Without waiting for Ghost Li to ask, the young man had already spoken, "I was the elder's disciple, and after the terrible calamity, all of the senior priests were dead and so, I succeeded the great shaman position."

Ghost Li silently nodded, his eyes subconsciously looked over to the Dog Deity, slowly said, "The great shaman could be said he died because of me, each time I think of that, I don't feel good."

That young shaman bowed slightly, said, "You are wrong, teacher had said to me long before, he had reached the end of his lifespan, even if he did not go to the Central Plains, he would also die, in fact it is your honourable sect who sent teacher's ashes back, this is already our entire Miao tribe's fortune."

Ghost Li sighed, quietly said, "These things, were done by other sincere people, it has nothing to do with me."

The young great shaman smiled, apparently did not mind Ghost Li's words, said, "But your visit this time to our Seven Miles Cave, I do not know what is the reason for it?"

Ghost Li said, "Actually it is not for any reason, I just wanted to offer my respect to the senior great shaman. Other than that, the calamity this time is so devastating, as for that chief culprit, I intend to pursue him, I wonder if you have any clues?"

The young shaman's countenance changed slightly, clearly to him, Beast Deity these two words were still horrible and taboo. Very quickly he became quiet, after a long while, Ghost Li indifferently said, "You don't have to mind, countless number of people in the world are also looking for him, and might not even find him, it is not strange that you don't know too. I am disturbing you here, so I will take my leave first."

When he finished, he was about to get up, the young shaman looked hesitant, suddenly said, "You want to track the Beast Deity, is that true?"

Ghost Li said, "Yes."

The young shaman stared at him and said, "You can kill him."

Ghost Li was silent for a long time, said, "I am not sure."

The young shaman pondered for a moment, said, "Since that is so, I will tell

you what I know. I do not know how to find the Beast Deity but in my tribe's ancient legend, the Beast Deity is a devil-like monster, he cannot be killed, and only can be subdued and sealed like what our shaman goddess did thousand of years ago. In order to suppress him, you will need to remove our southern border tribes' divine weapons from his body. The five divine weapons are the life sources of the Beast Demon, if he loses them, the Beast Demon will definitely go into a deep sleep. In addition, there is a critical point, at that time when the Beast Demon was wreaking havoc, his demon powers powerful and invincible, thanks to our shaman goddess who used the mysterious formation passed down in our shaman tribe, 'Eight Savage Inferno Formation', trapped it within, if you can find the formation, perhaps"

Ghost Li slowly nodded.

The young shaman thought for a moment, and said, "How to find the beast demon, I really have no idea but according to our tribe legend, when shaman goddess trapped and sealed the beast, it was deep inside the ten thousands great mountains, an ancient mountain cave named Subdue Devil Cave. And the legend also said that our goddess turned into a stone statue, facing the ancient cave, maybe when you find such a place, there will be the beast demon's tracks."

Ghost Li remembered it all, nodded to the young shaman, said, "Thank you."

The great shaman smiled, and did not say anything.

When the two of them walked out of the cave, Ghost Li could not help but ask him, why did he not have grief in his eyes.

That young shaman paused, lightly said, "If I lose myself in my grief again,

what will happen to the people in the Seven Miles Cave? It is not that I am not grieving, it is that I cannot be sad!”

Ghost Li after listening, was silent for a long time before he took his leave.

X

x

x

After leaving the cave, Ghost Li did not hurry, slowly travelled, thought long on the young shaman words, that ‘Eight Savage Inferno Formation’ made him thought of another person, Xiao Bai.

That day she left in anger, and from then on there was no news of her, although with her level of skills, there was nothing much to worry about but thinking about the reason for her departure, most likely it was to find that ‘Eight Savage Inferno Formation’, Ghost Li felt somehow guilty.

The Sinister Orb had troubled him for many years but some time ago at Tian Yin Temple Wordless Jade Wall, he achieved enlightenment from the fourth volume of the <Tian Shu>, combining the Sinister Orb’s evil powers with Buddhist, Taoist, Evil three great sects true ways, even including the mysterious Inferno Mirror’s pure Yang power, indistinctly peeped into the source of all sects power, the Sinister Orb’s evil power to him, with his cultivation advanced improvement, was no longer a serious concern to his life.

Just that, for some reasons, following the enlightenment at the Wordless Jade Wall, he gradually got over many things, things that he never thought of in the past, also appeared in his memories.

Xiao Bai treated him so, most likely it wasn't entirely all because of her relationship with BiYao?

She by herself, on the day the demon beast catastrophe was in full swing, returned to southern border to find the formation, the vast heaven and earth, and now not a single news from her. Ghost Li felt an inexplicable pain when he thought of that, just that the heaven and earth was so vast, he really did not know where to start finding.

Ghost Li contemplated for a long time, and finally decided to go secretly to FenXiang Valley first, for no other reason, firstly because he heard Xiao Bao once said, the formation appeared in FenXiang Valley Inferno Altar before, in that case, for Xiao Bai to find this formation, most likely she would go there, and even if she was not, taking a look for himself would be also good.

His mind made up, Ghost Li headed to FenXiang Valley.

FenXiang Valley was one of the three great Good Faction sects, just that in this calamity, it was the first to bear the brunt, happened to be at the entrance of the demon beasts massacre, just that although FenXiang Valley was wrecked but its disciples, nobody was hurt seriously.

However as a reputable sect of the Good Faction, with such results, inevitably they lost face, and after the catastrophe, many rumours and gossips spread around, implying FenXiang Valley disciples were cowards, as one of the leading Good Faction sect, actually did not dare to face the demon calamity by itself, instead hid behind Qing Yun sect.

Now that Qing Yun sect Reverend DaoXuan in the world's Good Faction, was

really of paramount importance, revered with great prestige, FenXiang Valley really pale in comparison. After which when crowds of Good Faction disciples entered the southern border to search for the Beast Deity, FenXiang Valley naturally would not want to lose out, but when they met each other, FenXiang Valley disciples had less of their arrogant attitude.

But even it was so, FenXiang Valley was after all a famous sect, coupled with the fact that their real abilities were still there, although there were many rumours and gossips but nobody dared to insult them in their face. As for their valley, it was really in a mess, at least when Ghost Li sneaked in, what he saw, was this.

The original tranquil and beautiful valley, was now filled with an unpleasant burnt smell and stench, countless disciples carrying and moving different rotting garbage and bodies, some were humans, many were also animals.

Ghost Li secretly observed, after pondering for a moment, he already understood, that day when he sneaked into the valley late in the night, he was discovered in the end, it wasn't because the disciples were all highly-skilled, it was because of the many strange creatures that they reared, taking one unaware.

But Yun YiLan was able to bring most of his disciples to Central Plains, he was unable to do that for the creatures, and when the catastrophe came, those extremely brutal demons flooded through here, those creatures unfortunately were unable to escape. After a long time, their corpses decayed, adding to the stench.

But right now without those creatures, it was beneficial to Ghost Li, at least he did not have to worry, in the corners of those rooms, which creature would suddenly sound the alarm, exposing him.

FenXiang Valley disciples were many but most were dispatched to search for the Beast Deity, what most Good Faction sects wanted, how could FenXiang Valley not want it too. The remaining disciples, most were disgruntled and doing cleaning, even if there were some elders in the valley but like Yun YiLan, Shangguan Ce these kind of figures, they would not patrol the valley all the time. Ghost Li without encounter any difficulties, sneaked into the valley.

At the moment it was only evening, much brighter than that time when he was here, but after sneaking in, he did not know how easy it would be.

Ghost Li after entering the valley, did not do much, headed straight to the Inferno Altar direction, that day when Xiao Bai was incarcerated, that formation was also there. But the place was after all a sacred area, in such a hectic situation, Inferno altar's security, seemed to be even tighter than before, not knowing if it was because of Xiao Bai's escape and outsiders sneaking in.

Just that with Ghost Li's current cultivation, although the security was tight but Ghost Li carefully infiltrated in, finally swept into the majestic Inferno altar.

And as he expected, although the security was tight outside, nobody was guarding inside, a quick glance, the place looked to be the same as previously, the floor still had the strange dark red formation, deeply engraved into the ground, Ghost Li comprehended, this was the legendary mysterious Eight Savage Inferno Formation.

But the day when Ghost Li and Xiao Bai escaped, the magma eruption that they triggered, the damage was still faintly visible. Burnt black areas on the walls, places where the stones collapsed, even the formation on the ground, some areas were slightly deformed by the intense fire.

But if this was a commonplace, in that kind of disaster it would long be destroyed, the surrounding areas were still generally intact, it seemed like the formation using its special powers, saved this place.

Looking up, the second, third level's secret traps had lost their effectiveness, opening just like that, revealing empty, dark black holes. The entire majestic altar, reflected in the faint fire, only Ghost Li's figure was gently wavering.

Ghost Li was silent for a long time, shook his head, went to the formation and carefully looked, saw all of the ferocious deities still looked the same in his memory, portrayed clearly and lifelike, and the patterns connecting these figures, were still as complicated and strange. Ghost Li took a deep breath, sat down cross-legged in this formation.

Just when he was about to meditate on this legendary shaman formation, suddenly, in the silent and uncanny altar, the darkness ahead of him, a clear and reverberating woman's laughter was heard.

Ghost Li's countenance changed, stood up abruptly, looked up and blurted out, "Is it you, Xiao Bai"

His voice came to a halt, a figure drifted down from the top, a familiar light yellow clothing, bright and soft eyes, one look and one would be drunk in her beauty -

It was a person he would never dreamed of meeting, that girl who was rumoured to be dead in the catastrophe - Jin PingEr!

x

x

After the initial shock, Ghost Li quickly calmed down, Jin PingEr was still standing there, as if nothing had changed, her clothes, face and expression, even her lips, still had that faint and coquettish smile.

She looked at Ghost Li, smiled and said, "Hello"

Ghost Li looked at her silently, after a long time said, "Why are you here?"

Jin PingEr using her hand to gently brush her hair, the little action, as if contained infinite amorous feelings, softly said, "I am here waiting for you."

Ghost Li frowned and said, "Waiting for me? For what? How do you know I will come here?"

Jin PingEr smiled and said, "Don't tell me you have forgotten, the last time you were here, was together with me, I heard that this time you are tracking the Beast Deity, according to the southern border's legend, in order to subdue and seal the deity, naturally the formation is required. Other than not coming here, where can you go?"

She squinted her eyes slightly, maybe there was a slight arrogant, and an unspoken seduction, smiled said, "You see, am I smart?"

Ghost Li frowned, felt that after his skills improved, with Jin PingEr's seduction, he still felt slightly moved, he could not help but was secretly

shocked. After the catastrophe, the girl who was rumoured to be dead, seemed to improve in her skills instead.

Since she was not dead, then the others, the Evil Sect martial experts who were crushed in the calamity? Don't tell him they did not die too?

Ghost Li's heart was bewildered but his face was still cold, he said, "You still have not answered me, why are you waiting for me?"

Jin PingEr smiled coquettishly, her indifferent tone instead uttered shocking words, "I know the location of the Subdue Devil Cave where the Beast Deity was sealed in, after Ghost King sect leader knew about this, he allow me to come and assist you."

Ghost Li's body received a great shock, suddenly looked up, looked over at Jin PingEr, but her eyes were like water, her smile like flower, not the slightest unusual.

, , , ,

Chapter 192 - Fresh Blood

Ghost Li watched Jin PingEr for a long time, his eyebrows slowly frowning but he did not speak, and Jin PingEr under Ghost Li's stare, looked unconcerned, did not feel that her words were inappropriate at this moment, smiling sweetly and looking at Ghost Li.

In the Inferno Altar, the place turned quiet. Xiao Hui who was crouching at Ghost Li's shoulder did not like the atmosphere and moved, [zhi zhi] called out twice, leapt down from his shoulder, peering around, it then walked off by itself, slowly to the drawings in the middle of the altar.

Ghost Li slowly looked away, saw Xiao Hui who was crouching on the floor curiously and looking at those ferocious drawings, slowly said, "So, you already much of it?"

Jin PingEr smiled, that smile was warm like spring wind, gently brushing past this cold hall, said, "I am a small and weak woman, how would I know anything, I am only fortunate to have visited a few places in the past, and also received Ghost King sect head's important regard, that's I came to assist you."

Pursing her lips and smiling, she said, "Don't think too much!"

Ghost Li frowned and did not speak, even more so ignored the indistinct flirtatious tone in Jin PingEr's words, after contemplating for a moment, he seemed to forget the reason why Jin PingEr was here, and also the intricate and mysterious relationship between her and Ghost King, only indifferently said, "Since it is so, then I must ask for your guidance."

Jin PingEr's eyes glimmered but the smile on her face remained, said, "GongZi please speak."

Ghost Li said, "Looks like you are here before me, like what you said, the legend said in order to subdue the Beast Deity, the 'Eight Savage Inferno Formation' here is vital, just that I have dull wits and can't figure it out, I wonder if Miss Jin has some comprehension?"

Jin PingEr shook her head, a bitter smile on her face, said, "To tell you the truth, actually I have been in Inferno Altar for three days but I end up empty-handed, other than those messy drawings engraved on the ground, I did not discover anything else."

Ghost Li's gaze couldn't help but shifted to the dark red drawings under his feet, different from Jin PingEr, including Xiao Hui, he had experienced the power of that strange formation, that overwhelming force, and that terrible red huge beast, were all memories that were not easy to forget. Or maybe it was because of that, Xiao Hui excitedly lay on the ground, scratching there, touching here, seemed to be searching for something?

Unless after that earthshaking event, the volcano lava eruption, actually destroyed the formation here?

The thought flashed past Ghost Li's head but he did not reveal it out, after keeping silent for a moment, he again looked at Jin PingEr, said, "Miss Jin, no matter what, this is the only place we know that has the 'Eight Savage Inferno Formation', since this is vital to subdue the Beast Deity, why don't we stay a few more days here, maybe there is still some hope."

Jin PingEr smiled sweetly, extremely coquettishly, said, “Alright.”

Ghost Li glanced at her and then looked away, again sat down before the drawings, not long after, a whiff of faint fragrance came over, light clothes fluttered, it was Jin PingEr who sat down not far from him, and the distance between them, seemed to be nearer.

Ghost Li’s frowned but he did not speak and also did not look at the beauty beside him, only watched closely at the drawings, for some reason, in his heart, another thought came up:

That day Xiao Bai said she was going to southern border to search for the ‘Eight Savage Inferno Formation’ incantation but it had been a long time since there was any news of her; and in the whole world it seemed like only this place has the Eight Savage Inferno Formation, but Xiao Bai evidently was not here, then, where would she be right now?

Is she still doing fine?

This vague thought, in the coming days, frequently flashed past Ghost Li’s head.

X

x

x

However it seemed like on that day, the damage was much bigger than what Ghost Li’s assumed, even though those engravings on the ground still looked intact but it clearly did not have that spiritual energy as before, or that powerful

vicious force, what was left, was only the stiff stone engravings.

Ghost Li and Jin PingEr stayed secretly in the Inferno Altar for a total of seven days, trying to figure it out but still nothing. In-between FenXiang Valley disciples came in to conduct checks, a few times Shangguan Ce also personally brought men to do the rounds but the Ghost Li today, including Jin PingEr, their skills had already improved tremendously, they concealed themselves above in the dim Inferno Altar and easily escaped detection.

Just that in the end they were still unable to grasp the essentials of the formation, it was really troubling.

This day, the two of them sat facing those stiff drawings for an afternoon, suddenly, Jin PingEr stretched, her slim waist looking like a seductive snake, an alluring image. Even though the only man beside her, stared intently on the floor carvings, thinking hard, did not notice Jin PingEr's lithe and graceful dance at all.

Jin PingEr softly humphed, glared at Ghost Li, her eyes seemed to have a trace of complicated emotion but that was only a flash. The next moment, she sighed and said, "Are you able to tell anything from it?"

Ghost Li's body moved then slowly focused back, turned and glanced at Jin PingEr, shook his head, said, "You?"

Jin PingEr did not answer and only laughed bitterly but Ghost Li already understood.

Jin PingEr frowned and said, "We have looked at these ghostly things for

seven days. In the seven days, we did all we could but not to say activating this formation, even trying to stir some figures up seem impossible, what exactly happened here?”

Ghost Li after being silent for a moment, looked up into the darkness above, said, “That day when I was here rescuing someone, I triggered the mechanism in this hall, the Eight Savage Inferno Formation was immediately activated. But” his eyes glanced towards the middle of the hall, a strange tone in his words, said, “But that mechanism, is already gone now.”

Jin PingEr looked towards the direction of his gaze and saw a small stone platform raised in the middle but the stone was burnt black, congealed together into an ugly-looking form, how would it look like some superb craftsmanship mechanism.

In fact, when Ghost Li looked at that scene, he knew that strange stone mechanism was already destroyed, and the overwhelming fierce forces emitted by the ferocious stone engravings, right now were all gone.

The stretch of the once terrible carvings, looked to have become lifeless things.

The two of them sank into silence, not knowing what to say, after a long time, Jin PingEr seemed to think of something, raised her head and was about to speak, suddenly her countenance changed, Ghost Li’s brows also frowned, suddenly turned, immediately his eyes swept to where Xiao Hui was playing by itself, grabbed Xiao Hui and then floated up, the next moment, already disappeared into the darkness above the altar.

Jin PingEr after watching him disappearing into the darkness in two or three

movements, smiled and then also floated up and disappeared.

The next moment, [zhi ya] a sound, deep muffled sound reverberated in the altar.

The door, was opened.

Footsteps were heard, the number of people seemed to be a lot but a powerful voice was heard indistinctly, after saying a few words, the place immediately quietened down. Then, from the door, three people walked in.

The first person, was FenXiang Valley master Yun YiLan, following behind him on his right was his junior brother Shanguan Ce, and the last person, about a few steps behind, was Yun YiLan's favourite disciple, Li Xun.

After the three of them entered, Li Xun turned and closed the heavy door, immediately cut off the light outside, only dim light gently flickered in there.

X

x

x

Losing its spiritual power, the third level of the Inferno Altar which was originally in ice, had long lost the bitter cold, what was left were only the huge and hard cold rocks. In the darkness, Ghost Li and Jin PingEr quietly passed through that black cave hole, watching from above in the darkness.

Xiao Hui who seemed to know this was different, also turned quiet,

obediently crouched beside its master.

Yun YiLan and Shangguan Ce slowly walked to the middle of the altar, stood at the formation and looked far, their faces enveloped in the dimness.

The three people stood there, after a long period of silence, did not speak, the atmosphere indistinctly strange. And above them, Ghost Li seemed to sense it, glanced over at Jin PingEr and happened that Jin PingEr was also looking at him. Both saw the faint bewilderment in each other eyes.

Yun YiLan looked solemn, or maybe his mood should be so, whoever it was, after watching their own painstakingly built-up business over the years turned into this, most probably would also be in a bad mood. Just that at one glance his face seemed expressionless, after some time, it seemed to give people an impression that its ever-changing but if you watched carefully, again discovered, his face had never changed, what changed, was only your heart.

At least, during the time at Qing Yun Hill, the world was not be able to see that image of him.

After a long time, Yun YiLan's shifting gaze in the end maintained on the strange red stone, from one end to the other, from one drawing to another, and then, he slowly walked to that burnt stone platform, stretched out his hand and gently smoothed the rock.

"How long has it been?" Yun YiLan suddenly spoke, his deep voice asking a question out of nowhere.

Shangguan Ce stood beside him, he did not look surprised by Yun YiLan's

question, obviously he seemed to be already aware of some things, just that he looked like he did not intend to answer, and very strangely, turned and glanced at Li Xun who was standing three steps behind them.

Li Xun slowly lowered his head, his expression respectful, both of his eyes slightly closed, not making a sound.

Without turning back, Yun YiLan seemed to know what was going on, indifferently said, "Xun'er is not an outsider, in the future he will also take over FenXiang Valley, don't have to hide these things from him."

Shangguan Ce's body shook slightly and then calmed down, after a moment of silence, said, "From the start of the preparation for the official summoning, till today has already been a total of thirty days, 'Red Fire Brilliant Elder' never responded."

Yun YiLan's expression did not change the slightest, the most only a glint in his eyes but the feeling it gave others seemed to be heavier. And above the altar, Ghost Li was instead surprised, not that FenXiang Valley was also helpless in repairing this strange formation, but the 'Red Fire Brilliant Elder' which Shangguan Ce had mentioned, triggered a memory deep inside his head, almost subconsciously, he felt that what Shangguan Ce referred to was something -

That huge wild beast enveloped in raging fire, could it be the crux of the legendary Eight Savage Inferno Formation?

The atmosphere in the altar was somehow strange, Yun YiLan did not look good, he did not speak, only strided around with big steps in the hall, seemed to be pondering over something, and Shangguan Ce only watched him, did not say anything, as for Li Xun, he only maintained a humble posture and remained

silent.

Following the passing of time, Yun YiLan slowly frowned, a sharp glint indistinct in his eyes, as if something in his mind was having an intense fight but eventually he abruptly stopped pacing, with a long breath he turned to them.

Shangguan Ce glanced at Yun YiLan, softly called out, “Senior brother?”

Yun YiLan seemed to make up his mind, without hesitation, coldly said, “Shangguan junior brother, how important is this Inferno Altar formation, I don’t have to emphasis it, no matter what, it must be recovered, if not, we don’t have any other way to deal with him!”

Shangguan Ce nodded, did not speak, but in the darkness above the three of them, Ghost Li and Jin PingEr received a shock at the same time.

He?

Who is he?

The person that FenXiang Valley wanted to use this strange formation to deal with, was who?

In the quiet Inferno Altar, what was flowing right now, seemed to be an invisible dark energy. Just that, what Yun YiLan was about to say, made the surrounding indistinct darkness, turned into cold icy chill:

“That day when the lava erupted, the damage caused to the formation was

really too great, the spiritual energy that our FenXiang Valley has accumulated for several hundred years has depleted, including losing the key ‘Inferno Mirror’, that’s why we are unable to summon the Red Fire Brilliant Elder to activate the formation. Actually if that person did not appear, this is naturally not important, we can start accumulating over again but currently, it is the critical time to use this formation.” Yun YiLan coldly snorted, three deep wrinkles appeared on his forehead, the murderous intention could be vaguely felt, his voice also became more cold.

Shangguan Ce was also deeply frowning but a trace of delight was on his face, asked in surprise, “Why, don’t tell me senior brother already has other ideas?”

Yun YiLan’s eyes twitched, said, “The formation in this altar, is created by our sect ancestors following the records from the ‘FenXiang Jade Book’ which is passed down, and at the end of the Jade Book, a forefather had written some words which are the risky methods to deal with this kind of difficult situation where the formation is unable to be activated, maybe it will work.”

Shangguan Ce and Li Xun were surprised and then delighted, ‘FenXiang Jade Book’ was FenXiang Valley supreme treasure, and all along only FenXiang Valley master was able to read and keep it, to Yun YiLan, it must be an exceptional forefather who left the ingenious method.

Shangguan Ce delightfully said, “Senior brother, what is the ingenious method left by that forefather?”

Yun YiLan saw their excitement but his face did not show any delight, instead, he was even more solemn, after a moment of silent, he slowly said, “That forefather wrote at the end of the ‘FenXiang Jade Book’, Inferno formation is created out of Heaven and Earth’s vicious energies, the Red Fire Beast brutal and ferocious, the spiritual energy that the engraved drawings contained, are

the eight barbarian ferocious deities, with such it is recommended to reference southern border ancient books, with live humans as blood sacrifice, using the prosperous vicious energies to return the various deities back to position, the ferocious beast will appear and complete the formation.”

Shangguan Ce and Li Xun’s countenances changed greatly, looked at each other, for a moment speechless.

After a long time, Shangguan Ce forced himself to calm down from the shock, with a hoarse voice said, “This, this is really what our sect forefather wrote?”

Yun YiLan snorted, said, “Shangguan junior brother, don’t tell me you suspect I use our forefather’s name as a pretext?”

Shangguan Ce’s countenance changed again, quickly said, “I don’t dare, just that, just that using humans as blood offering, it is clearly Evil sect ways, how is it, how is it possible for it to appear in our sect Jade Book”

Yun YiLan directly interrupted Shangguan Ce’s words, coldly said, “What you said is right, this forefather although wrote such words but never has someone tried this method before.”

Shangguan Ce watched Yun YiLan’s directed stare, suddenly felt his body turned cold and couldn’t help but step back, he spied Li Xun behind him, saw his face had turned ashen too.

“Senior brother, don’t tell me you” Shangguan Ce seemed for the first time, spoke with such difficulty, “don’t tell me you plan to use this method?”

Yun YiLan frowned, forceful but without anger, he sneered and said, "If not this then what shall we do? We work so hard for several hundred years, looking as the big thing is about to be accomplished but with so many incidents, now even the most important formation is destroyed. Don't tell me you want me to watch as our hard work goes down the drain?"

Shangguan Ce seemed to have some hesitant, argued, "Senior brother, the big matter is of course important, this method is really too"

Yun YiLan coldly cut him off, said, "Shangguan junior brother, being so tenacious, don't tell me you still vaguely regard yourself as the Good Faction? Then for so many years, for this important thing, what you have done are not regarded as Good Faction ways right?"

Shangguan Ce was speechless.

Yun YiLan's gaze sharp, looked as if about to stab into a person's heart, stared at Shangguan Ce, said, "And, Shangguan junior brother, that day, the Inferno Altar as our sect sacred place, was guarded by you, unexpectedly it was in your hands that resulted in the situation today, do you know?"

Shangguan Ce was shocked, looked up but saw Yun YiLan's cold stare, like knife, looking at him, Shangguan Ce's expression looked agitated, his body slightly trembling, appeared like he had words to say but for some reason, under Yun YiLan's stare, he eventually shrank, after a long time, a defeated look on his face, quietly said, "I understand."

Yun YiLan nodded, said, "Since it is so, I will leave this thing to you, other than that, Xun'er, "He turned and looked at Li Xun.

Li Xun's expression was also strange, suddenly heard his teacher calling him, he came to attention and quickly said, "Disciple is here."

Yun YiLan glanced at him, said, "You will follow your Shangguan teacher uncle, learn well and also assist him."

Li Xun turned pale, his voice turned hoarse and quietly said, "Yes."

Yun YiLan took a final look at the stone drawings, frowning, turned and did not look back, walked out, after the sound of the heavy door [zhi ya], leaving only Shangguan Ce and Li Xun, both staring at each other in daze.

For a long time, nobody spoke, the two of them also slowly walked out.

Inferno Altar again descended into silence.

X

x

x

In the air, a faint sound was heard, two figures gently floated down. Xiao Hui [zhi zhi] called out twice, jumped onto the ground and went off to play again. In the first few days, it was still rather curious about the drawings but after a few days, looking still the same, the monkey lost interest in it.

Ghost Li and Jin PingEr after landed, for a moment nobody spoke, the surrounding atmosphere was still cold, as if the strange energy from Yun YiLan, had not dispersed.

After a long time, Jin PingEr suddenly said, “The person that they were talking about, what person is that?”

Ghost Li glanced at her, answered with another question, “What do you think?”

Jin PingEr smiled and said, “I am 90% confident that they are talking about the Beast Deity. However from their tones, I am not sure if they know where the Beast Deity is.”

Ghost Li silently nodded, said, “And one more thing, the formation in this altar, from their words it seemed like they also want to use the formation to deal with the Beast Deity, don’t tell me they knew for certain that the Beast Deity will come to this altar, or that this formation can be moved?”

Jin PingEr’s elegant brows frowned, clearly she too could not understand many important points about this, for the moment pondered.

Ghost Li’s eyes slowly moved, onto the stone drawings, after a long time, suddenly sneered, said, “So this is the so-called Good Faction, with humans as blood offering to vicious deities, he he, even in the Evil sect, I have never seen this kind of thing”

He had not finished his words, suddenly heard Jin PingEr’s clear laughter beside, in the laughter a faint strange tone, like a sneer, like mocking, and an indistinct concealed fear, said, “You, how do you know in our holy sect, there isn’t such a thing?”

Ghost Li's body shook, turned and looked at her, saw Jin PingEr smiling but she had already turned her head away. Ghost Li frowned, coldly said, "What do you mean"

Suddenly, before he could finish his words, Ghost Li's voice turned hoarse, at that moment, for some reason, he suddenly remembered that day when the great shaman was casting the spells to save BiYao, sought fresh blood from Ghost King to draw the formation's drawings.

And Ghost King, almost in a blink, produced sufficient amount of blood.

The bowls of blood, where did it come from

Ghost Li stood in a daze, felt his body turned cold, unable to speak anymore.

, , , ,

Chapter 193 - Unusual

The sun setting, hung far in the horizon, behind those tall precipitous undulating range of mountains, spilling the remnant warmth onto the southern border vast lands. The evening rays descended onto the silent great earth, the sounds from the wild countryside, a blanket of somber.

Ghost Li and Jin PingEr had left FenXiang Valley, stood in the wilderness before the ten thousands great mountains, facing the vast great earth and lofty mountains which appeared to stretch on forever, they looked to be two insignificant tiny and small living things, looking up at the monumental presence of Heaven and Earth, at the sun setting in the horizon, slowly descending behind the boundless mountains, the sky gradually turning dark.

In the time to converse and breathe, the stars and constellations rotated, who else could win against time?

To leave FenXiang Valley, was Ghost Li's idea, by chance they overheard Yun YiLan's conversation, knew that FenXiang Valley might still have ways to activate the formation, it was a really good opportunity, basing on Ghost Li and Jin PingEr's motives for coming, they by right should continue to observe secretly. But for some reason, Ghost Li with a look of indifference, still suggested leaving FenXiang Valley, and Jin PingEr who had always been sharp-witted, seemed not to consider that point and also agreed with him right away.

After leaving FenXiang Valley, Ghost Li and Jin PingEr did not talk much, and also did not discuss the future plans but both seemed to have some chemistry and headed south together, until this day where they arrived before that

legendary terrible place, 'ten thousands great mountains', under the black mountains, in the wild countryside, both silently staring at the mountains.

The breeze blew past the countryside, not a single flower or grass fragrance, only some unknown indistinct smell of blood and sounds of roars, in this place, even the wind, also seemed harsh.

Jin PingEr's hair gently ruffled in the wind, she lifted her head slightly, revealing her smooth dainty jaw, and a stretch of fair and white neck, gazing at the distant mountains, where the dark mountain summits were, enveloped in dusky mist, swirling incessantly, behind those mountain ranges, what kind of world was it?

Others might be guessing but in Jin PingEr's shrouded eyes, something seemed to be glimmering.

Different from that coquettish girl who was silent beside him, even though Ghost Li was taciturn but along the way, Ghost Li's thoughts, were like the stormy sea, tossing high and low.

Firstly was the blood sacrificial matter, the impact it had to him was immense, even though for so many years, he had killed many, and even earned the nickname 'Xue GongZi' in Ghost King sect but as to what he had overheard in FenXiang Valley a few days ago, like a deeply-rooted stubbornness in his heart, he subconsciously felt revulsion and disgust. And after Jin PingEr's inadvertent reminder, realized something he had always neglected: In the Evil Sect, even if it was Ghost King, could also do something similar to what FenXiang Valley was about to do.

Taking numerous humans' blood, offering to the gods and deities, without

guessing, this deity must belong to those ferocious, evil kinds; and blood sacrificial itself, was without doubt something that was greatly disruptive to Heaven and inhuman, and yet these things, happened to him.

What kind of world was this exactly?

Unless all the people in this world were also mad?

Or was it like what that alluring strange young man, the one whom he met coincidentally, who once said: Humans, in the end were only just a kind of animal, no difference.

Ghost Li inhaled deeply, silently gazed towards the distant mountains. Ever since he received Ghost King's instructions from Mr Ghost, from that 'TaoTie', he already guessed that strange young man whom he had met twice, was the Beast Deity that created this catastrophe.

Just that, the Beast Deity massacred the world, why did he let him go, and both times they only chatted and parted ways, it was something Ghost Li could not figure out.

Near his chest, there was a faint warmth, for so many years, this faint warmth had always accompanied Ghost Li, as if it was already part of him, even most of the time, Ghost Li had already forgotten about the warmth. However several days ago from FenXiang Valley's actions, again stirred something deep inside his heart, the jade piece lying quietly near his chest, maybe this was then the crux of this southern border's trip!

From Yun YiLan and Shangguan Ce's conversations, clearly stated that because FenXiang Valley had lost this thousand-fires-essence, therefore caused them to also lose the volcano spiritual energy accumulated for several hundred

years, unable to trigger the formation again. And having this Inferno Mirror, did it mean they could find the secret of that mysterious formation?

Ghost Li was silent, gazing at the sunset in the distant, the last ray, finally too disappeared.

Where the dark mountain summits were, following the disappearance of the last ray, the once thick dark mist, as if being stimulated by something, started to swiftly disperse, turned thin.

Standing beside, Jin PingEr smiled, turned her head over, said, "Alright, let's go."

Ghost Li glanced sideways at her, said, "The change in the poisonous fog over there at ten thousands great mountains, has never been told by anyone, how did you find out?"

Jin PingEr smiled sweetly, her eyes extremely flirtatious, like seducing, like cunning, said, "This I will not tell you, what can you do to me?"

Ghost Li was stunned, saw under the gradually darkening sky, deep in the mountains, the girl beside him out of the sudden, like emanating alluring beautiful glow in the dark dim world, extremely dazzling, with her around, although unexpected but it had another type of warmth.

At least, in that distant darkness, he did not have to walk alone.

Ghost Li's lips twitched but he turned his head, indifferently said, "Let's go."

After speaking, he led the way, Jin PingEr watched his back figure, smiling faintly, her eyes glimmering, followed easily.

One before another, and that monkey crouching on one's shoulder, frequently making [zhi zhi] sounds, slowly merging into the darkness, disappeared.

X

x

x

Qing Yun Hill, TongTian Peak, Crystal Hall.

Leaving southern border thousands and thousands miles away, this immortal sacred ground which had just saved the world, the demon beast catastrophe which brought chaos like the Good and Evil big battle ten years ago, swiftly and appropriately handled, TongTian Peak for the most part had already resumed its beautiful surreal scenery, other than a few huge buildings which would need time to repair but nobody would doubt, they would soon be restored back to its original look.

Of all of the big buildings at TongTian Peak, the most important and also the biggest, naturally was the main hall, Crystal Jade Hall. Compared to other buildings, the damage that Crystal Jade Hall received in that catastrophe, could almost be disregarded, seemed like Qing Yun sect's ancestors were really effective, their protection working.

And right now, just when Ghost Li and Jin PingEr were about to enter that

mysterious mountains, to pursue that Beast Deity who escaped after being defeated, Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak, in that sacred Crystal Jade Hall, yet another argument broke out.

Qing Yun sect other than the oldest branch TongTian Peak, the other six branches after the catastrophe, rarely gathered again in Crystal Jade Hall but the most important thing was, their gathering this time, was not called by sect head Reverend DaoXuan, instead they came on their own. In the great hall, greeting the various branch leaders, was not Reverend DaoXuan but Xiao YiCai who was looking slightly awkward.

Within the six leaders, Long Shou Valley leader QiHao and Morning Sun Valley leader

Chu YuHong both of them, were the second generation disciples, same generation as Xiao YiCai, naturally it would not be appropriate for them to talk directly like the other four teacher uncles, most of the time, both of them stayed quiet. But for the other leaders: Big Bamboo Valley, Small Bamboo Valley, Return of the Wind Valley, Sunset Valley, their words were not so polite.

Big Bamboo Valley Tian BuYi's voice among the four leaders was the loudest, he was seen sitting on the red sandalwood chair, coldly speaking to Xiao YiCai, "Xiao teacher nephew, today the six of us gathering here, has already been four hours, why isn't sect head senior brother out to see us yet, don't tell me to him, the few of us are already this undesirable?"

Xiao YiCai's face looked awkward, smiled with difficulty, said, "What are you saying Tian teacher uncle, you elders have always been held in high prestige and respect in Qing Yun sect, teacher has also valued you highly, this everyone also knows it"

Tian BuYi without waiting for him to finish his words, snorted, sneered and said, "So sect head senior brother actually valued me that highly, left me here high and dry for four hours and still do nothing about it?"

Xiao YiCai was taken aback for a moment, laughed bitterly and said, "Tian teacher uncle, disciple has already said, teacher indeed ten days ago entered Illusory Moon Cave in seclusion, locking himself in and did not come out, the current TongTian Peak matters, temporarily are left to disciple."

The other elders also sneered at the same time, clearly they did not believe Xiao YiCai's words. Small Bamboo Valley ShuiYue Master coldly said, "Xiao teacher nephew, in the past ten days, although I am in Small Bamboo Valley but I have on many occasions heard about sect head senior brother's eccentric behaviours at TongTian Peak, even worse, several days ago on a certain late night, someone said sect head senior brother seemed to be mad, howling at the sky on Crystal Jade Hall's rooftop, is there such matter?"

Xiao YiCai immediately shook his head, said, "There is no such matter, no such matter, ShuiYue teacher uncle must have misheard, teacher is a master of enlightenment, the world's Good Faction leader, with the demeanour of a transcendent being, how would he do such presumptuous thing?"

The four elders looked at each other, saw the suspicions in each other eyes on Xiao YiCai's words. Sitting beside Return of the Wind Valley leader seat, Taoist Tian Ri, taking over Taoist Tian Yun in Sunset Valley, looked ordinary and thin, wearing a Taoist robe, his brows frowning said, "Xiao teacher nephew, it's not that we are trying to make things difficult for you but it is really that sect head senior brother is the core of our Qing Yun sect, if something happens to him, it will most likely shake the foundation of our Qing Yun, and it is also because of that, we decided that we must come forward and question you, you must not take it to heart."

The other branch leaders sat down, the centre seat which belonged to Reverend DaoXuan, was naturally empty, Xiao YiCai was lower in rank than his teacher uncles and so had to stand beside, right now he could only laughed bitterly and said, "Various teacher uncles, disciple, no matter what, will not dare to bear grudges, but, but teacher he really did go into seclusion and ordered specifically that he should not be disturbed, it is not YiCai deliberately preventing various teacher uncles from meeting teacher."

Tian BuYi angrily snorted, said, "You don't have to speak nonsense anymore, these few days, the rumours spread to the entire Qing Yun sect, sect head's behaviours are extremely weird, staying at TongTian Peak the whole day and at times going crazy, at times looking lost, if sect head senior brother is unwell, we as junior brothers no matter what, will also think of ways to treat him, at least visit him; if he is fine, then why would he refuse to see us." He suddenly raised his voice, angrily said, "Xiao YiCai, tell me honestly, what exactly happened to sect head senior brother?"

Xiao YiCai was stunned, as if he was startled by Tian BuYi's voice but he was still smiling bitterly, keeping quiet.

Return of the Wind Valley Zeng ShuChang who did not speak much, glanced at Xiao YiCai, frowning tightly, said, "Why not like this, Xiao teacher nephew, we know that you have always been respectful of your teacher, do not dare to defy him, we will also not make things difficult for you. Now we only need you to lead us to where sect head senior brother is, we will pay our respect to him on our own, what do you think?"

Xiao YiCai was stunned for a moment, couldn't speak, a pondering look appeared on his face, Zeng ShuChang turned his head over, glanced to the rest, Tian BuYi, ShuiYue Master and the rest slowly nodded. Zeng ShuChang coughed

once and slowly stood up, his voice calm, said, “Xiao teacher nephew, actually we are only concerned about sect head senior brother, to senior brother, we have always been utmost respectful, this everyone in Qing Yun sect is aware. Once we see sect head senior brother and know that he is well, we will naturally be relieved isn’t it. Oh right, heard that sect head senior brother in seclusion recently, according to Qing Yun sect rules, it is only limited to Crystal Jade Hall,

Founders Ancestral Hall and Illusory Moon Cave, I do not know if he”

Zeng ShuChang at the end of his words, his voice turned slow, his eyes glanced at Xiao YiCai instead, Xiao YiCai turned red, after a long time, bowing his head slightly to them, said, “Teacher in the recent year, because Qing Yun suffered many unforeseen events, frequently blames himself, and also frequently visits the

Founders Ancestral Hall to offer incenses to the ancestors.”

Zeng ShuChang frowned, nodded, did not speak more, headed first to the back of Crystal Jade Hall, Tian BuYi, ShuiYue Master and Taoist Tian Ri also followed, QiHao and Chu YuHong slowly stood up, walked to Xiao YiCai, QiHao’s face also had a bitter smile, stretched his hand out and gently patted Xiao YiCai on his shoulder, Xiao YiCai sighed and shook his head.

X

x

x

The

Founders Ancestral Hall, was still concealed in the deep forest, only between the gaps of the lush green leaves, revealed a little of the roof eaves. Maybe it was really the protection of the ancestors, the two earth shocking catastrophes

in Qing Yun sect for the past ten years, did no damage to this place.

Like in the past, looking at it from a distance, the dim Ancestral Hall indistinctly had incense smokes swirling and lights flickering, giving one an unfathomable feeling.

The group soon reached that three-forked road before Founders Ancestral Hall. Suddenly, QiHao who was walking slightly behind made exclaimed, quickly walked up, the group looked at him, saw before the partially concealed Founders Ancestral Hall, a young man was standing there quietly, unmoving but his eyes were staring into the Founders Ancestral Hall, backfacing QiHao and the rest.

QiHao frowned, called out, "Is it Lin junior brother?"

That young man appeared startled, turned around, it was indeed Lin JingYu.

Lin JingYu saw QiHao, delight flashed past his face but following which he saw the group behind QiHao, and among them the various branch leaders, couldn't help but was taken aback, his face revealed shock.

"Qi senior brother, why are you here and the various teacher uncles senior brothers, why are they all here?"

QiHao walked to Lin JingYu, smiled and said, "A while ago on the way here, I was just thinking if I will be able to see you here, we two brothers, really have not met for many days."

Lin JingYu clearly was happy to see QiHao too, smiled and said, "Yes, I missed

senior brother much too. Oh right, “ He looked at the rest, quietly asked QiHao, “Senior brother, you came with the various branch leaders, what is it for?”

QiHao glanced at the Founders Ancestral Hall behind Lin JingYu, frowned, said, “Lin junior brother, that erm, sect head teacher uncle, is he inside the Founders Ancestral Hall?” For some reason, when he spoke, he did not deliberately lowered his voice, instead he seemed to want the rest to hear it too.

Lin JingYu’s smile slowly disappeared, obviously he also noticed something was amiss but facing the branch leaders and senior brothers, he had to reply honestly, “Sect head Reverend is in the hall.”

A stir was heard behind QiHao, quickly it died down, then, Zeng ShuChang calm and slightly tired voice said, “What is sect head senior brother doing inside, is he in seclusion?”

Lin JingYu looked nonplussed, said, “Seclusion, what seclusion?”

QiHao’s countenance changed, Tian BuYi’s face changed too and stepped forward but he was held back by Zeng ShuChang. Zeng ShuChang signaled to Tian BuYi, shook his head and then glanced at QiHao, QiHao understood, frowned and asked Lin JingYu, “Lin junior brother, this, have you been at TongTian Peak recently?”

Lin JingYu nodded, said, “That’s right.”

QiHao was silent for a moment, considered his words and then slowly said, “At TongTian Peak, did you saw eh, or heard any strange things?”

Lin JingYu thought for a moment, his eyes swept past the group, gradually brightened but his expression did not change, honestly replied, "Replying senior brother, although I have been at TongTian Peak but these few days, I am almost always at the Founders Ancestral Hall keeping vigil and in mourning for senior, therefore whatever happens outside, I am not aware." He paused, looking at QiHao, said, "Senior brother, don't tell me something happened?"

QiHao paused, smiled bitterly and shook his head, said, "No, nothing happened. Oh right, why are you standing here in broad daylight, aren't you keeping vigil in the hall?"

Lin JingYu looked towards the dim interior, said, "It was sect head Reverend who told me to stand out here, every time he is here, he will ask me to stand out here and then he will enter the hall by himself."

Zeng ShuChang and the rest countenances changed slightly, QiHao also frowned, said, "Then sect head teacher uncle is he still inside now?"

Lin JingYu nodded, said, "Yes, he is inside the hall."

QiHao nodded, stepped back and did not speak.

Zeng ShuChang and the rest looked at each other but nobody moved, after a moment, Tian BuYi snorted, strided out, when he reached the entrance, he did not walk up the stairs, loudly called out, "DaoXuan senior brother, I am Tian BuYi, with ShuiYue, Tian Ri and Zeng ShuChang as well as other two branches leaders teacher nephews, we came to see you. Are you there?"

His voice was loud, with strong stamina, immediately reverberated in the forest, in the dim dark hall, even the spots of candles seemed to brighten up abruptly and then gradually resumed as normal.

After a moment, a voice suddenly was heard in the darkness, coldly speaking, "What is it?"

Tian BuYi and the other leaders were shocked, the Yin coldness was heavy in the voice, indistinctly carried a few degrees of viciousness, not the slightest like Reverend DaoXuan's original clear and righteousness tone, but all of them were people who knew Reverend DaoXuan for more than several hundred years, they could tell immediately that this was Reverend DaoXuan's voice.

This Taoist immortal who once led the world's Good Faction, could it be that something untoward had happened to him?

With such thoughts, Tian BuYi and the rest expressions changed.

Tian BuYi coughed, inhaled deeply, again clearly said, "Senior brother, we heard that you are not feeling well recently and so specially came to visit, will like to ask senior brother to allow us to enter."

Reverend DaoXuan's voice was silent, when it rang out again, a sneer accompanied it, the chillness penetrated the bone, "Visit me? Do you need six branch leaders to come together to see me, I see that all of you intentionally came to force the king to abdicate, eyeing my position as sect head Reverend!"

Once the words were out, like a lightning out of thin air, shocking everyone, even Tian BuYi couldn't help but step back, a face in shock, he turned and

looked, saw even ShuiYue who had always been detached, had an unbelievable expression.

Zeng ShuChang's eyes were full of worry, he stepped forward, loudly said, "Sect head senior brother, what are you saying, we as your junior brothers and sisters, for several hundred years, never have this thought, never before, now too and more even so in the future. These few days we have been coming, is because we are concern about senior brother's health, definitely without ulterior motive, senior brother must never misunderstand."

Reverend DaoXuan's voice suddenly raised, sneered and said, "Zeng ShuChang, within the six leaders, you have always been the most scheming, that day you were already suspicious of Long Shou Valley CangSong and yet you kept quiet, don't tell me you thought that I didn't know?"

Zeng ShuChang's countenance changed greatly, Tian BuYi and the rest also turned in shock and looked at Zeng ShuChang.

ShuiYue Master stared at Zeng ShuChang, after a long time, said, "Is this true?"

Zeng ShuChang made a bitter laugh, shook his head and said, "This, this where do I start?"

ShuiYue Master wanted to ask further, suddenly the numerous dim candles lighted up, unable to see clearly in the darkness but for some reason, made one felt that in the darkness, some strange thing howled.

Almost at the same time, Reverend DaoXuan's voice was heard again but the

target this time, had shifted from Zeng ShuChang to ShuiYue Master, “ShuiYue, what are you pretending, you think with your aloof and detached look, you are really righteous and stern?” His voice was weird, vaguely shrill and hoarse, “That time when Wan JianYi was down and kept in

Founders Ancestral Hall to sweep the grounds til old age, and in the end died by the Evil Sect hands, it all started because of you, all thanks to you ah! Ha ha ha ha ha”

Until the end, his voice seemed uncontrollable and became hysterical, then, at that moment, nobody paid close attention to him anymore, everyone of them were pale, stared in shock at ShuiYue, for long time nobody spoke.

The few short words, were really too shocking, QiHao and the junior brothers were nonplussed, and ShuiYue Master was trembling, for some reason, her eyes had a burning glare never seen before, stepped forward, seemed to disregard everything else, loudly shouted into the hall, “You, you what did you say? Don’t, don’t tell me Wan senior brother he, he is still alive”

The words brought all to attention, everyone agitated, started to ask questions towards the hall.

And Reverend DaoXuan’s hysterical laughter, seemed to turn wilder, reverberated in the air, for a long time.

’,’,’,’

Chapter 194 - Secrets Leaked

Southern border, the ten thousands great mountains.

Traversing the black mountains, entering the ten thousands great mountains, Ghost Li felt that he had entered a world that was truly primitive wilderness. In fact in the Evil Sect, the wilderness was a reference to the extreme northwest of the Divine Land vast territories, a vast desolate stretch of area, most were gobi desert, barren and even if there was life, it was only for the most stubborn species, and therefore named as such. And the legendary holy temple in the Evil Sect, was located in that desert but just that Ghost Li had never been there.

But the world before him now, clearly was completely different from that said wilderness, in the ten thousands great mountains, not only it was not barren, every inch was brimming with life. Large swaths of primitive forests, there was no space to land, lands so full of vegetation that the plants seemed to be fighting for space. And behind the endless trees and brambles, there seemed to be endless number of poisonous evil animals. In the dim shadows around, felt like there would always be the hungry eyes of the predators watching you, waiting for the opportunity to make a snack out of the unwary.

To people like Ghost Li and

Jin PingEr

, these common poisons were naturally not much of a threat but with this volume, it was a headache. Although they could fly but firstly the air above these forests sporadically had a strange miasma fog rising through the top of the trees; secondly, although they were highly skilled, they still need rest but

the harassments from outside never showed signs of stopping.

A few days later, even the monkey Xiao Hui was beginning to get restless.

Here, besides the poisonous fog and evil beasts lurking, the strange weather in the ten thousands great mountains, was rather hard for humans to bear. What was different from Central Plains was, there was no clouds, weathers transitions etc, storms appeared and vanished without warning, initially it was still clear skies, the next instant heavy storms poured; stopping out of a sudden, the moment before lightning and thunders rumbled, the next moment cloudless for miles. The suddenness was startling.

There was no pattern conceivable to the length of the rainfall as well, at times it rained for just a short while, and other times it rained for days, it was really unfathomable.

At the moment, the two of them were walking through the darkness of the forest, shrouded under the canopy of falling rain.

The reason the two of them did not cast spells and fly, was because when they were about to do so, they discovered that even when it was raining, the tops of the forests were still emanating the strange dark miasma fog. On the contrary, the air on the ground was much more normal.

Ghost Li and

Jin PingEr were both figures who had practised long in Evil Sect, their discernment ability definitely not lacking and naturally knew the severity of it, after discussion, they would rather be more cautious and walk through the forest instead.

This stretch of forest was similar to the other undisturbed forests in the ten thousands great mountains where the foliage were dense and closely entwined. There was no direct paths for the rain to the ground, instead droplets slid and dripped down these leaves and branches, their cold breathing echoed through the forest, except for their footsteps making the rustling sounds and the distant rain dripping, the whole forest lie asleep.

Ghost Li and Jin PingEr had no umbrellas, most likely they did not pack them but even if they did, in this kind of dense forest, they would be hampered by the tugging of the branches against the umbrellas. Xiao Hui was silent, he curled his body and lay on Ghost Li's shoulder. The rain's constant dripping had drenched his fur, sticking it close to his body.

Ghost Li's face was also drenched with the rain, but he looked indifferent as he walked in front, as if he did not feel the strange surrounding atmosphere. Jin PingEr followed him, no indication of fatigue too, but her slightly tousled hair and somehow cold expression, seemed to betray her unhappy mood.

This stretch of forest, was in fact the same black forest that she came the last time. Jin PingEr clearly knew, after this forest and around a few hills, they would arrive at their destination, and in fact too, she relayed this to Ghost Li.

[Sha]

Ghost Li had reached out to break a hanging branch that was part of an extremely tough vine branch, and yet in his hand it was as fragile as tofu. Jin PingEr looked at the branch in his hand silently, frowning as she stared deep in thought.

Suddenly, Ghost Li made a [ai] sound, paused and then hurried a few steps left to a gorgeous view off a cliff, surrounded by a rocks of several chi wide and no vegetation, below their feet were a sea of clouds, rolling with five colours, it was an unbelievable sight.

Footsteps were heard, and Jin PingEr appeared at his side, her expression changed slightly, this was where she was trapped by the mysterious man dressed in black, after her lucky escape, she inadvertently found the Kill-the-living Monk's knife below the cliff rocks, just that, she looked at Ghost Li and stayed silent, clearly not intending to mention the past events to him.

Ghost Li stared far, overlooking the sea of clouds. After a while, he shook his head slightly and said, "The colourful clouds below, I'm afraid it's just more miasma."

Jin PingEr nodded and said, "I think so too."

Ghost Li looked at her and asked, "How much further?"

Jin PingEr raised her hand and gently wiped the water droplets off her forehead, pondered and said, "Should be close, I remember the last time when I was here, I walked no further than around two hours and I was out of the black forest. Out here and then crossing two more mountains, we will reach Subdue Devil ancient cave." As she was saying that, she paused and with some puzzlement said, "Strange, the last time I was here, there were many evil beasts, but along the way, besides the poisonous insects, we have not met even one of those beasts."

Ghost Li said indifferently, "Most probably those beasts that you saw, had followed the Beast Deity out of the mountains to hunt."

Jin PingEr looked shocked and realised that it was a definite possibility, and her expression turned to disgust, no matter what, even though she was from the Evil Sect, she could not stand these inhuman attacks. Or maybe, in that Central Plains Venomous Viper Valley battle, HeHuan Sect was annihilated, even though Ghost Li still did not know how Jin PingEr managed to escape alone and took refuge under Ghost King but guessed that Jin PingEr would not have any good feelings towards these demon beasts.

Ghost Li took a deep breath and said, "Let's go."

And then turned and walked back to the dark forest, Jin PingEr was about to follow when she suddenly turned around and looked down at the cliff, frowning slightly as she was absorbed in thought. Ahead, Ghost Li walked for a while before realising Jin PingEr was not keeping up, turned back and called for her, startling Jin PingEr. She laughed coquettishly and said, "Why, missing me already?"

Ghost Li glanced at her, a look of detached and walked on, Jin PingEr smiled and followed along, just as she was about to enter the forest, her hand suddenly waved and a flash of light shot out of her hand, making a [du] muffled sound and embedded itself into a remote gap in a secluded corner of the cliff.

Light flashed in that gap, it was the Kill-the-living knife.

And in a blink of an eye, Jin PingEr's silhouette disappeared.

The desolate storm, seemed to shroud over again, concealing this part of the black forest, at far, the vast firmament of the ten thousands mountains, seemed to be grey, not knowing if there was some kind of god or demon, howling in the nether world, watching the mortals in the world which seemed so insignificant.

The storm intensifies!

X

X

X

As Ghost Li and Jin PingEr battled the howling wind and rain in pursuit for the traces of the Beast Deity, the atmosphere in southern border outside the ten thousand mountains, was also heating up.

More and more Good Faction disciples arrived at the southern border, and in the hustle and bustle, their arrival almost quickly reduced the number of demons here in the southern border, and on southern border this land, there had never been such many gathering of Central Plains people, and most of them, were cultivated martial artists.

The local five tribes of the southern border indigenous people regarded these outsiders with a distant and respectful attitude, and amongst the righteous disciples, there seemed to be a strange atmosphere, for most of them, as long as they were not of the same sect or clan, they maintained their distance, there were even rumors that certain sects had conflicts.

As for the reasons, no one had ever loudly declared it out.

In a certain sense, cultivated sect FenXiang Valley as the southern border longest resident sect, naturally became the best place to visit for disciples who were not familiar with the local geography, so this valley had changed from its usual tranquility to a busy stream of people coming and going everyday.

And it was also in these circumstances, this day, 3 visitors arrived at the valley, a man and two women from the QingYun sect, Return of the Wind Valley Zeng ShuShu and Small Bamboo Valley WenMin and Lu XueQi.

Of course, there were more than these three disciples from QingYun sect who came to the southern border, in fact, QingYun sect known as the world's first Good Faction sect, sent countless disciples of the younger generation here, but the best skilled disciples however, could not make their way here, except for the few that already held important roles such as QiHao, Xiao YiCai due to Reverend DaoXuan's absence recently, the daily affairs at TongTian Peak of all sorts, were left to him to handle and so could not leave; as for Lin JingYu, this time he insisted to remain at Founders Ancestral Hall, it was said he was keeping vigil for a certain Qing Yun senior whom he had great gratitude for, and so could not come.

And amongst the remaining ones, Zeng ShuShu and Lu XueQi were left to lead, for Zeng ShuShu it was quite straightforward, his father Zeng ShuChang only gave a few instructions to him before leaving but for Lu XueQi, it was more complicated, it was said that ShuiYue Master was initially unwilling to give permission but later on for some reason she changed her mind and purposely sent Lu XueQi's senior sister WenMin along. But there was a good point that WenMin came along, Zeng ShuShu had another companion to talk to. Otherwise like Zeng Shushu's enthusiastic character, to travel with Lu XueQi's ice-like personality, out of one day, Zeng ShuShu's nine out of ten conversations would be to himself, and the last sentence most likely would be Lu Xueqi impatiently ordering him to go away.

On the journey to the southern border, Zeng ShuShu on the contrary, got along well with WenMin, the three of them discussed together, Zeng Shushu was adamant that as fellow Good Faction sects, arriving in southern border, they still have to make a visit to FenXiang Valley to pay their respects. Only Lu XueQi seemed reluctant, indifferently expressed her opinion, said that it was

not their first time to the southern border and roughly knew where to go, there was no need to trouble others.

Zeng ShuShu and WenMin both knew that Lu XueQi still had a knot in her heart, that day at Qing Yun TongTian Peak Crystal Jade Hall, she publicly rejected FenXiang Valley leader Yun YiLan's favourite disciple Li Xun's marriage proposal, humiliating Yun YiLan and Reverend DaoXuan, naturally she was unwilling to have any contact with the FenXiang Valley people.

However, after repeated discussions between Zeng ShuShu and WenMin, they felt that it was still best for WenMin to persuade Lu XueQi, they still have to make an appearance, if not next time it would not look nice in front of the elders. Lu Xueqi hesitated a few times, and finally agreed.

The three of them arrived at the entrance of FenXiang Valley, the three of them already had some fame, especially Lu XueQi, whose beauty was fabled to be capable of causing the fall of a city or nation, since the rise of the younger generation in Qing Yun sect, her fame and beauty had risen even more. To the FenXiang Valley, Lu XueQi meant even something more, the moment when the three of them reached the entrance, they were almost immediately recognized by FenXiang disciples.

After the initial astonishment, there seemed to be some rousing and someone quickly ran in to report while others stepped forward to greet them, the first person in front smiled and cupped his hands in greeting, "Ah senior sister Lu arrival in FenXiang Valley is such an honour. These two must be Qing Yun sect's senior brother and sister, please come in."

From the back, Zeng ShuShu glanced at WenMin and stuck his tongue out at her secretly, thinking to himself that this Lu XueQi was really famous, even the ordinary disciples could recognised her with a glance, and he and WenMin were negated to just the companions of the beauty.

They were not upset about that, Zeng Shushu had even wider smile on his face, along the way laughed and joked with the disciples, hearty laughs were heard frequently. WenMin, walking along at the back of the group, smiled and softly said to Lu XueQi who was beside her, "Junior sister, look at that Zeng junior brother, they have only just met and he is already mixing so well with them, it is really impressive."

Lu XueQi looked at Zeng ShuShu, who already had his arm around a FenXiang Valley disciple's shoulder, smiled faintly and said nothing.

Soon, with the lead of the FenXiang Valley disciples, they arrived at FenXiang Valley Mountain River Hall, in the hall, Yun YiLan was sitting at the head seat and waiting for them with a smile, obviously to the head of FenXiang Valley master, these three high ranking disciples from Qing Yun sect were very much different from other sects.

Even so however, Zeng ShuShu, WenMin and Lu XueQi were not those who didn't know their limits, knowing Yun YiLan's status, being personally received was really rather beneath him. After the three of them rushed forward to pay their respects, Zeng ShuShu said, "How could Master Yun come out personally to receive us, it should be us junior to pay our respects instead, us juniors are really overwhelmed with this honour."

Yun YiLan smiled gently, with a kind face, laughed and replied, "What is this talk, good nephew, I have been friends with your teacher uncle Reverend DaoXuan and your father Zeng ShuChang senior brother, for more than several hundred years, there is no need to stand on ceremony. How are they?"

Zeng ShuShu respectfully replied, "Sect head teacher uncle and father are

both well, both of them instructed me, that I must come and pay my respects to Yun teacher uncle when I have arrived at the southern border.”

Yun YiLan laughed and nodded, “After I left Qing Yun, several days have passed by so quickly, I really do missed those few dear friends.” As he said that, he smiled and glanced at WenMin before looking at the expressionless Lu XueQi.

Feeling his eyes on her, Lu XueQi looked up and saw Yun YiLan smiling at her, there was also someone else beside him, with a complex expression and a bitter smile, also looking at her, it was Li Xun.

Lu XueQi said nothing, bowed her head slightly.

Yun YiLan smiled, looked away and said, “Why are you all still standing, our sects are not of ordinary relations, we are family, quickly sit.”

Zeng ShuShu and the rest asked for forgiveness and sat down.

Yun YiLan chatted with the three, and got to know that WenMin and Lu XueQi are both from Small Bamboo Valley, under ShuiYue Master’s tutelage, and so asked several more questions about ShuiYue Master, WenMin answered all questions dutifully, and after, Yun YiLan spoke with Zeng ShuShu. From the beginning to the end, Yun YiLan seemed to know Lu XueQi did not wish to speak and did not ask her any questions, Lu XueQi was also happily relaxed, sat beside quietly.

However, the other disciples in the hall, including Li Xun who was standing next to Yun YiLan, most the time, whether intentionally or unintentionally,

glanced and lingered on Lu XueQi, her white as snow outfit and cold temperament, it was as if there was some strange magical effect, drawing all the light in the hall to her.

Over the other side, Yun YiLan asked Zeng Shushu with a smile, “That day after the war, Reverend DaoXuan senior brother defeated the Beast Deity for the common people, turning the tide, doing a great service to mankind. But when I left Qing Yun, his injury was not healed yet, I wonder how is Reverend DaoXuan senior brother’s health now? He is now the leader of the Good Faction, commanding public respect and support!”

Zeng ShuShu smiled and replied, “Yun teacher uncle’s concern is appreciated, sect head teacher uncle is well, as long as the people could escape the catastrophe, a little suffering on Qing Yun sect is nothing.”

Yun YiLan’s smile became more kindly, picked up his tea to take a sip, then his eyes glimmered slightly, as if he coincidentally remembered something suddenly, laughed and said, “Oh yes, I have heard of a rumor recently, and since good nephew is here, just nice I can ask you about it.”

Zeng ShuShu smiled, “Yun teacher uncle please speak, disciple will tell you everything I know.”

Yun YiLan nodded with eyes glinting deep inside his eyes, and said slowly, “I heard recently by accident, that during the big battle at Qing Yun, after Reverend DaoXuan senior brother defeated the evildoer Beast Deity, there was another fight at Qing Yun and in the end, it was said that Qing Yun supreme treasure, ‘Zhu Xian Ancient Sword’ was actually broken and damaged, is there such thing?”

At that remark, an instant silence fell, in that moment not a single sound and

Zeng ShuShu, WenMin and Lu XueQi stood up at the same time, their countenances changed, staring at Yun YiLan. And the other FenXiang Valley disciples, including Li Xun, looked at Yun YiLan stunned.

Only Yun YiLan himself behaved nonchalantly, as if he did not ask something that would shake the world, instead like asking something insignificant, gently lifted his tea and took another sip.

Then, he smiled kindly and gently asked the three disciples of the Qing Yun sect, "That, is it really true?"

In the Mountain River Hall, a dead silence.

Chapter 195 - Internal Injury

A long while later, after Zeng ShuShu and the others recovered from the astonishment, the three looked at each other, and saw the shock reflected in their eyes. However what was different was, for Lu XueQi and WenMin, their eyes held additional alarm and confusion.

This which only a small number of Big Bamboo Valley and Small Bamboo Valley disciples were aware, furthermore Reverend DaoXuan had privately sternly commanded several times that this secret must not be divulged, in the end, was it still leaked?

Different from WenMin and Lu XueQi, the damage to 'Zhu Xian Ancient Sword' news was even more startling to Zeng ShuShu who was kept in the dark about this, but after recovering, Zeng ShuShu chuckled and said, “Yun teacher-uncle, how could you play such a joke on us juniors, I was almost scared to death just now. The Zhu Xian Ancient Sword is QingYun sect’s supreme precious treasure, held in safekeeping by sect-head-teacher-uncle himself, how could it be damaged! He he, Ha! Ha! Ha!”

Laughing, Zeng ShuShu kept shaking his head and then turned around to see his other two companions, wanting to see their amusements at this ridiculous rumour. Except, his smile stiffened, there was no trace of a smile on either Lu XueQi or WenMin, on the contrary, their brows were creased and their faces had paled.

In the hall, Zeng ShuShu's solitary laughter echoed and then died quickly.

Yun YiLan smiled and said, "Oh so it is just a rumour! That is for the best, else if the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword had been damaged, it would certainly be a disaster."

Lu XueQi took an abrupt step forward, coldly asked Yun YiLan, "Yun teacher-uncle, this is of course not a true rumour, and should not be believed. However, may I ask where did senior hear about this lowly and sneaky rumour?"

Lu XueQi's voice got increasingly colder as she spoke, and was beginning to sound faintly rude.

But Yun YiLan seemed to be well cultivated and did not seem to mind Lu XueQi's attitude, merely responded with his usual amiable manner with a wave of his hand, "Actually, this rumor is recently circulating in the southern border here, I inadvertently overheard some of the disciples talking about it, and did not expect it to hold any truth. Think about it, with Reverend DaoXuan senior-brother's remarkable powers, how could such nonsense have happened? But just that since good nephew came to visit, I thought I would just ask in passing to seek reassurance that these rumours are indeed just rumours. I am truly pleased!" He said smiling, looking absolutely pleased.

Lu XueQi and the rest frowned slightly, such a matter, how would it be 'casually' asked in public, not to mention the high status of Yun YiLan, how would he asked about such roadside gossip directly. The only logical conclusion was that he had some other plans.

In Yun YiLan's laughter, the three QingYun disciples turned silent, Lu XueQi's face was as white as snow, and so cold she looked inhuman, her eyes turning

sharper, WenMin's complexion was just as pale.

Zeng ShuShu was indeed smooth, noticing the rapidly awkward atmosphere, promptly coughed and stepped forward, blocking Lu XueQi. Cupping his hands, he asked, "Yun teacher-uncle, various senior teachers sent me here to southern border, the purpose is to pursue the demon beast, wonder if you all have any clues that you can tell us, it will saved us from running around blindly."

Yun YiLan glanced Zeng ShuShu and nodded slightly but did not speak. He looked to his back.

Li Xun understood and took a step forward, facing Zeng ShuShu with his hands cupped, "Zeng senior brother, I am Li Xun, acting under teacher's orders, I will serve as your guide here in the southern border, for you ladies and gentlemen..."

"Humpf!" A snort of derision came from a corner, not even waiting for Li Xun to finish.

Li Xun paused, his face immediately contorted with rage.

Fortunately, WenMin was quick-witted and laughed, "Li senior brother, there is no need to trouble you with this, there are some of us who have been to southern border before and are still familiar with the roads."

Li Xun took a deep breath, glanced at the white figure with the corner of his eyes, his mouth twitched, suddenly his anger seemed to disappear, with a small sigh and a forced smile, he said, "This senior sister, it is not what my intentions are, however in the last few days we have managed to track down information

about the missing Beast Deity.”

At these words, Lu XueQi, Zeng ShuShu, and WenMin became excited.

Zeng ShuShu asked delightedly, “is this true?”

Li Xun nodded, “Indeed. In any case, FenXiang Valley has foundation and network of connections in the southern border for hundreds of years, we will still be better informed than outsiders.” As he finished speaking, he glanced at Lu XueQi, intentionally or otherwise. Lu XueQi looked indifferent, and turned away.

Zeng ShuShu asked, “So where is the Beast Deity now?”

Li Xun said, “According to our news, that evildoer has fled into the strange depths of the Ten Thousand Great Mountains, towards the direction of his lair.”

Zeng ShuShu and the others stared blankly, “Ten Thousand Great Mountains?”

Li Xun nodded, “Yes, needless for me to say, all of you would have heard about it, it is a strange and treacherous, mysterious and unfathomable, one of the world’s most dangerous place. If you all have not arrived, I was also planning to lead a group of juniors to search the Ten Thousand Great Mountains. As such, since the three of you are here, if we all go together, wouldn’t it be better? I don’t have any other intentions, just that I have lived in the southern border for many years, and to some extent, have some knowledge of the dangers of the Ten Thousand Great Mountains. With me to guide, it would perhaps be beneficial and no disadvantage for the three of you!”

As he finished, he sneered.

Zeng ShuShu frowned, glanced backward at WenMin and Lu XueQi and said, “Li senior brother please wait, give us a moment to discuss.”

Li Xun nodded his head and said, “As you wish.”

Zeng ShuShu and the others retreated to a corner and whispered in conversation. From Li Xun’s perspective, Zeng ShuShu spoke for the majority of the time, with WenMin inserting a few words now and then. Lu XueQi was silent, with occasional nods or shakes of her head.

That lady in white, seemed to be always that quiet, elegant and unsecular, quietly standing there. Li Xun gazed at Lu XueQi from a distance, momentarily he looked infatuated. And at this moment, someone swatted his shoulder suddenly, Li Xun gave a start, not expecting anyone to be able to come so close to him without his awareness, and quickly turned around, it was Yun YiLan.

Li Xun turned red, and whispered, “Master, your disciple forgot himself, what is it?”

Yun YiLan glanced at Lu XueQi, with an expressionless face and said lightly, “Do not forget your task.”

Startled, Li Xun quietly said, “Disciple understands.”

Yun YiLan nodded his head and said, “Take care of them, I’ll head off first.” As

he left, he did not bid farewell to the three from QingYun sect and left quietly.

Li Xun watched Yun YiLan figure disappeared into the entrance to the rear halls of the Mountain River Hall, his emotions in a mix, his face reflecting the uncertainty.

At this time, Zeng ShuShu and the others seemed to have finished their discussion and returned.

Zeng ShuShu walked over with a smile, and said, “Li senior brother, we have discussed, this time... ai where’s Yun teacher-uncle?”

Li Xun wore an apologetic face, and said, “Master had a last minute matter to deal with and seeing that the three of you were still in the middle of discussion, so he instructed me not to disturb and left first. We seek your forgiveness for the lack of manners.”

Zeng ShuShu quickly replied, “You are too kind, we are the ones that are lacking in manners, if we have breach any etiquette just now, could Li senior brother Li please convey to Yun teacher-uncle that we are still juniors and unaware of the etiquette, didn’t know our limits too, hope that he will not mind.”

Hearing Zeng ShuShu’s smooth words flowing out of his mouth like water, Lu XueQi and Wen Min looked somewhat embarrassed, but Zeng ShuShu was at ease and did not appear embarrassed at all.

Li Xun smiled and nodded his head and did not say anything further about that, only asked, “What about the conclusion of your discussion?”

Zeng ShuShu cupped his hands and said, “It looks like we will need to trouble Li senior brother.”

Li Xun looked delighted, and replied the gesture, “You’re too kind, we are all one Good Faction family, we should do this.” Speaking, he took a quick glance at Lu XueQi, coughed and said, “However, Ten Thousand Great Mountains is after all an extremely dangerous place, and you few should start doing early preparations. Come, I will tell you some of the matters that need to take note.”

Zeng ShuShu laughed, “Trouble Li senior brother.” He turned back and beckoned, “Two senior sisters, quickly come over and listen too.”

Lu XueQi frowned, seemingly unwilling, but was pulled along by WenMin who was next to her, walked over.

Low voices, echoed in the hall...

In the depths of the Ten Thousand Great Mountains, leaving the last trace of darkness, crossing the last crooked old trees, Ghost Li and

Jin PingEr finally walked out of the Black Forest. Outside of the forest, the day had a rare warm sunshine, which warmly illuminated them, the ground and the crooked old trees but was unable to penetrate the mysterious and austere forest.

Jin PingEr

opened her arms to embrace the sun. Even though she had been through the forest once before, coming out still gave her a sense of relief. Indeed, days of walking through a forest full of poisonous insects and continuous rain would not put anyone in a good frame of mind.

Standing outside the forest, the air which they breathed in, was much warmer and comfortable. After Jin PingEr had her fill of deep breaths, she turned to look at Ghost Li, he had just walked out of the forest, with the usual look of indifference but it was also obvious he had a look of relief.

After a short rest, Ghost Li raised his head to look in the distance, with the rare good weather, the view of horizon widened, in the distance, there seemed like endless mountains, rolling and continuous, as far as the eye could see.

Ghost Li's countenance changed slightly,

Jin PingEr

walked to his side, looked at him, laughed and said, "Why, did not expect the treacherous southern border to be actually so vast, right? When I first came here, I was also surprised."

Ghost Li gazed into the distance, lingering on the mountains, and asked indifferently, "The

Subdue Devil ancient cave

you mentioned, how far away is it?"

Jin PingEr

coquettishly smiled, took two steps in front of Ghost Li and surveyed the endless mountains for a while, then pointed a finger at one of the hilltop which appeared strangely black from the summit and said, "See that black mountain peak? Once we round that mountain top, the foot would be the location of the

Subdue Devil ancient cave.

"

Ghost Li raised his eyes, and saw the very strange mountain far away, always shrouded in a layer of light black mist as if there was no sunlight. It looked mysterious.

Ghost Li nodded his head and said, “Then let’s go!”

At that, he moved forward. However,
Jin PingEr did not follow, and instead stood in place.

Ghost Li took a few steps, sensing
Jin PingEr
did not keep up. Slightly surprised, he turned to look and asked, “What’s wrong?”

Jin PingEr
rolled her eyes at him, but even through that resentful look, in the warm sunshine, still looked somewhat seductive, “You are of course a great figure but unfortunately the woman in front of you is weak, and unable to walk now.”

Ghost Li said indifferently, “Considering all the women in the world, it won’t be your turn to qualify as weak.”

Jin PingEr
smiled sweetly and did not get angry, found a block of dry stone nearby and sat down.

Even though Ghost Li did not believe Jin PingEr but on second thought realised that the last few days in the strange black forest, both of them did not have a good rest at all, and so he did not insist on hurrying and sat down near Jin PingEr

.

The monkey Xiao Hui who had been lying on his shoulder, made [zhi zhi] calls and seemed to have awakened suddenly from its dispirited self, jumped down energetically from Ghost Li's shoulder, looking around, blinking its three eyes nonstop and then sticking its tail up, it scuttled to the underbrush at the side, and in a flash, disappeared.

Jin PingEr looked in its direction and asked, "There is danger everywhere here, are you not worried about your monkey running around?"

Ghost Li shook his head and said, "It won't be harmed, even if the both of us were to meet with a mishap, that guy will be well."

Jin PingEr giggled, covered her mouth and said, "That guy, it's obviously only a monkey!"

Ghost Li looked at Jin PingEr's lustrous like jade face, the corner of this mouth couldn't help but curl into a faint smile, then looked towards the direction where Xiao Hui went and slowly said, "In my eyes, he is a much better than the countless people in this world."

As Jin PingEr looked at his pale face, the smile on her face slowly disappeared. She gazed thoughtfully at Ghost Li, who was frowning, a heavy emotion weighing his face.

Perhaps, he found himself unexpectedly revealing something?

Jin PingEr has always been an extremely intelligent woman but she was definitely not those quiet and virtuous secular lady, she quietly watched Ghost Li's face with soft eyes but as she watched, his face turned more and more unhappy.

As the moment became more and more awkward, and Ghost Li's eyebrows frowned even more tighter, Jin PingEr suddenly asked, "What's wrong?"

Startled, Ghost Li said, "What?"

Jin PingEr looked at him, with a ghost of a smile on her face, yet her eyes conveying a different emotion, softly asked, "You seemed uncomfortable?"

Ghost Li coughed once, and said, "No."

Jin PingEr appeared not to hear his answer, mused and said, "Is it because, in front of a woman like me, you've unexpectedly revealed some of the words in your heart, and that made you feel a little embarrassed?"

Ghost Li's expression instantly turned cold, but before he could speak, Jin PingEr quickly spoke, "This past decade, especially after BiYao incident, you have never travelled alone with a woman for this long right! Inadvertently after so many days of contact, there is less hostility between us, and your unguarded words made you feel that you have let her down?"

Ghost Li stared at Jin PingEr, with cold eyes and said, "What did you mean by all these, and, why did you mention BiYao?"

In the face of those icy threatening eyes, Jin PingEr displayed no fear, on the contrary, she smiled, her eyes seemed to be excited and said, “You are afraid, aren’t you?”

Ghost Li jumped upright, and said angrily, “What am I afraid of! If you continue with such nonsense, I will not be polite...”

“You are afraid you will forget BiYao!” Jin PingEr shouted, a clear sound like cutting through the snow, stabbing into the invisible ground between them.

Ghost Li opened his mouth in anger and froze, unable to make a sound, as if his vitals were attacked. Jin PingEr abruptly went silent, as the echos of her words reverberated around them, their surroundings became quiet and still.

At this moment, the sky was blue, the distant rolling mountains, a breeze seemed to be blowing from the horizon, the woods and grass nearby rustled.

It was now after noon. The wind blew across their faces.

The sun turned more lazy, the two of them faced each other and were silent, no one spoke.

Jin PingEr looked at the man in front of her, whose eyes were glistening with something, looking pitiful and yet looked like sneering.

After a long while, she gently pulled a stray hair loosened by the wind to the back of her ear, and said with a gentle and light voice, “For that feeling at that

time, now even you don't even believe yourself, are you afraid of forgetting her subconsciously?"

Her smile was light, like a wild flower caressed by the wind, "Constantly repressing yourself, always reminding yourself, who would have imagined, Ghost King sect's number one great general Ghost Li whom everyone fear, is such a pitiful man?"

Ghost Li's expressions oscillated, between dark and white, suddenly he took a deep breath, looked up at the sky, pausing for a moment of breath and released it in a rush. When he looked back at her again, his face was as calm as usual, without the slightest hint of any colour of emotions, completely indifferent.

"Who do you think you are, saying such things about me, how about yourself?" He said with mock in his eyes, as if the earlier moment was completely forgotten.

Jin PingEr smiled and said, "Me? I am nobody, only just a woman accompanying you now!"

Ghost Li ignored the indistinct sarcasm in her words, turned his head, and suddenly the underbrush nearby parted and a grey shadow flashed, it was Xiao Hui who took a couple of jumps to Ghost Li's side. At a closer look, the monkey was carefully clutching some kind of wild fruits, even its mouth was chewing nonstop, no wonder there was none of his familiar [zi zi] calls.

Ghost Li picked up Xiao Hui, extended an open palm and Xiao Hui split his mouth in a grin before placing the wild fruits in Ghost Li's hand. The wild fruits were adorable bright red things, and even though they weren't very big, they looked very plump and delicious.

Ghost Li took one into his mouth and chewed a couple of times. It tasted slightly underripe but

very juicy and sweet, a rare thing to come by.

Nodding his head, he separated a few of those fruits, looked at Jin PingEr, and handed her the fruits, saying, “Xiao Hui has the innate ability to distinguish poison, so these wild fruits can be eaten.”

Jin PingEr did not immediately take the fruits offered, staring at his extended hand, smiled suddenly and said, “By sharing the food with me, you won’t be having more misgivings in your heart?”

Ghost Li frowned, snorted, and his palms closed into a fist as he started to pull back.

Unexpectedly at this moment, Jin PingEr reached out and grasped his hand, and said laughing, “I want, I want...”

Ghost Li’s expression changed slightly. He looked at Jin PingEr, slowly uncurled his fingers to reveal those few wild fruits.

The palm skin was soft, from far, a faint aroma, drifted in the breeze. At this moment, Jin PingEr’s eyes seemed to soften, like a ripple in gently flowing water, stretched out her white long fingers, picking up the wild fruits from Ghost Li’s hand one by one.

Slender fingers brushed casually against the rough skin, a warmth that carried a peculiar touch of cold.

She stared at the man in front of her, gently and slowly let go of his hand, then smiled before placing a wild fruit in her mouth. Chewed a couple times and said smiling, "it's delicious!"

Her smile, like the most beautiful flower blooming in the afternoon, was breathtaking.

Ghost Li gazed at her, silent.

Jin PingEr's smile became more coquettish, and joked, "What's wrong, you are not saying anything, standing there like a fool..."

Ghost Li looked at Jin PingEr covering her mouth while smiling but he remained quiet. After a moment, he suddenly said, "'Purple light sword is an extremely evil and vicious weapon, you are able to master it to 'Pure Yin Return to Pool' stage, and merging it with the energy vessels of your body, that is really an extraordinary feat."

[Pu], the wild fruits in Jin PingEr's hand suddenly burst, before the juices all spilled out, it had already turned into ice from the sudden strange chill and fell to the ground.

The warm smile that was on Jin PingEr's disappeared, and instead now had eyes like daggers, staring sharply at the Ghost Li.

Ghost Li instead did not seem to feel the hostility, and said lightly, "Just that

although you are still a pure Yin body and compatible with the Purple light swords spiritual energy but the cold Yin energy is too much and relying just only the Yin, you instead forcefully cultivate, the Yin energy penetrates your body, your meridians have all been damage from it. Using this weapon naturally is very powerful but in the future if you want to cultivate to the next level and become stronger, I'm afraid it is very difficult."

As he finished, he ignored the animosity emanating from Jin PingEr, turned and started walking while calling out for the monkey. Xiao Hui, who was eating the wild fruits nearby, scuttled over and jumped on to his shoulder, and the two of them continued their journey towards that strange black mountain.

Jin PingEr was left standing there, looking at their silhouettes slowly disappearing, and then she slowly raised her right hand, staring. In the sun, her white slender and beautiful palm shimmered like hidden precious stones but from the deepest beneath the surface, although not obvious, one could see the indistinct unnatural light blue, like tiny veins scattered deep within the flesh.

Jin PingEr's face was like cold water, suddenly snorted, without saying nothing, started walking towards the direction where Ghost Li went. With her foot, she stepped heavily on the frozen wild fruits, smashing them into pieces.

, , , , ,

Chapter 196 - Decisions

Southern border, Ten Thousands Great Mountains.

Before the vast Black Forest which Ghost Li and Jin PingEr had just traversed, stood a dozen people. Most of whom were FenXiang Valley's elite disciples, led by Li Xun, among them there were two outsiders, Lu XueQi and Zeng ShuShu from Qing Yun sect. As for WenMin who were with them earlier on, unexpectedly was missing.

Amongst this delegation, many of them looked slightly exhausted, obviously although they were cultivated disciples but entering deep into the unfathomable and dangerous Ten Thousands Great Mountains, was still not an easy feat for them. Only the leader Li Xun, as well as Lu XueQi and Zeng ShuShu, who were all well skilled, looked like their usual selves.

Unfortunately, staring at that dark and mysterious forest in front of them, could not cheer anyone up.

Above this stretch of black forest, the highly toxic miasma had risen, it was clear that traveling by the sky was not possible. With the Black Forest vast perimeter, it would be challenging to go around the forest, in addition Li Xun who had taken the role as the guide had been very clear, that in accordance to the legends by the southern border natives, the Beast Deity's lair was in the Subdue Devil ancient cave just behind this Dark Forest.

This forest, walking through it seemed to be their only path!

A light blue light exuded from Tian Ya celestial sword, gently flickering in Lu XueQi's hand, contrasting against her snow white and lonely figure. Without WenMin, not only did she rarely spoke to Li Xun and the FenXiang Valley's disciples, even Zeng ShuShu from the same sect, she also rarely took notice of.

Throughout the journey, the barren hills and wild rivers, poisonous insects and ferocious beasts, all of which would have terrified most people, to her, it was often either ignoring them or striking them down with her sword. No one knew what her deepest inner thoughts were.

Li Xun did not know, and neither did Zeng ShuShu. Li Xun coughed discreetly towards Zeng ShuShu and asked in a low voice, "Umm, Zeng senior brother, may I ask what is Lu senior sister brooding over in silence all day?"

Zeng ShuShu was non-plussed, smiled wryly, "Li senior brother, I think you have asked the wrong person!"

Li Xun glanced at him, after a long time shook his head and also made a wry laugh.

At the moment everyone was worn out from the day and were resting to prepare for the journey through the Black Forest, Lu XueQi stood alone, far away on a rock, surveying the distant hills. Behind her, frequently there were many stares, intentionally or unintentionally lingering onto that delicate back figure.

Li Xun and Zeng ShuShu stood aside, the former pondered and muttered to himself for a bit, before saying grimly, “Zeng senior brother, we better invite Lu junior sister to come over and discuss our next steps carefully, is it good?”

Zeng ShuShu nodded his head and agreed, “That is a good idea.” He then turned around and walked to Lu XueQi, spoke to her in a low voice, Lu XueQi remained expressionless, listening to Zeng ShuShu, she then looked at Li Xun, Li Xun forced a small smile, feeling awkward.

In a short while, Lu XueQi and Zeng ShuShu walked over together. Li Xun coughed once and started the conversation, “It’s like this, once we have crossed this section of Black Forest, we will be close to the lair of the Beast Deity. We...”

“Li senior brother!” Suddenly, Lu XueQi called Li Xun, interrupting his words.

Li Xun was startled, since entering the Ten Thousands Great Mountains, it could be said that this was the first time Lu XueQi spoke to him, in surprise, he asked, “What is it?”

Lu XueQi looked at him, her eyes faintly glinting, said, “For the past few days, I have something that I don’t understand, and will like to ask Li senior brother.”

Li Xun nodded his head and said, “Lu junior sister, please go ahead.”

Lu XueQi’s expression did not soften from Li Xun's politeness, still asked in an icy manner, “In the past, what we heard from FenXiang Valley, are all saying that this Ten Thousands Great Mountains is an extremely dangerous place, even you all rarely enter too. However, for some reason, on the way here, Lu

senior brother you seemed to be very familiar with this place, couldn't it be that you have been here before? And, the Beast Deity's tracks are extremely furtive, not to mention how hidden the location of the lair is, how would FenXiang Valley be so well informed and know such things?"

Li Xun's expression remain unchanged in the face of Lu XueQi's interrogation, as if he was prepared. He smiled and responded, "Lu junior sister, as I have told you earlier, in the past us FenXiang Valley indeed did not pay attention to the existence of this Ten Thousands Great Mountains, but when the catastrophe of demon beasts happened, it was only natural that we started paying attention to this place. As for the lair of the Beast Deity, it is discovered when our disciples pursued the remnants of the demon beasts, at the sacrifice of many of our best!"

Zeng ShuShu and Lu XueQi frowned simultaneously, it was clear that this empty elaborated story did not convince them, but looking at him speaking so confidently, they were unable to directly refute the story and so could only remained silent.

Li Xun smiled, looked at the two of them, and said, "Speaking of which reminded me, that senior sister WenMin from your honourable sect, before we were about to enter the Ten Thousands Great Mountains, suddenly had to return so abruptly to QingYun sect?"

Surprised, Zeng ShuShu couldn't help but glanced at Lu XueQi before replying with a smile, "Didn't we inform Li senior brother earlier, something urgent came up and senior sister WenMin had no choice but to return."

Standing by the side, Lu XueQi slightly cast her eyes downward, and did not speak. The reason WenMin had to rush back to QingYun sect, not even Zeng ShuShu was not too clear about it, actually to say it, naturally it was because of

that day in the Mountain River Hall, when Yun YiLan abruptly asked the one question about the 'Zhu Xian Ancient Sword'.

Not knowing the truth, Zeng ShuShu treated it as a joke and had forgotten about it, but after Lu XueQi and WenMin discussed, decided that it was no trivial matter and in the end decided that WenMin would rush back to QingYun Mountain and report the news to the various elders and teacher uncles, so as to be prepared for a change in situation. After all, to the QingYun sect and the rest of the world, the significance of 'Zhu Xian Ancient Sword' was too important. And FenXiang Valley who previously always had good relations with QingYun sect, and its leader Yun YiLan, the unexpected show this time, subtly revealed some stirrings which were worrying.

However, the matter of the Beast Deity was also very important, and cannot be given up. So after deliberations, WenMin would return back to the QingYun Mountain, and Lu XueQi with Zeng ShuShu would remain. But in their minds, FenXiang Valley this rich and powerful sect, at present seemed to be revealing its odd behaviours.

At present, Li Xun and Zeng ShuShu had already been discussing for a while, making detailed plans for matters that required attention once they have entered the Black Forest. Through this conversation, Zeng ShuShu learned many new unheard information about the Black Forest, a real-opener to him, nodded continuously while engrossed in the conversation.

Lu XueQi listened along, for some reason, felt slightly frustrated, stood up again and walk to the side, gazing off towards the horizon. In the distance, faint outlines of huge undulating mountains, shaped the landscape under the wide blue sky, while cold wind whistled past them.

Who knows, what would be waiting for them ahead?

Qing Yun Mountain, Big Bamboo Valley.

Early this day, at the first glimmer of light, while the Big Bamboo Valley disciples were not yet awake, light footsteps echoed from the Observed Silence Hall. Contrary to his normal habits, Tian BuYi walked out, already dressed.

The dawn's light illuminated his grave expression, the shadows formed by his frown hinted at the heavy thoughts in his mind. SuRu followed from behind, and one could not tell if the couple woke up early or if they had not been able to sleep all night.

SuRu's face was lined with concern, as she walked out of Observed Silence Hall, she first looked at the disciples dormitory, saw that it peaceful as expected, spoke in a low voice, "BuYi, I still think what you are about to do is not right, we should discuss it further!"

Tian BuYi's face solemn, his eyebrows never seemed to relax once, replied in a deep voice, "This matter can no longer be delayed, ever since we came back from the Founders Ancestral Hall, Reverend DaoXuan senior brother's condition has been getting worse. Yesterday the news from Tong Tian Peak, heard that he actually laid hands on Fan elder and Xiao YiCai who went to persuade him."

SuRu surprised, said, "What, why would sect head senior brother fight, how are the both of them, what provoked sect head senior brother, was he hurt?"

Tian BuYi grunted and said, "What else would they fight about, naturally when they noticed DaoXuan senior brother behaving strangely, they went forward to advise. I heard that DaoXuan senior brother was cordial at first, but I am unsure what caused the argument, with one palm strike, he immediately

seriously injured Fan senior brother, luckily that kid Xiao YiCai was quick-witted enough and managed to escape in time.”

SuRu startled, frowned and asked, “Xiao YiCai was actually alright?”

Tian BuYi clasped his hands behind and pondered for a moment before saying, “He has always been smart, and he had been following DaoXuan senior brother for so many years, more or less he knows him better than most. Most likely he realised early that something was amiss and took the opportunity, therefore managed to get away in time. But it was also fortunate that he was quick-witted, he could then save Fan senior brother and and treated him, or who knows what would have happened!”

SuRu was silent for a long while, uncertainty and concern mixed in her expression, “He, he has already changed until like this, why do you still insist on visiting him?”

Tian BuYi took a deep breath, and said, “It doesn’t matter that others don’t understand, don’t tell me you don’t understand why too?”

SuRu quietly said, “But he ... Sect head senior brother right now has been possessed by the demons, no one knows what he is actually thinking any more, and he is so highly skilled, far stronger and better skilled than you and I, now that you taking the risk by going, I’m afraid that, that...”

Towards the end, her voice dropped increasingly lower until it was barely above a whisper and she stopped, evidently unwilling to give voice to her fear.

Tian BuYi released a heavy sigh, turned around to gaze at SuRu and stretched

out his hand to gently hold her delicate hands, and said gently, “We have been married for so many years, of course I know what you are worrying about. With you worrying like that for me, even if something were to happen to me, it doesn’t matter anymore...”

SuRu frowned and interrupted him exclaiming, “What nonsense are you saying!”

Tian BuYi nodded his head, and after a moment, continued, “As you know, Zhu Xian Ancient Sword’s secret is Qing Yun sect’s highest classified, and initially only the sect head knew of this. However at that Wildlands battle, I, Zeng ShuChang and the rest following Wan JianYi senior brother into the decisive battle of thousand miles ChangSha, chanced upon this secret by coincidence. Afterwards, we stood in the Founders Ancestral Hall and in front of the Qing Yun ancestral shrines made a solemn vow, never to reveal this secret to anyone for the rest of our lives.”

SuRu sighed and said, “Why are you mentioning this again, I was there that day and made the vow as well, how could I not remember?”

Tian BuYi awe-inspiringly said, “Ever since Qing Ye founder left a commandment tablet written personally, generations of our ancestors had warned repeatedly that the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword cannot be used lightly. In Qing Ye founder’s tablet, it even more clearly state that the soul of the ancient sword is extremely terrible and vicious, and if the welder is not of strong mind and stable foundations, they will fall into the devil’s path. Now that DaoXuan senior brother is showing those various signs, wouldn’t it be proving exactly what the forefathers predicted to happen!”

SuRu bowed her head and was silent for a long while.

Tian BuYi raised his head to gaze at the brightening sky, in the distance the early morning mountain fog surrounded the summits, where the clouds shrouded, lofty towering Tong Tian Peak could be seen indistinctly.

“Over the years, DaoXuan senior brother spared no effort, reorganized Qing Yun sect and made it prospered, till today we are able to regard the world with disdain, lead the world’s Good Faction.” Tian BuYi’s voice changed, suddenly turned heavy with emotions, “I remember thinking, that if Wan JianYi senior brother takes the position of sect head, I guessed he wouldn’t be as good as DaoXuan senior brother.”

SuRu trembled and whispered, “BuYi...” but lost her voice as she hesitated to finish what she wanted to say.

Tian BuYi clasped his hands behind, looking frustrated and said, “In these many years, even though I am still secretly making offering to Wan senior brother’s memorial tablet, but to DaoXuan senior brother, honestly, I was feeling more and more admiration, although we argued mostly but as to how he handled matters and his conduct, I have nothing to say, even if ten years ago, when he used the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword to strike lao qi...”

“BuYi, stop talking!” SuRu suddenly shouted, for some reason, as she stared at Tian BuYi, her eyes turned red.

Tian BuYi’s face muscles twitched, and tried to force a smile, but it only revealed his heart ache, “In this world, only you understand me. That war ten years ago, I, I...” He released a long sigh, and said, “I still miss lao qi! Amongst the disciples, even though he was the most displeasing to the eye, but I still... alas!”

In the wake of his long sigh, the two of them fell silent. After a while, Tian BuYi smiled bitterly and said, “After that day, I was once deeply resentful towards DaoXuan senior brother, lao qi is brought up by me, those decades, wouldn’t I have known what kind of a person he is? If there is any wrongdoing, it would also be me to teach him, who knows maybe we would be able to turn the situation around. But with that strike, he he, before lao qi, BiYao was first struck to death, and then that is just great, lao qi who didn’t rebel, would also have to rebel. With his stubborn temper, his entire life is destroyed with that sword strike.”

“However, in the past few years, when I reflected at times, recalled this matter, I once thought, if I was in DaoXuan senior brother’s position, that sword strike, would I have struck, or not?”

SuRu looked at her husband, said nothing, but gently grasped his hand and patted his palm, offering silent comfort.

Tian BuYi smiled faintly, looked at SuRu, smiled and said, “If it were me, I’m afraid in the end I would still have delivered that strike.”

As if she already knew the answer, SuRu lowered her head and said nothing.

Tian BuYi fell silent, staring at the direction of the distant TongTian Peak.

After a long while, SuRu said abruptly, “Since your mind has been decided, why don’t I accompany you to visit DaoXuan senior brother!”

Tian BuYi shook his head and said, “It would be better if you don’t go, it would be hard to talk with so many people. DaoXuan senior brother turning into what

he is today, is all because of what he did it for the good of humankind and Qing Yun sect. If I didn't know, that would have been it, but I have been privy to the secret and I cannot now in good conscience sit idly by and do nothing. I have to go and see if there's any chance of help for him. Only hope that DaoXuan senior brother with his deep cultivation, will be able to wake from the vicious currents. Otherwise..."

He ended abruptly.

SuRu looked at him, smiled suddenly, wiping away the sadness and grief on her face, replacing it with a tender loving expression, gently said, "Alright, that's enough."

Tian BuYi and SuRu had been together for a long time, both understood each other perfectly, at this moment, he just gazed at SuRu for a long while, saying nothing, only nodded his head. The next moment, he turned, flung his sleeves, red lights started to flash out.

Watching as his red celestial sword was on the verge of travel, SuRu was suddenly behind him, again called out, "BuYi..." Although the tone was soft, it was filled with love and tenderness, and it was conveyed in those two short words.

Tian BuYi turned back to look at his wife, and saw the reluctance on SuRu's face and the tears in her eyes. After a long moment, Tian BuYi smiled and waved. His lips twitched but he said nothing, turned and wielded the red celestial sword, with a shout, leapt into the air.

That scarlet flash of light, swept across the horizon and into the clouds. At first the clouds billowed and made way but soon shrouded from all directions,

gradually submerging his silhouette.

Only SuRu was left, staring at the sky in a daze. She stood there for a long time, until dewdrops formed on her hair, the pearls sparkling in the sun as it falls quietly onto the ground.

, , , ,

Chapter 197 - Footprints

The black mountain summits.

After setting foot on the mountain, a strong smell wafted through the air. It was choking, with a taste of sulfur. Ghost Li and Jin PingEr were both strongly skilled, and were still able to tolerate the smell, but as they gradually walked deeper into the mountain, the Yin wind which became stronger, slowly made their eyebrows knitted together.

The bone chilling wind, for some reason, when it brushed across their faces, although it was not a strong gust, its ghastly air made one shivered from deep within the heart. In addition, the faint hissing sound heard from deep within the summit ahead, undulating, sudden high and low, at times like a monkey crying in the night, and other times as if violent demons were laughing in misery, inciting panic in all who heard it.

Xiao Hui the monkey was crouching on Ghost Li's shoulder, after munching on the last wild fruit, flung the pit aside and looked around with his three eyes, seemingly oblivious to the strangeness of his surrounding.

Jin PingEr's frown deepened and said suddenly, "Something doesn't seem right."

Surprised, Ghost Li stopped and ask, "What is it?"

Jin PingEr hesitated before responding, "When I was last tracking here, there were no wails or howls or gusts of Yin wind. It was after reaching the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave then I encountered some of this. How did this place turn into netherworld-like in just a short period of time?"

Ghost Li looked off into the distance and said indifferently, "Maybe it is because this is the Beast Deity's lair, the evil aura is too heavy, as it should be. When you first came he was just resurrected, and naturally there was no such aura."

Jin PingEr thought it through, perhaps that was the only explanation. The day at Qing Yun Hill, the Beast Deity's bloody battle with Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, he was seriously injured by the sword, everyone saw how powerful the sword was. However the Beast Deity still managed to escape, with that level of power, it already shocked the world.

Jin PingEr's eyes moved, said abruptly, "Say, if we really do find the Beast Deity in the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave, even though he has been wounded, but with just the both of us, do you think we would be able to deal with him?"

Ghost Li shook his head and said, "How would I know?"

Jin PingEr looked at him and laughed suddenly, "Looking at you, seems like you are not confident huh! That being the case, why did you still follow me here?"

She looked at Ghost Li, "Don't forget, in the Majestic Fox Mountain, there is still a BiYao waiting for you to save her! If you die here, wouldn't you be letting her down?"

Ghost Li snorted and walked forward, saying, "Her father commanded me to do this, I owe BiYao too much, I have to do something, but you." He laughed coldly and said, "If you do unfortunately die here, I guess that will really be dying with grievances isn't it?"

Jin PingEr laughed coquettishly, smiling to his back, "Aiya! You this person is so formal, as long as we die together, be it Beast Deity's lair or a cattle pen, that is also good."

Ghost Li who was walking ahead [he he] coldly laughed, obviously he did not believe a single word of Jin PingEr, let alone being moved by the performance. He merely continued walking. The monkey on his shoulder instead turned his head to look at Jin PingEr, splitting into a rare grin, seemingly in a good mood.

Different from those ladies who used to associate with Ghost Li, Xiao Hui did not treat Jin PingEr as affectionate as how he treated Xiao Bai, Xiao Huan, in the days they spent together, this happy grin he showed was the first.

Jin PingEr was somehow surprised but it was after all not a bad thing, so she was rather happy. With a smiling expression, she was about to step ahead to tease the monkey who was just smiling when he suddenly opened his mouth, spat out a black thing, extremely fast, shot towards Jin PingEr.

Jin PingEr was shocked, but she was not an ordinary person, she did not panic, exerting force from her foot, she spun her body to the side by a few degrees to let the strange thing fly past her.

With a muffled pop, that thing hit the ground, it did not ricochet and instead smashed right into the ground. Jin PingEr turned to look, it was the pit of a wild fruit, it seemed like he had been sucking on one for flavour and decided to use it to play a trick on her now.

Played by a monkey, Jin PingEr was furious, her face also turned pale slightly, she glared sideways but saw that the grey monkey had already turned his body around and sat on Ghost Li's shoulder, facing her, his arms around his chest, both of his legs swinging, and his three eyes staring at the sky, a face full of arrogance, showing in abundance the legendary hoodlum spirit. Even his tail was swinging back and forth, as if he was saying-yes I am bullying you, I am a gangster and I am not afraid.

If she had not looked up to see that, she might not have been as angry. When she saw that, she strode up furiously to Ghost Li and yelled, "This monkey of yours is such an ill-mannered monkey, do you know it was spitting pits at people?"

Ghost Li slowly turned around and looked at Jin PingEr strangely, "Are you scolding him?" he asked, pointing at Xiao Hui.

Jin PingEr nodded.

Xiao Hui immediately got angry. He jumped up from Ghost Li's shoulder screeching, his three eyes wide open and both his hands clenched in tight fists, gesturing a fight. It seemed like it was burning with rage, and wanted to fight Jin PingEr who had come to complain.

Jin PingEr did not expect this grey furred monkey would learn to be so human,

and took a step back in surprise. She ignored him and turned to yell at Ghost Li, "I am scolding him, this animal is just too vile. Raising him means you have to teach him manners..."

"You!" shouted Ghost Li suddenly, at Xiao Hui, simultaneously interrupting Jin PingEr.

Xiao Hui jumped in shock, and paused. Jin PingEr was also surprised, staring at Ghost Li.

Ghost Li frowned with a grave expression, and said to Xiao Hui, "I told you before, to read more books, knowledge brings reason, but you wouldn't listen. When I taught you that book <Divine and Evil>, why did you not learn? Return and make three hundred copies of it before coming back to see me!"

Xiao Hui's three eyes stared wide open, blinked a couple of times and touched his head with his hands. He scratched and pawed his head, stupefied.

On the other side, Jin PingEr was not any better. Recovering from her shock, she could not help but sneered, "What nonsense are you talking about. Even if this monkey did learn to be more human, it won't be able to read or write!"

Ghost Li turned to glance at her, "Oh" he said, as if he had just come to realise that. He said indifferently, "If that is the case, even you also say it so, then this monkey with no manners is not my fault. Heaven create all living things, why can't a monkey to learn to read, why, why?"

He looked at Jin PingEr, sighed with a complete lack of sincerity, said nothing and resumed his walk.

Jin PingEr was so furious her face had turned even paler.

The monkey Xiao Hui fell off Ghost Li's shoulder with a plop on the ground but he did not look like he was in pain. Instead he was screeching, howling with laughter, at times holding his sides as if he was about to split from laughing, and other times beating the ground, and even lying on the ground facing the sky, its tail dancing, in short laughing more and more crazily.

Jin PingEr became even angrier, right when she was about to flare up, Xiao Hui jumped up and rushed towards her making [zhi zhi zhi]. He made a big face at her and then scurried his way back to Ghost Li's shoulder. Once settled, he stared back towards Jin PingEr with a smug look before making another face at her.

Jin PingEr was so angry she was trembling. Gritting her teeth, she raised her arm forward. In the warm sun, the edge of her palm emitted a strange purple light.

However, the arm was only raised halfway before it stopped. In the silhouette of the male ahead, there seemed to be a faint green light emitting from his hand.

Jin PingEr's pupils contracted.

After a long while, she stomped her feet abruptly and lowered her arm. She then closed her eyes and took a deep breath. Her chest rising up and fell a couple of times before she regained her composure. The green flare from Ghost Li further ahead dispersed slowly as well. His shadow, along with the grey furred three eyed monkey's sharp crazed laughter, moved further and further away.

Jin PingEr looked calm but still carried a touch of anger inside but also for some reason, her face turned a bit flushed. She had always bewitched people and toying with the wills of people were her past time. To be played like this by a monkey today...

She grunted, dispersing those thoughts. As she was about to start walking, she frowned suddenly, as if she thought of something else. She turned and walked back slowly. Within a short distance, she had arrived at the spot where Xiao Hui spat the pit to provoke her.

The fruit pit was part of the fruits commonly grown in this area, and there were nothing strange about that. However that particular pit was almost completely buried, with only a small part of the shell visible. This strange black mountain, was different from the other areas of the Ten Thousands Great Mountains where the ground had loose soil. Instead the ground here was solid rocks.

Xiao Hui's spit force, was actually strong enough to embed the pit into the rock.

Jin PingEr frowned deepened, slowly stood up, and looked toward the direction where Ghost Li's silhouette disappeared. The Yin breeze blowing from that direction seemed to still carry monkey Xiao Hui's piercing crazed laughter.

Muttering in a low voice to herself, "How could even the monkey, also have such skills, to be able to progress so fast. Who is this person..."

The vast black forest, again welcomed new visitors. Only this time the number of guests were far more than ever before. A platoon of troops advanced

through the forest, marching through the thicket and the clusters of thorns.

However, on this part of the journey, other than the unexpected zero attacks by ferocious beasts, it was also unexpectedly smooth.

Leading the group were several unordinary people. Lu XueQi frowned and said nothing, but Zeng ShuShu could stand it no longer and burst out at Li Xun, "Li senior-brother, this, there is something wrong here!"

Li Xun stopped, glanced around before looking at Zeng ShuShu. He pondered a moment before calling out to the FenXiang Valley disciples, "We will take a rest here before continuing our journey."

Everyone cheered in agreement, evidently the long march was difficult.

Having settled the others, Li Xun and Zeng ShuShu walked a short distance aside, towards Lu XueQi. Whereas Lu XueQi frowned and took a step back.

Li Xun's expression dropped, and Zeng ShuShu being quick-witted, took the opportunity to interrupt, "Li senior-brother, you realised it too?"

Li Xun nodded his head, his gaze on the feet of the three of them, among the exuberant thorny undergrowth, although vague, it was still faintly visible that after the thorns were cut broken, the faint impression of somebody stepping over them.

"Someone was here before us, and certainly not long ago, walked through this part of the forest too." He was sure, and his forehead was creased with worry he couldn't hide.

Zeng ShuShu thought, and asked "Could it be Li senior-brother your sect..."

Li Xun shook his head, "Impossible, FenXiang Valley only has this team entering Ten Thousands Great Mountains, most of the valley younger generation elites are here, and there will be no one else joining us."

Zeng ShuShu frowned and said, "That's strange, according to Yun master valley, this news should not have been leaked! Could it be that other sects got to know of this news and ventured into the Ten Thousands Great Mountains?"

Li Xun hesitated, then shook his head and said, "I don't believe so. First of all, this matter is indeed still a secret, so only our two sects know." He coughed lightly before saying in a low voice, "Beast Deity is the cause of the catastrophe. If there were others trying to take advantage of the situation to finish the kill, then what our two sects fought tooth and nail for at Qing Yun Hill, wouldn't it be..."

Zeng ShuShu reached out a hand and patted Li Xun's shoulder, laughed and said, "I agree Li senior-brother, great minds truly think alike! Ha ha, ha ha ha..."

They studied each other and laughed, just then, a derisive snort came the side. It was from Lu XueQi. The two, surprised, turned to look at her.

Zeng ShuShu asked in a low voice, "Lu senior-sister, what is with you, did we say something wrong?"

Lu XueQi gave him a cold look, turned her head away and sneered, "What a repulsive countenance!"

Zeng ShuShu was stunned, for a moment did not understand the meaning of

Lu XueQi's words. He was unsure if she was scolding him or Li Xun, or perhaps might as well the both of them. He turned his head to look at Li Xun, and the two looked at each other uncomfortably while they felt the awkwardness, unsure of what to say.

After a moment, after all Zeng ShuShu was more thick skinned, made a [ha ha], pretended he had heard nothing, spoke to Li Xun, "Li senior-brother, since the news has not spread and it isn't other disciples from FenXiang Valley, then there is something very odd about these tracks!"

Li Xun frowned, clearly thinking hard. As he was just about to speak, Lu XueQi turned back towards them and said coldly, "Beast Deity!"

Zeng ShuShu and Li Xun stood shocked, their expressions full of disbelief.

After a while, Zeng ShuShu nodded slowly. Though there was still some hesitation, he said, "This... even though what Lu senior-sister said was... wild, but thinking about it, it indeed is possible!"

Li Xun's expression was contrary to Zeng ShuShu. He looked like he wanted to say something but hesitated and shook his head, "Forget it, let's continue on and keep a look out. Speculating here would not do anybody any good."

Continuing, he said to the two of them, "You two should rest, I will check in on my juniors."

Zeng ShuShu nodded and said, "Li senior-brother, please go ahead!"

After cautioning them to be careful, Li Xun turned to walk to the back.

Once Li Xun had walked far enough, Zeng ShuShu turned his head towards Lu XueQi's back, smiled and said, "Lu senior-sister, could it be that you were scolding me earlier?"

Lu XueQi let out a disdainful snort, neither admitting or denying the truth of that statement. By doing that, she seemed to giving tacit agreement.

Zeng ShuShu forced a laugh, walked slowly to Lu XueQi's side and spoke in a low voice, "Lu senior-sister, there is something I would like to ask you."

Lu XueQi glanced at him and was surprised. Zeng ShuShu looked very serious, and that was very unusual. Immediately, she asked, "What?"

Zeng ShuShu took a deep breath, looked around before whispering, "Lu senior-sister, tell me honestly. Our sect's Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, is it truly damaged?"

Lu XueQi face paled to a white colour, a gleam in her eyes flashed, stared at Zeng ShuShu. Even her TianYa celestial sword, that faint blue glow like autumn waters, seemed to be buzzing, stretching the moment, before returning.

Zeng ShuShu's expression changed, felt as if the woman in front of him seemed to be ice a moment ago, now seemed to have become as sharp as a needle. He involuntarily took a step back and whispered, "Lu senior-sister, there is no need for this!"

Lu XueQi stared coldly at him, "You asking this question, what is the meaning of it?"

Zeng ShuShu smiled lightly and said, "I am also a disciple of QingYun sect, how would I not be concern about such a matter? WenMin senior-sister's hasty return, most likely is to report this matter back to the various teachers isn't it?"

Lu XueQi said nothing, just continued to stare at him coldly.

Zeng ShuShu nodded, "Alright, alright, Lu senior-sister, look, I have no bad intention, just that there are some things that happened within this period which are highly suspicious, there isn't much opportunities along the journey to discuss this with you, so I am taking advantage of this moment now."

Lu XueQi looked at him, "What kind of things?"

Zeng ShuShu coughed once before whispering, "What kind of a person do you think FenXiang Valley's leader Yun YiLan is?"

Lu XueQi frowned, "What do you mean?"

Zeng ShuShu smiled lightly and said, "Let's say it like this, do you think Yun master valley is a simple minded person? Or how about a person who hates evil and make the world's Good Faction as his responsibility, doesn't guard against fellow Good Faction Qing Yun disciples at all?"

Lu XueQi snorted and said nothing, but her disdain expression revealed her words, evidently disagreeing completely with Zeng ShuShu's questions.

Zeng ShuShu was not angry, it seemed he already knew Lu XueQi would react this way. He continued, "Since we all know that Yun master valley is not a warm hearted compassionate or of a simple mind, then on that day in the Mountain

River Hall when he abruptly asked the three of us about Zhu Xian Ancient Sword being damaged, isn't that strange?"

Lu XueQi took a deep breath, and looked at Zeng ShuShu without saying a word.

Zeng ShuShu was a little embarrassment, and said, "Alright! I know speaking bad things about a highly respected elder behind his back is indeed inappropriate. However, you see, thinking back about these matters, things are somewhat strange..."

"There is nothing inappropriate about it." Lu XueQi clear and cold voice cut in, seemed couldn't be bothered about Zeng ShuShu's slightly ajar mouth, coldly said, "What's said is said, what's the apprehension for. From Qing Yun Hill till date, he is not a so-called good person too!"

"Eh ..." Zeng ShuShu was both surprised and amused, and was speechless at that moment. He never would have dreamed that the proper and inflexible Lu XueQi was actually more iconoclastic than himself, directly saying aloud her contempt for a highly respected senior of prestige and reputation. However, on reflection, this quiet and exquisite incomparable beauty, with that highly respected senior and his disciples, seemed to really have quite a history between them!

Looking at Lu XueQi, Zeng ShuShu for some reason, felt a chill on the back of his neck. His intuition made him questioned, has he inadvertently kicked the hornet's nest? He coughed at once, hurrying to change the topic. "This, eh, oh, let's not be concerning ourselves with his moral standing. I mean, this matter, Yun master valley at least have several areas of unusualness..."

"How did he know about the damage to Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, that's one."

Lu XueQi interrupted, her expression did not change, but her eyes revealed a trace of glint, like dazzling crystals. "Second, once he knew, why did he tell us. He knew very well that once this news is revealed by himself, we would have to report it to Qing Yun various teachers. In that case, wouldn't the relationship between FenXiang Valley and Qing Yun sect change immediately?"

Zeng ShuShu nodded repeatedly, and said, "I knew with Lu senior-sister's intelligence, definitely will not overlook these crucial matters." He paused for a moment before continuing, "According to this then, there are only two possibilities, first, Qing Yun sect has a spy that is supplying him with information. He knew news that even me this Qing Yun disciple was not privy to, which means that the spy has a considerable position. However, with his reveal, wouldn't it expose that spy's identity?"

Lu XueQi snorted, and said, "Second, what is the purpose of him telling us? To remind Qing Yun sect that he already knew this secret, or to warn the various teachers, that FenXiang Valley is no longer afraid of Qing Yun sect?"

Zeng ShuShu looked intensely at Lu XueQi, sighed and said, "That was what I was thinking too, turns out you have been thinking the same too. To think I wanted to remind you. But on reflection, when you asked WenMin senior-sister return back to Qing Yun, it was to report these matters to the various teachers right!"

Lu XueQi was silent, and merely nodded her head.

The corner of Zeng ShuShu's twitched, and he abruptly released a long sigh filled with sorrow.

Startled, Lu XueQi asked, "What's with you?"

Zeng ShuShu laughed bitterly, and said, "I, I was sighing about our sect Zhu Xian Ancient Sword. Frankly, these few days even though I have arrived at this conclusion, but my heart wanted to deny it so badly. I was hoping I was wrong."

Lu XueQi said nothing, but turned her head quietly to stare into the distance. The depths of the forest were dark and secretive, the path ahead without the smallest bit of light.

Zeng ShuShu released a long breath, shook his head and said, "Forget it, thinking about it won't be of any use. We can only take it a step at a time. I wonder, what exactly has Yun valley master got up his sleeve?"

Lu XueQi did not answer, her gaze unconsciously drawn back to the faint tracks they had found earlier.

Zeng ShuShu whispered from the side, "Actually what you said about the Beast Deity although is possible, I don't think it is him."

Lu XueQi responded, "Then who do you think it is?"

Zeng ShuShu pondered a moment, and whispered, "If what that Li Xun said was true, if it's really not their own FenXiang Valley disciples, I am afraid that these tracks would most likely be from Evil Sect's remaining members."

Lu XueQi jolted and turned her head, the beautiful complexion was marred with emotions for the first time, "Why do you say so?"

Zeng ShuShu pointed to the tracks, and said, "You see, although these tracks are fuzzy, but it is clear that these are made by humans. If FenXiang Valley

disciples never came here before, then there are no other sects in Good Faction that is as familiar with the Ten Thousands Great Mountains, it is difficult to imagine that they would be able to track to this point. But Evil Sect is different. That year after the big war, Evil Sect was driven out by the Good Fraction, such inhospitable natural environment like this, most likely they would have come before. So I think it is highly possible that it's them."

"What do you say, Lu senior-sister?" Zeng ShuShu turned around and asked, but when he saw Lu XueQi's expression, he couldn't help but stare in shock.

That beautiful woman was staring at the tracks in a daze, her face pale with a faint blush, emanating deep from within the skin and faintly captivating. In the middle of this desolated and cold ancient forest, she stood there woodenly, as if she had been sucked into a particular strange dream, and was no longer able to hear the people next to her.

, , , ,

Chapter 198 - Old Haunts

Qing Yun Hill, TongTian Peak, Founders Ancestral Hall.

The lush green trees in the grove were the same as before, dense and full of vitality, the light morning mist drifted slowly across the forest, branches and tree leaves everywhere, above the wild flowers petals in the grasses, crystal dewdrops trembled gently in the breeze. In the distance, melodious and beautiful birdsong travelled out from the depths of the jungle, hearing it, it cleared one's body and heart, like being in paradise.

In this secular scenic place, Taoism-like celestial atmosphere, a short and stout figure slowly appeared on the small path in the forest, it was Tian BuYi.

The surrounding scenery seemed somewhat in disharmony to Tian BuYi's grave expression, his eyes staring straight ahead, his face reflecting his heavy heart. At this moment, there was not a single soul beside him, and that was a little strange, although Tian BuYi as Big Bamboo Valley leader, was also one of the very important figures of Qing Yun sect, but visiting TongTian Peak's sacred Founders Ancestral Hall privately given his status, it was also clearly strange.

Along the mountain road, there were no Qing Yun disciples keeping watch, there was only silence along the way. Amongst the birdsong in the light wind, Tian BuYi passed through that famous trifurcated path, gradually saw the majestic cornices deep in the forest.

[Dang...]

A light bell sounded from an unknown location, from the direction of the mountain ahead, echoing around Qing Yun Hill.

That hollow fading echo made Tian BuYi stopped in his tracks, turned back and surveyed the scene.

The firmament, the sky was also limitless blue!

Thousands and thousands of years, as if it had never changed.

Tian BuYi's face gradually turned solemn, silently stood silent for a while, and then again turning back and continued on his journey to Founders Ancestral Hall once more.

The massive stone steps revealed in front of him, the Founders Ancestral Hall was still the same, like a giant sleeping gently in the arms of the forest. The hall's big doors remained opened as before, the interior still dusky, even the specks of light emanating from the joss sticks and candles seemed to also be in a deep sleep, everything, was so peaceful.

Only that, outside this Founders Ancestral Hall, at the bottom of the steps, stood a young man with his back to Tian BuYi. Tian BuYi frowned and walked over.

Hearing the footsteps, the young man was surprised. He was not expecting anyone to visit at this time. He turned around quickly.

Tian BuYi came face to face with the young man, and they were both shocked. That young man was Lin JingYu.

Tian BuYi immediately called to mind the previous conversations he heard from his disciples that Lin JingYu had been keeping watch here in Founders Ancestral Hall. It was said that he was keeping vigil for someone, but as to who that “someone” was, no one seemed to know. However, Tian BuYi was not in the mood at present to ponder over this. The two of them were not on good terms, and as they looked at each other, they did not speak immediately, the atmosphere became a little awkward.

In the end Lin JingYu coughed once and asked in a low voice, “Tian teacher uncle, why are you here at such an early hour?”

Tian BuYi glanced at him before moving his gaze to the darkness of the Founders Ancestral Hall, and said, “I am here looking for someone. What are you doing standing outside the hall so early in the morning?”

Lin JingYu’s expression changed slightly, and a trace of bitter smile seemed to

flit across his face. He glanced at the Founders Ancestral Hall, and did not answer.

Tian BuYi asked lightly, “Is there someone inside, is it sect head senior brother?”

Lin JingYu nodded and said, “Yes, sect head teacher uncle is in the main hall... He ordered me to wait outside, without his call, not a single TongTian Peak disciple is allowed to enter.”

Tian BuYi snorted and asked coldly, “I remember you are still Long Shou Valley branch’s disciple, why did you come over to TongTian Peak here and instead look after the branch for DaoXuan senior brother?”

Lin JingYu turned white, his head hung low and did not speak.

Tian BuYi ignored him, lifted his leg and strided, stepped up the stairs.

Lin JingYu was surprised, hurried forward and said, “Tian teacher uncle, what are you doing?”

Tian BuYi said indifferently, “I came here, naturally is to enter. I am looking to

discuss some things with sect head senior brother.”

Lin JingYu frowned and said, “Tian teacher uncle, sect head teacher uncle said that he did not want to see anyone, without his permission, no one from TongTian Peak...”

“I am not a disciple of TongTian Peak!” Tian BuYi interrupted Lin JingYu coldly.

Lin JingYu stopped, momentarily made speechless by Tian BuYi.

Tian BuYi said nothing more, walked up the stone steps and towards the hall.

Lin JingYu jerked, as if he still wanted to block Tian BuYi but then he stopped, stared at that short and stout figure, his eyes glimmering.

Stepping over the high threshold, a faint smell of sandalwood enveloped, the huge shadows from deep inside the hall effusing out, lightly blocking the bright light from entering Founders Ancestral Hall.

Tian BuYi stood in place for a moment before making his way slowly into the depths of the hall. His footsteps unhurried, his expression slowly changing.

Immense red painted pillars scattered throughout the hall, supporting the

majestic building. The yellow curtains hanging down from the ceiling draped quietly beside the pillars, many of which looked old and worn, looking at it, that fading yellow revealed out a feeling of vicissitudes of life.

It was as if the past was frozen here.

The hall was very quiet, there was almost no sound except for Tian BuYi's footsteps reverberating into the shadows.

Behind the huge altar table in the distance, numerous light specks from the candles burned silently, like many strange and mysterious eyes watching the figure walking in the shadows of the hall.

Turning past the thickest pillar in the hall, walking past the hanging yellow banners, Tian BuYi finally stopped.

There was an open space in front of him, with three rows of praying mats on the ground, each row seven mats, in the middle mat of the first row, a familiar figure sat, unmoving. In front of the mat, a massive altar table stood with a spread of offerings of fruits. In the middle, a big incense pot, strangely, there was only three joss sticks, their smoke rising in slow spirals.

Through the smoke surrounding the table, in the heavy darkness behind the table, the countless spiritual tablets could be vaguely seen, each of which

seemed to have writings, properly written on the tablets in the shadows.

Tian BuYi's expression, slowly became heavy with a trace of respectfulness, facing the ancestors of Qing Yun sect, his eyes first rested for a moment at that once familiar back figure, and then quietly walked up.

Reverend Dao Xuan's body, slightly moved, but did not look back.

Tian BuYi slowly walked to the altar table, looked at the numerous tablets shrouded in the shadows, inhaled deeply, and then from the incense pack next to the incense burner, took out three thin incenses out, carefully lighted them up from candle beside, stepped back, standing three chi before the altar, respectfully held the incenses and bowed three times.

Where Reverend DaoXuan sat, was only six chi from the altar, but that faint light ahead, seemed unable to illuminate where he was. In the dim shadows, he slowly looked up, Tian BuYi's figure, stood back facing him.

In that darkness, suddenly, like the ghost fires of the netherworld, [wu] leapt up, two bright glints instantly shone. And almost at the same time, like an invisible ghost wail sweeping through the hall, all of the incenses and candles, other than Tian BuYi's ones, all brightened up.

Tian BuYi right now had finished his prayers, stepped up and was about to insert the sticks into the burner but his body suddenly stopped, even the hand holding the incense, also paused in the air.

Inside the hall, instantly fell into a dead silence, two figures, one standing one sitting, as if frozen, motionless. The distant yellow curtains, for some reason, as if a breeze was blowing past the hall, gently fluttered a few times, and slowly stopped.

Outside the hall, Lin JingYu was frowning and pondering but suddenly sensing something, abruptly looked up, looked over at the silent and dim hall, a faint surprise on his face.

In the confusion, the hall which had been in slumber, like a strange beast being awoken, coldly opened its eyes.

And for an unknown amount of time, the mysterious ghost fires in Reverend DaoXuan's eyes suddenly disappeared, it appeared and disappeared suddenly. Following which the eyes slowly closed, the malevolent atmosphere immediately also died down, the surrounding fires, gradually lost their brightness, resumed their original faint lights.

The incenses in Tian BuYi's hands continued to burn with its smoke rising in spirals, the three lit thin incenses were faintly discernible in the dark. Just that when the thin sticks trembled, white ash like white cotton fell softly onto Tian BuYi's hand.

Tian BuYi appeared indifferent, glanced coldly at the ashes on the back of his hand, stood silently for a moment, shook his hand gently to get rid of the ash, and then stepped forward, respectfully inserted his three incense sticks in the

incense burner.

The six fragrant incense sticks, burned in the incense burner at the same time, light smoke gently drifted, raising in slow spirals.

Tian BuYi said nothing, bowed three times facing the memorial tablet, paying his respects and then, he turned slowly to face the figure sitting upright on the praying mat.

“Reverend DaoXuan senior brother,” he stared deeply at that man, for some reason, his eyes had surprise, grief and indistinct anguish, said slowly, “We meet again!”

Most of Reverend DaoXuan’s face was shrouded in the darkness and was indistinct. At Tian BuYi’s words however, he seemed to have turned a deaf ear and had no reaction, still sitting quietly.

Tian BuYi stood there and looked at him for short while, said nothing, but his expression turned increasingly heavy. The corner of his mouth twitched, he strided, towards Reverend DaoXuan’s, at a prayer mat less than three chi away and also sat down.

In the hall, silence.

Southern border, ten thousands great mountains, the black-burnt mountain

summit.

Along the journey, the sinister ghostly wails became increasingly unnerving, the Yin wind that came from nowhere was also howling incessantly and felt like knives on the skin. If it wasn't because Ghost Li and Jin PingEr were both highly skilled, just these wailing and bone-chilling winds would have driven them mad.

The surrounding sinister atmosphere intensified, the two of them began to take more precautions. However, when they walked to the valley they could see in the distance the entrance to the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave, and did not encounter any danger or attack. This land full of wild countrysides like a ghost town, was actually deafeningly silent, not only there wasn't any ferocious demon beasts, there was not even a trace of the poisonous insects that were rampant when they entered Ten Thousands Great Mountains.

This sinister area seemed to be unexpectedly the safest place within the inhospitable Ten Thousands Great Mountains...

Ghost Li and Jin PingEr stood above a small hill, surveying into the distance that ancient cave, indistinctly they could see, that stone statue erected outside the entrance.

The two of them had their eyebrows pinched, they had finally arrived, but the serenity brought them greater worry.

Jin PingEr pointed towards the cave and said, “That is the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave. When I pursued that black clothed man to here, I saw it with my own eyes the resurrection of the Beast Deity in this cave.”

Ghost Li nodded slightly, then looked around the cave surroundings, but except for the bottomless dark hole, there was nothing but sheer cliffs and strange savage rocks, and several zhangs high up above the entrance, tightly pressing against the stone walls, there was a thick layer of black cloud, slowly drifting in midair like a water cloud. Looking at that concentrated black colour, it was clear without asking, it must be highly toxic. Looking with a quick glance, there was nowhere an ordinary person could go, it was a dead trap.

Pulling his gaze back, Ghost Li muttered to himself for a moment before saying, “Shall we enter?”

Jin PingEr hesitated slightly for a moment, but in the end she nodded her head and said, “Forget it, we’ve come all the way here, how could we retreat, let’s go!”

Ghost Li glanced at her, and saw Jin PingEr looking a little peculiar and slightly pale. It was clear that she had some apprehensions about that mysterious cave. In fact, she was not alone, even the monkey Xiao Hui on Ghost Li’s shoulder seemed especially quiet, his usual temperament gone.

As if she had felt it, Jin PingEr turned towards Ghost Li and suddenly smiled, revealing beautiful white teeth, and said, “I’m alright, let’s go over!”

Ghost Li nodded, and headed in first. Jin PingEr followed behind, steadily towards that Subdue Devil Ancient Cave.

The crunching sound of the footsteps on hard scorched black rocks were lost in the incessant whistling Yin wind. As they got closer to the ancient cave, the biting cold wind became stronger, the sinister chill in the wind, became colder.

By now, the two of them have discovered that the bone chilling Yin wind blowing across the land originated from that ancient cave.

As they got closer to the cave, the surrounding light seemed to gradually dim, and more and more of the light were blocked by the black cloud above the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave, as if this place did not permit light to enter.

And the old stone statue standing at the cave entrance, facing the depths of the cave, finally became distinct to their eyes.

Although this was not a very long road, but to the two of them it seemed like they had been walking for a long time. When they finally stood at the entrance of the Subdue Devil Ancient Cave, the sky had turned completely dark, and the warm sunlight shining on them had disappeared above the black cloud.

Ghost Li turned slowly to the entrance, stood before the stone statue of a woman's likeness.

The dusky light illuminating her body...

The wind and frost of the last thousands and thousands of years, slowly worn the initial soft and beautiful gloss away, to coarse, in the time that brought great changes to the world, how many eyes, once like this quietly watched your face.

Time moved forward like the torrential water in a long river, never once stopping for anything, the first emotions, the first memory, those countless bits and traces that once deeply engraved in your heart, turned out, in the end it would still be forgotten by humans.

Leaving only the least bit trace of the legendary said, after the long passage of time, carelessly mentioned by the later generations.

The beauty you once had, the former heroics you once did, before time, turned to ashes.

The icy wind blew past the clothes and onto the body, the gazes within these thousands and thousands of years, maybe, in the end it could not be compared

to, a moment of regret!

A soft hand gently pat his shoulder, the monkey Xiao Hui's [zhi zhi] cries, rang in his ears, startled, Ghost Li jerked and took a step back and then snapping alert, he realised he had unintentionally lost himself while gazing at the female statue.

With that thought, Ghost Li's back felt like it was pricked with a needle, his mind astonished. With his current level of skills, his will was resolute, and yet when he faced this LingLong witch stone statue, he had unconsciously fell to the power contained in the stone, that was no small feat.

Ghost Li composed himself, and turned his head to look at Jin PingEr, if it wasn't for Jin PingEr's reminder, he wouldn't know how long he would still be mesmerized. But how did Jin PingEr guard against this statue? Could it be that this lady had some unexpected and hidden strength?

Ghost Li turned to look, and couldn't help but be startled. Even though Jin PingEr was standing beside him and had reached out to pat his shoulder, her body was in the opposite direction, facing the entrance of the cave with her back to the statue, completely ignoring the face of the statue.

Ghost Li frowned and asked, "What are you doing?"

Jin PingEr smiled and said, "This stone statue is very powerful, didn't I tell you before?"

Ghost Li frowned even more, grunted and took a deep breath. At this time the Xiao Hui that was crouching on his shoulder seemed to become impatient, his tail swinging. He jumped off from Ghost Li's shoulder suddenly and jumped onto the statue, and climbing a few times, finally sat down on the head of the stone statue.

Ghost Li's countenance changed, and he said sternly, "Xiao Hui, come here."

The monkey looked at Ghost Li, scratched his head and [zhi zhi] twice, but in the end jumped back on Ghost Li's shoulder.

Jin PingEr stood on the side chuckling, "Why are you scaring the monkey for, he was just playful..."

Jin PingEr trailed off, astonished, staring at Ghost Li's solemn expression, he straightened his clothes and respectfully bowed to the stone statue.

Jin PingEr asked in surprise, "What are you doing now?"

Ghost Li looked indifferent, did not answer, merely gazing deeply at the stone statue and cupped his hands together, before turning and said blandly, "Nothing, let's go in!"

The deep and serene ancient cave, gusts of Yin wind, was just before them.

Jin PingEr followed behind Ghost Li, her gaze on the obviously bored monkey Xiao Hui, and then on Ghost Li and said, "Why did you pay respects to the stone statue?"

Ghost Li paused in his steps, and then continued walking. He said calmly, "The demeanour of the predecessor, although had long disappeared but in the people's hearts, there is always something worthy of respect."

Jin PingEr frowned, not really understanding Ghost Li's riddle and was about to ask further, but Ghost Li had approached close to the entrance.

Jin PingEr caught up quickly, frowning, "Hey, I'm talking to you! Why are you walking so fast? I have not told you yet, when I was here the last time, there was a ferocious spirit. Even though most likely it would be killed by that Beast Deity, but this cave entrance most likely..."

At this, Jin PingEr's voice abruptly died, and at the same time, Ghost Li's footsteps stopped.

The two of them stood several chi away from the entrance of the Subdue

Devil Ancient Cave, staring at the sinister dark cave, a white cold mist slowly emerged, in the biting strong cold Yin wind, it did not showed signs of dissipating.

As they watched that white cold mist gathering bigger and bigger, the volume getting bigger, and finally formed, an enormous figure faintly discernable in the white cold mist. It roared, thundering and blending in with the whistling of the Yin wind, becoming more powerful, like a ferocious celestial deity.

Jin PingEr watched the white cold mist, sighed and shook her head, “Alright, now you see it, there’s a very powerful and bad tempered ferocious spirit!”

, , , ,

Chapter 199 - Merits

The Yin wind blew harder and harder, flapping Ghost Li and Jin PingEr's clothes loudly. They stood at the cave entrance, watching the spirit which was forming into its massive shape.

Eyes as big as bells, abruptly opened in the white mist, faint blood-red glow revealed, the ferocious spirit's colossal body shrouded over, his eyes fell onto the two mortals below him.

"Who is it, dare to come to this place?"

The spirit's voice suddenly rang out, forceful and deafening, the surrounding mountain walls seemed to be trembling.

But after a moment, the fierce spirit seemed to discover something, was startled for a moment, his eyes turned to Jin PingEr who was standing behind Ghost Li, "You again?"

Jin PingEr smiled, her charms boundless, said, "Yes! It's me, we meet again."

The spirit gave an angry howl, the sound echoing far, the deep cave behind it seemed to reverberate his cries, "Why have you come here again, isn't it enough that you have disturbed the goddess the last time?"

Jin PingEr was still contemplating on how to deal with this spirit, from that

day situation, this guardian definitely was not someone easy to deal with. Just that while she was scheming, her face was still smiling.

Jin PingEr was about to speak, suddenly heard Ghost Li said, "Are you the Black Tiger, one of the southern border seven heroes who followed LingLong shaman lady into the Ten Thousand Great Mountains?"

Jin PingEr stunned, turned to look at Ghost Li, saw him looking solemn, watching that spirit.

But almost at the same time Ghost Li asked that question, that spirit was also stunned, as if the name 'Black Tiger', was like a heavy punch hitting deep within him.

Even if it was a metamorphosed evil ghost ferocious spirit, even if it was abandoned by the world, thousands and thousands of years keeping watch solitary, but in the end there was still some memories, hidden deep inside the hearts...

"Who...are you?" The forceful voice of the spirit, suddenly turned hoarse, completely different when he first appeared.

Ghost Li looked at that spirit surrounded by uncanny voice, his eyes flashed with complicated expression, slowly said, "The seven who followed LingLong shaman lady, in the end five returned and established the southern border five tribes which we know today. Leaving two who were real brothers and had been with LingLong shaman lady the longest, Black Tiger and Black Wood, they did not come back. The ancient shaman tribe legend said, the elder brother Black Tiger was loyal and brave, the younger brother Black Wood steadfast and dedicated, I see that you are especially reverence towards this statue, firm and

tenacious for these thousands and thousands of years, not regretting evolving into a ferocious spirit, so I guessed you are Black Tiger, is that right?"

That fierce spirit was silent for a long time, his eyes gazed at Ghost Li, Ghost Li in that stare, did not show any fear, met his eyes squarely.

Slowly, the white mist around the fierce spirit rose, the red colour around his eyes turned darker, even the bone-penetrating chill at the entrance of the cave, seemed to turn colder.

Xiao Hui who was crouching on Ghost Li's shoulder, seemed uneasy, quietly called out twice.

"Who exactly are you, actually know about the shaman tribe past?" The fierce spirit's original angry voice seemed to change, his tone contained an inexplicable chill.

Ghost Li seemed not to feel anything, only looked at the huge shadow, said, "Most of the world probably can't remember things that happened too long ago, just that there will still be legends after all, bit by bit passed down."

He looked at the fierce spirit, word by word said, "The southern border today, the descendants of the shaman tribe, there are still people who remember you!"

The fierce spirit's eyes closed, and for a long time did not opened.

Jin PingEr stood behind, her brows slightly wrinkled up, looked at the fierce spirit, and looked at Ghost Li again, these so-called ancient shaman tribe

LingLong statue legends, she knew nothing of it, but looking at the reaction of the fierce spirit, apparently what Ghost Li said was actually true. All along, she assumed within the Evil Sect, nobody would know more about the various strange things in this Ten Thousand Great Mountain than her, unexpectedly Ghost Li actually had secrets.

She looked at that man's figure, her heart slightly in awe, her eyes instead turned colder.

After a long time, the Yin wind was still blowing coldly. Above their heads, the dark clouds rolled silently, the cold breeze sighing, a desolate scenery.

In this silence, suddenly, that fierce spirit Black Tiger suddenly looked up, lifted his head to the sky and howled, his cries mournful, as if the countless vicissitudes of his past, were all within the cries. When the cries were still reverberating faintly in the distant mountains, he had already turned his head back, the rumbling sounds, as if he was feeling agitated but in the end, still suppressed it.

"Thank you!"

That fierce spirit gazed at Ghost Li for a long time, suddenly slightly dipped his head, and said that.

Ghost Li was expressionless, slowly retreated half a step, closed his eyes and slightly bowed, considered returning the gesture.

The fierce spirit nodded his head, his tone gradually calmed down, said, "I didn't expect that in this world somebody still remember our goddess and us,

he, but when we followed shaman lady deep into this Ten Thousand Great Mountain, when did we once thought we would leave our names in history?"

The eyes of the fierce spirit, slowly turned to outside of the cave, on that LingLong shaman goddess statue, his eyes, also instantly turned gentle, even his voice, seemed lighter, "But coming here, I presume it is not specifically to look for me this not human nor ghost thing and tell me these words right?"

Ghost Li was silent for a moment, said, "Yes, before I came, although I have heard about LingLong shaman lady and the seven of you, but I did not know your current situation, and I did not know you will be here..."

He looked up, looked at the spirit, slowly said, "My reason for coming here, is because of that Beast Deity in this cave."

The spirit enormous figure trembled, even he was afraid of the name.

However, the spirit's eyes did not look at him, instead paused on the statue, said, "Why are you all looking for him?"

Ghost Li said indifferently, "We want to find him, and then kill him."

The spirit abruptly looked back, staring at Ghost Li, slowly said, "Just the two of you?"

Ghost Li slowly nodded, said, "Yes."

The white mist shrouding the fierce spirit suddenly started to spin rapidly,

making his figure blurred, after a long while, he was heard speaking coldly, "That's right, the Beast Deity is indeed in this Subdue Devil ancient cave."

Jin PingEr shook, a hint of delight flashed past her face. Ghost Li however did not show any happy expression, was still looking at the fierce spirit.

That fierce spirit was also looking at him, suddenly said, "I see from your attire, most likely you are not from southern border, should be from Central Plains?"

Ghost Li nodded and said, "Yes."

The spirit pondered for a moment, in the ghostly atmosphere, he seemed to look uncertain, said, "Do you know, why do I guard the cave entrance?"

Ghost Li said, "I do not know."

The spirit said, "Without doubt I do it to protect the goddess statue, but other than that, I am here guarding, firstly is not to allow external forces to resurrect this evildoer, secondly not to allow ignorant people into the cave and meet their deaths, can you understand?"

Ghost Li nodded his head.

The fierce spirit smiled bitterly, said, "But in the end I am still unworthy of the goddess's great trust, was ... was tricked by that bastard, made a serious mistake, the evildoer is resurrected, the world's livings in great misery ..." At the end, his voice gradually quietened down, then, the fierce spirit seemed to compose himself, said again, "I have already given up all hope, thought no one

in the world can stop this evildoer, unexpectedly some time ago, he returned heavily injured, the greatness of Central Plains heroes lends glory to the place, there is actually still a master who is able to injure him, it is really a shock to me."

Ghost Li's eyes slightly twitched, suddenly sneered, said, "You do not have to be too mindful of it, although the beast is defeated but the person who defeated him, might not be better off!"

The fierce spirit was slightly taken aback, did not know what Ghost Li meant but right now he did not bother to get to the bottom, said, "To be able to eliminate the evildoer, naturally it is the best, I have this intention no less than several thousand years, only regret that at that time even though he was not yet fully awake, I too could do nothing to him. You all come from Central Plains, who knows maybe you all will be able to do it. If really succeed..."

The ghostly air around the spirit suddenly disappeared, with glaring eyes, he loudly said, "I thank all of you here on behalf of goddess!"

Having said that, he slowly shifted his body, opening a path, revealing behind him that deep bottomless cave.

Ghost Li glanced into the depths of the cave, turned to look deeply at the spirit, the fierce spirit was also staring at him.

Ghost Li slowly nodded, did not speak, slowly walked in. When he passed by the fierce spirit, Xiao Hui suddenly lifted its head, curiously looked at the spirit, its three eyes blinked continuously.

The spirit suddenly spoke loudly to the back figure of Ghost Li, "There is one more thing, you must be careful. The Beast Deity did not return alone, other than that vicious TaoTie beside him, there is still another evildoer, highly skilled, you must be very careful"

Ghost Li paused, said, "As far as I know, his underlings thirteen demon beasts, have all been annihilated."

The fierce spirit shook his head, "Not one of the thirteen demon beasts, before this, even I have not seen that evildoer before, you must be careful."

Ghost Li slowly nodded, continued down into the cave.

Following which, Jin PingEr also slowly followed up, the two figures and a monkey, slowly descended into the darkness, wavering forward in the depths of the shadows, slowly and finally disappeared.

The spirit's body ghostly air, gradually blurred, but his huge eyes, kept staring at the darkness in the depths of the cave. Suddenly, at that deepest darkness, he suddenly issued a deafening roar, like huge waves toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, even that chilling Yin wind flowed backwards, the extremely hard rock walls rumbled loudly, like the sky was crashing and earth quaking!

In that raging wild roar, the fierce spirit's huge body, slowly submerged into the darkness...

But, when the fierce spirit disappeared at the same time, he did not notice, outside the entrance, behind that statue, a black human figure, it was that

person who instigated the southern border five tribes internal strife, snatched back the five tribes sacred weapons, resulting in the resurrection of the Beast Deity, Black Wood.

The black and loose robe as usual, enveloped his entire body, emanating chill air, but his eyes, was glimmering with complicated feelings, looking at the cave. When the fierce spirit, who was also once his brother, disappeared, he slowly looked away, once again, looked at that LingLong shaman lady's statue.

In the rustling Yin wind, he seemed to be also mumbling, "Goddess..."

At the same time, far from the burnt black mountain summit where the cave was, in that vast black forest, a team of more than a dozen people slowly walked out. The first one, was in white like frost, an extremely beautiful looking lady, in her hand a blue TianYa Celestial Sword, her face like clear frost, her eyes yet contained an inexplicable distress and vicissitudes of life, silently, gazing towards this black-burnt mountain summit...

Central Plains, thirty miles outside HeYang City.

On the main road, after so long, most of the refugees had returned to their southern hometown, the place here was not far from the foot of Qing Yun Hill, yet could still see shabbily attired commoners trudging with difficulty. But during which, there were more small business and hawkers set up, compared to the catastrophe which occurred several months ago, it was very much better.

"Immortal giving pointers, come read your remaining life's fate..." Suddenly, a loud cry rang out, breaking the silence here, it was especially piercing.

"Fortune, career luck in government official, marriage, whereabouts; geomancy, physiognomy, glyphomancy, fortune from feeling the bones, all-knowing, come come come, only five silvers per person! It is already cheap..."

Zhou YiXian holding the 'Immortal Guide' sign bamboo pole, strided over, shouting along the way, not one did not glance over.

Wild Dog Taoist who was behind him did not speak, as usual carrying all the luggage.

Xiao Huan was instead stunned, lifted her head up from the wordless black-cover book which she had been carefully reading during the journey, asked in surprised, "Grandpa, what did you just say, how many silvers per person?"

Zhou YiXian turned, [he he] smiled, Taoist immortal-like demeanour, stretched out five fingers, solemnly said, "Five silvers."

Xiao Huan frowned, said, "But yesterday you called out three silvers! Also, what exactly is with you these days, three days ago we were still fine like in the past, each customer five copper, but you have the nerve, these few days you leapt and jumped rising up, five coppers increasing to one silver, after one day to two silvers, yesterday it became three silvers, today you simply directly ask for five silvers..."

Xiao Huan walked to Zhou YiXian, assessed him carefully up and down, Zhou YiXian felt unnerved by her, stepped back and made a dry cough, said, "You little lass, what are you looking at?"

Xiao Huan ignored him, stretched out her hand and felt his forehead, Zhou

YiXian was startled, stepped back and made way, said, "What are you doing behaving so oddly?"

Xiao Huan [pei] a cry, said, "You are the one behaving oddly! I am checking if you are having a fever, your brains fried muddled!"

Then she turned to Wild Dog Taoist, asked, "Priest, you say, is my grandfather muddleheaded recently?"

Because it was in the day, Wild Dog Taoist was as usual his face wrapped up in cloth, but his two eyes sparkling, extremely bright, at the moment asked a question by Xiao Huan, [he he] laughed twice, and then immediately nodded and said, "He, uh, I mean senior is aged, it is inevitable..."

"Bullshit!"

Zhou YiXian ahead jumped up, furious.

Xiao Huan rolled her eyes at him, said, "Grandpa, what are you so agitated for, I think what Priest said is very reasonable, looking at your behaviour these days, I'm afraid you are really somehow senile."

Zhou YiXian seemed particularly sensitive about 'senile' these three words, he was even more infuriated, angrily said, "What do you two know about, how old are both of you only, how much do you know about the ways of the world, I do all these isn't it to..."

Xiao Huan cut in, "Is it, then tell us, why are you desperately raising the prices?"

Zhou YiXian snorted, waved the bamboo pole, pointed towards the sparsely populated pedestrians, said, "Look at these people, and the people that we encountered along the way, are they all refugees?"

Xiao Huan nodded her head, said, "That's right, everyone is! Including us too."

Zhou YiXian stifled a moment, his old face slightly red, then acted as he did not hear it.

Xiao Huan said, "Since they are refugees, away from their hometowns, I think no one actually wants to read their fortunes, I was thinking if we should lower the price, but grandpa you have the nerve, desperately increasing the price."

Zhou YiXian placed his hands behind, the bamboo pole at his back, sneered, "According to what you say, I'd be wrong, but you look at these days, those that came to read their fortunes, did their numbers increase or decrease?"

Xiao Huan was taken aback for a moment, frowned, Wild Dog Taoist instead interrupted, said, "Speaking of it, it seems that the number of people reading their fortunes really increased!"

Zhou YiXian grunted again, a conceited look on his face, spoke to Xiao Huan, "You with your young age, what do you know? Let me tell you, it goes without saying in a catastrophe, everyone leave their homes, they might not have the intention to read their fortunes. But this time it is very different, the magnitude of this catastrophe, is not seen for ten thousand years, the world in utter misery, everyone defensive, who would know if we will be alive tomorrow? In this unusual situation, with me this immortal showing them the path, wouldn't all rush like ducks?"

Xiao Huan bowed her head and pondered, after a long time, slowly shook her head and sighed, a frustrated look on her face.

Wild Dog Taoist was still confused, could not help but said, "Then why are you still increasing the price?"

Zhou YiXian's eyes rolled, said, "This kind of profound knowledge, how can I teach you!"

Wild Dog Taoist met with a rebuff, stammered and retreated, Xiao Huan sighed and said, "This I understand more or less now."

Wild Dog Taoist and Zhou YiXian were surprised, Zhou YiXian said, "Oh, try explaining it?"

Xiao Huan shrugged her shoulders, lightly said, "Nothing more than you expecting the world to be in a panic, couldn't manage their own lives, let alone cherishing material things? On the contrary, the higher you raise your price, the commoners will instead believe that this person's skills is profound, extraordinary I guessed... these actually I don't believe it all along, thought these kind of small tricks, even an idiot will be able to tell, unexpectedly, unexpectedly there are still so many people believing it."

Zhou YiXian shook his head and said, "You are wrong, Xiao Huan."

Xiao Huan was stunned, said, "What?"

Zhou YiXian said, "You are right at the front but the last sentence, it is not that they can't tell, just that they can't get over it."

Wild Dog Taoist beside him was confused, said, "Can't get over what?"

Zhou YiXian glanced at the people walking haltingly around them, said, "The world's common people, how would they all be foolish, just that at life and death critical juncture, how many refused to believe in themselves, would rather listen to others even if it is just comfort. I give them pointers, the words spoken are mostly about their future and later half of their lives, will be much better than today's situation. With such words, they pay out silvers and also feel at ease."

Xiao Huan suddenly said, "Grandpa, do you really tell from physiognomy, or making wild guesses?"

Zhou YiXian smiled and said, "I am making wild guesses."

Xiao Huan and Wild Dog Taoist looked at each other, unable to speak.

Zhou YiXian looked at the sky, looked at the vast firmament, watching for a long time, he leisurely said, "Such catastrophe, there may be one but not two, otherwise even Heaven will not tolerate it."

He then turned back and smiled and said, "That being the case, the future days of course will be very much better than today's uncertain survival, so I am not considered to be lying! On the contrary, old man me along the way, comforted and advised countless of displaced citizens, we don't know how many with my words, regain a lease of life again, ashes burn once more, such

merit, how can it be achieved by those monks and taoist priests who chant scriptures all day long in the temple?"

He stretched his hand and patted Xiao Huan's head, a celestial look, awe-inspiring righteousness, appearing very much like a great old man's feelings of salvation and bemoaning the state of the universe, pitying the fate of mankind, tragically going down hell by himself to save the world, even though receiving so much shinning white silvers, it was also the cardinal principles of righteousness, unable to save people if he did not collect, after collecting it was even more the vicissitudes of righteousness from the act of boundless compassion and mercy.

He then sighed and said, "Life, is really lonely..."

...

For a moment there was no voices, a blanket of silence.

Zhou YiXian brows wrinkled, looked away from the sky, and looked around.

...

"Hey, you two, why are you walking so fast for ..."

, , , , ,

Chapter 200 - Real Fury

Qing Yun Mountain, TongTian Peak.

In the Crystal Hall, the past solemn and majestic scene, seemed to change on this day, flurry of footsteps were heard inside and outside of the hall incessantly, suppressed yet panicked whispers spread out like water ripples. In the distant, there even seemed to be a racket, this would never be imagined happening at TongTian Peak, and listening to it right now, the racket seemed to be getting louder and approaching towards TongTian Peak.

Crystal Hall was situated at high ground, towering above the sea of clouds, even if passed through the Rainbow Bridge, going up from the stone stairs beside the Jade Pool, it would still be a distance but from the volume of the din, most likely they had went up more than half of the stairs.

The oldest branch TongTian Peak's most senior disciple Xiao YiCai heard the news and rushed over, escorted by a few junior disciples, he strided into Crystal Hall, for some reason on his dashing face, revealed tiredness, not knowing what could made this highly-skilled outstanding talent of Qing Yun sect younger generation spend so much effort and energy.

But although he looked tired, once he entered the great hall, it was still a solemn face, his brows frowning, slightly angry said, "What is it? Isn't there enough trouble yet, who is it so daring, actually making so much noise here!"

At the side, the few young disciples who were keeping guard at the great hall entrance, hurried over. Ever since after the battle with the Beast Deity,

Reverend DaoXuan had been in seclusion, and his temper strangely turned eccentric, all of the affairs in TongTian Peak were mostly handled by this very popular big senior brother, in the younger disciples' eyes, they were very much in awe of him.

But at the moment the din was getting louder, all of the younger disciples instead looked odd, one of them came forward, suppressed his voice and said, "Xiao senior brother, Su teacher uncle from Big Bamboo Valley is here."

Xiao YiCai was nonplussed, asked in surprised, "SuRu Su teacher uncle?"

The group all nodded.

Xiao YiCai said, "What is she doing here, since she is here, why didn't anyone report it and instead create such a racket..."

Before he could finish, the din outside the hall suddenly spiked, as if someone finally lost his patience, a clear whistle was heard from far, like a phoenix cry, carefree and leisurely.

Xiao YiCai's expression changed, hurriedly walked to the door, while speaking, "This is bad, let's go quickly...wait, Cao junior brother, Yu junior brother, both of you immediately go to the backyard, invite the few teacher uncles to come over and persuade Su teacher uncle, we are all juniors, not appropriate to speak, quickly go!"

The two young disciples beside him quickly nodded, turned and ran to the back of the hall.

Xiao YiCai walked with big steps to the entrance, looking about to reach, the clear whistle suddenly became urgent, making sharp noise.

Xiao YiCai's face turned white, his figure in a flash drifted to the entrance, at the same time raised his voice and deeply shouted, "Su teacher uncle, let's talk it out, please don't..."

Before he could finished, he suddenly heard [aiya, aiyo] sounds, Xiao YiCai's body paused and stiffened.

Outside the entrance, under the image of the warm and bright blue sky, [pu tong, pu tong] several human figures fell in from outside, not one could stand upright, each turning non-stopped, after a moment [hua la la] fell together onto the ground.

The Crystal Hall was in an uproar.

"Hei!"

A cold snort, a slim figure was seen, quietly appeared at the entrance, it was SuRu.

This sound, instantly stunned the entire hall, in the huge Crystal Hall, there was not a sound, everyone's stares, all gathered onto that lady who displayed her powers.

Glossy black hair bunned up, inserted with a golden phoenix with red-jade eyes in flight hairpin, three pieces of glass jade bells dangled from the phoenix mouth, gently wavering. Two graceful eyebrows, beautiful yet cold, pure and

even more charming; red lips tightly closed, cheeks like snow, a pair of eyes extremely clear and bright, carried thirty percent of anger. The usual loose attire was gone, right now SuRu in plain white clothes, tightly wrapped her body, less charming but more animated; at the same time her hands was clutching a dark green celestial sword sheath, the sword shining, although the scabbard was covering it, but the layers of sword energy, invisible yet diffusing, made one feel that this sword was spiritual, about to leap out and dance.

Xiao YiCai's eyes twitched a few times, subconsciously felt a chill behind his back.

SuRu face was like frost, her eyes cold, swept over the crowd at the hall, that glimpse, although the face was beautiful but no one dared to meet her gaze.

Xiao YiCai glanced sideways at those younger disciples who were groaning and slowly getting up from the ground, although they had some bruises but all were minor injuries, not to mention tendons or bones, even blood was rare.

This glance, made his heart calmed down much, seemed like although SuRu Su teacher uncle for some reason erupted in fury but in the end still cherished her relationship with the sect and did not hit out hard, if not according to those elders' idle talk about "that woman was really powerful", these junior brothers would have suffered more.

However even though it was so, Xiao YiCai's eyes suddenly turned cold, SuRu's eyes in the end fell on him.

Xiao YiCai made a dry laugh, took a step, cupped his hands together and bowed, while secretly glanced at the dark green sword in her hand, said, "This... Su teacher uncle why are you so free today, come to visit our TongTian Peak."

SuRu coldly looked at Xiao YiCai, coldly snorted, simply ignored Xiao YiCai's questions, showed no intention of returned Xiao YiCai's greeting too, still standing proudly there, her face like frost, coldly said, "Done with the nonsense, go and call DaoXuan out here!"

Once the words were said, a stir immediately went through the TongTian Peak disciples which nearly numbered a hundred in the hall.

Xiao YiCai's countenance also changed, stunned for a long while, said, "Su teacher uncle, has something happened? Teacher has always been in seclusion! Oh right, where is Tian teacher uncle! Why did he not come with you?"

It was better if he did not mention Tian BuYi, once he said it, SuRu's face immediately changed, the expressions on her face changed constantly, thirty percent sorrow, thirty percent anxiety, and even more thirty percent anger and a trace of murderous cold air.

"Roar!"

Suddenly, a low roar like a wild beast cry, came from this Crystal Hall. Everyone was surprised, and then discovered, this sound actually came from that strange dark-green sword in SuRu's hand, SuRu's five fingers were white from clutching the sword, the slender knuckles were even whiter from lack of blood, as if it had sensed something, the sword's bright glow, at the moment, turned brighter, made a sound like a beast roar.

This sword's momentum vigorous and forceful, fiery and unyielding, in SuRu's hands, who seemed gentle and amiable usually, did not seem incompatible at all, instead like a tiger that had grown wings, increasing the murderous aura .

Xiao YiCai subconsciously stepped back, his scalp tingling, but did not know what he had said wrong, and of all people this was his own senior teacher uncle, and her husband Tian BuYi was Qing Yun sect highly esteemed Big Bamboo leader, no matter what this was not someone he could offend easily.

Accordingly, SuRu trespassing Crystal Hall, was already made a big offence, but looking at her, there was no sign of fear, clearly a look that not only wanted to make trouble but wanted to make it into a big one.

In the dark-green sword strange and deep roars, SuRu facing Xiao YiCai, drawled word by word, “Call DaoXuan out, I want to question him properly, what did he do to BuYi exactly?”

Xiao YiCai’s was shocked, suddenly looked up, a instant deafening silence in the hall.

Then at this time, suddenly a flurry of hurried footsteps were heard from the back of the hall, a haggard old voice was heard from afar, “Su junior sister, has something happened to BuYi junior brother? Let’s talk it over, we are all Qing Yun sect, you must not be rash!”

Following that voice, several elders came out in a single file from the back of the hall, the first two, one with black hair, the other in white, at the same time with white beard. However, that haggard voice, belonged to the person with black hair, as for the white beard elder, it was the Fan elder, who was the arbitrator for Qing Yun Hill Seven branches martial arts competition when Zhang Xiao Fan was still there.

These few decades, Qing Yun sect, experienced two great wars, the older generation of elders, either dead or injured, not much of them left.

SuRu looked at the old men who were walking over, frowned, snorted but showed no sign of stepping down. The white bearded old man Fan elder glanced at SuRu, coughed once, his mouth was instead muttering a few words.

Next to him, the black hair elder glanced around, saw several of the disciples in bruises, he frowned, was about to talk to SuRu, SuRu instead coldly said to that Fan elder, "Fan senior brother, are you scolding me quietly?"

Fan elder stared at by her, turned red but immediately shook his head, "No no, Su junior sister, I have with you and Tian junior brother many years of friendship, I can't wait to admire you, how would I scold you?"

The black hair elder turned and glanced at Fan elder, frowned.

Fan elder made a dry laugh, gestured and said, "Yang senior brother, you say, you say ..."

The person with black-hair whom was addressed as Yang senior brother, turned his head around, facing SuRu said, "Su junior sister, alright, cool down first, what is happening exactly, tell the details to me. You are usually a careful and gentle person, why is it today you did...this that even Tian junior brother might not even dare to do it?"

SuRu face was still cold, but that sword beside her seemed to weaken slightly, did not make the deep strange roars, everyone quietly heaved a sigh of relief, when SuRu was holding the sword and standing there, the force of the power, really made the Qing Yun disciples tremble with fear.

SuRu looked at Yang elder, her lips twitched, sneered, "What BuYi dare not do, doesn't mean I will not. I want to see DaoXuan, call him out."

Several elders looked at each other, after a while, Yang elder coughed, said, "Su junior sister, sect head senior brother has been in seclusion for many days, it is really inconvenience for him to appear, why don't you first say what is it that makes you so angry! And, what happened to Tian junior brother, why is he not with you?"

SuRu frowned, her delicate and beautiful face increased with thirty percent of obstination and anger, saying loudly, "Isn't he detained by you all TongTian Peak!"

Once she said those words, Yang elder, Fan elder and everyone on TongTian Peak were shocked, Yang elder quickly said, "Su junior sister, you must not speak carelessly, Tian junior brother is one of Qing Yun seven branches leaders, in our sect, other than Reverend DaoXuan senior brother, he and Zeng ShuChang Zeng senior brother are the most highly regarded, furthermore everyone are fellow disciples, where would there be detained such thing, definitely not!"

SuRu sneered, sternly said, "Don't think that we do not know what happened to DaoXuan, it is precisely because we know the implications, BuYi then took the risk and went up to talk to him. But until present, there is no news, who do I look for if not you all?"

Yang elder was stunned, Fan elder who was standing beside turned to Xiao YiCai said, "Xiao nephew, Big Bamboo Valley leader Tian BuYi, has he visited TongTian Peak recently?"

Xiao YiCai shook his head at a loss, said, "No, disciple has always been responsible for TongTian Peak's affairs, but within these few months, Tian teacher uncle really did not inform us that he was coming to TongTian Peak!"

SuRu glanced at Fan elder, coldly said, "What do think he was coming here for, still would submit invitation for visitation, slowly enjoying his tea while waiting?"

Fan elder turned red, did not speak, Yang elder was already speaking to Xiao YiCai, "Xiao nephew, since so, go immediately to Founders Ancestral Hall and ask sect head senior brother, if it's possible, best if he could come here, speaking before everyone, we will all understand."

Xiao YiCai hesitated for a moment, nodded his head and said, "Yes, I will go now." After speaking, he turned and quickly walked to the back hall, with big steps.

Yang elder watched Xiao YiCai disappeared, turned and smiled and said, "Su junior sister, I know you and your husband have deep affections, couldn't help but your mind in a tangle due to your worries, but this time recklessly forcing your way in TongTian Peak, this is really a little too much!"

SuRu was silent for a moment, lightly said, "Yang senior brother, you are right, if it is true that BuYi is fine, and it is only me over imagining, SuRu will receive Qing Yun sect punishment..."

Yang elder waved his hand, smiled and said, "Look at you, I do not mean that ..."

SuRu suddenly switched the topic, cut in and spoke with curt finality, "But if it is true that something happened to BuYi here, Yang senior brother, " her clear bright eyes glimmered, a glint brushed past, her words reflecting her worries and agitation, without wavering or leaving room for repent, "Then Qing Yun sect for the past two thousand years, would have an unfilial disciple SuRu, for the person that she missed and worries, on this Qing Yun sect TongTian Peak, to the generations of ancestors, to that famous sect head senior brother, demand justice!"

A light shout, she waved her hand like knife, piercing the air, the dark green sword light instantly surged, a sharp sound broke out and followed by a muffled sound, dust flew, everyone only felt the ground below shaking slightly, like an earthquake. Until the dust settled down, they saw the sword in SuRu's hand, together with the sheath struck into the solid sturdy rock floor in the center of the hall, and the surrounding ground, did not have a single trace of crack.

Mysteriously, the dark green sword in the ground, although left SuRu's hand but sword's power was even stronger, like a wild beast tasting blood, again growled.

That Yang elder looked at the sword which was embedded before him and SuRu, smiled bitterly and said, "Su junior sister, this, this has yet to reach that stage isn't it, why did you even bring out the 'Ink Snow' which has been sealed up for hundred over years?"

SuRu sneered, "Yang senior brother, you know it, it was BuYi who wanted me to seal up this Ink Snow, because with him around, sealing it, I too do not give a damn. But if something happened to him, I will use this Ink Snow, to seek guidance from sect head senior brother."

Yang elder shook his head and made a wry smile, said, "You ... I thought you

being married to Tian junior brother for so many years, would have changed your temper long ago...forget it, forget it, anyway I am unable to talk you out, we better go over and sit, wait together for Xiao YiCai to invite sect head senior brother!"

SuRu was expressionless but snorted, and slowly walked to the side with Yang elder and sat down.

In the Crystal Hall, the atmosphere slowly ease down, Yang elder beside lowered his voice, spoke to SuRu, probably still trying to comfort her not to be too rush. The other elders either stood behind Yang elder or also sat down, only Fan elder took his time and walked to the entrance, staying far from SuRu. As for the other younger disciples, their status low, including SuRu's anger, each one standing further and further away.

Among the TongTian Peak elders, Fan elder was the most easy-going, people also found him funny and humorous, although his cultivation inevitably was lacking as compared to the other elders, but among the younger disciples, he was the most popular, whether towards his own disciples or other nephews, were all very close.

At this time everyone saw Fan elder standing aside by himself, many of the younger disciples quietly went over, among them some whom were knocked down by SuRu and also his own disciples.

Fan elder looked at the few disciples, shook his head, a young disciple could not help but asked in a small voice, "Teacher, that, that SuRu teacher uncle why why is she so fierce! Usually she is very gentle, why is it that when she is so fierce she is this powerful?"

Fan elder with his white beard rolled his eyes at the disciple, with a [hei] sound, blew his beard, said, “You fellows only just joined Qing Yun sect, what do you know? When that woman was being shrewish at that time, there was nothing she can’t do!”

The young disciples who were slowly surrounding him, everyone of them absorbed in listening, someone softly exclaimed, “Ah! Really can’t tell! SuRu teacher uncle with such...beauty, must be a reigning beauty at that time?”

Fan elder [hei hei] laughed, secretly glanced at SuRu and Yang elder, they were talking, clearly did not notice the young disciples, and so felt bold and said, “Speaking of it, she was also considered to be the most famous among our generation of female disciples, like...hmm, “ he nodded, suddenly revealed a mysterious smile, whispered, “like that Lu XueQi from Small Bamboo Valley.”

The disciples all around made an [ah] sound, all looked like they comprehended, each nodding, showing that they understood Fan elder’s meaning.

Fan elder, with hundreds responding to a single call, couldn’t help but feel conceited, said, “Actually to speak of it at the beginning, although her skills was not bad but there were others who were stronger, like DaoXuan senior brother and Wan senior brother, they are all rare talents for thousand years, naturally were stronger than her. Just that because she was young, and beautiful, including she has her teacher ZhenYu the great teacher as backing, nobody dared to mess with her, therefore she dared to create trouble everywhere. I still remember, when she was making a mess in Qing Yun sect just by herself, including that almost as fierce as her, the mother tiger ShuiYue...er, stinky boy, why are you hitting me, be well-behaved, I have not finished!”

Fan elder excitedly, continued, "At that time that ShuiYue, oh, why are all of

your expressions like this, ooh, I know, you all don't understand who I am referring to? Hehe, actually it is that Small Bamboo Valley ShuiYue Master, she is SuRu senior sister, at that time with that aggressive temperament, was the same as SuRu, famous in our sect. Hey, stinky boy, why do you keep pulling me, I tell you, I am still your teacher, don't be so rude...eh, where was I?"

"...Oh, I remembered, speaking about ShuiYue. That SuRu at that time although was shrewd, did all kinds of things but ever since she married Big Bamboo Valley Tian BuYi, she seemed to turn into another person, just like what you all see, the few of us elders actually felt very strange, but it is still a good thing in the end! But speaking about that ShuiYue, she did not change the slightest, how fierce she was at that time, she is still that fierce, even the disciples under her, for example that Lu XueQi that you all liked the best, almost identical to her at that time...seeing a ghost!"

Fan elder whipped his body around, angrily said, "Stinky boy, why do you keep pulling me, you have not have a beating for a long time, your skin is feeling itchy is it..."

His words suddenly cut off, mouth slightly ajar, saw the circle of disciples with their heads bowed standing aside, silent and motionless. Outside the door, ShuiYue Master looking indifferent, coldly stood there watching Fan elder, at her side, WenMin was also looking at Fan elder, but it was a look of anger.

Fan elder's forehead instantly was full of sweat, his old face all red, stepped back a few steps, extremely embarrassed, kept forcing a smile.

ShuiYue Master slowly walked in, but she no longer look at Fan elder, instead it was WenMin who was reluctant, hatefully glared at him.

Fan elder among Qing Yun elders, had always been well-known for talking too much, this time being caught on the spot, it was extremely embarrassing.

But SuRu and Yang elder clearly did not know what was happening over here, SuRu saw ShuiYue Master, a trace of surprise on her face, said, "Senior sister, why are you here?"

ShuiYue Master slightly frowned, looked around and said, "I would like to ask you first! You are not at Big Bamboo Valley, why are you here alone, if there is anything, it should be Tian BuYi to come, why are you here?"

SuRu's mouth moved, watching her senior sister, suddenly her heart pained, her eyes turned red.

ShuiYue Master was stunned, a uneasy feeling in her heart, saw Yang elder beside, Yang elder shook his head and forced a smile, but did not know where to start. ShuiYue Master felt slightly anxious, she grew up with SuRu, the depth of their friendship, was definitely not ordinary, like real sisters, this time watching SuRu like something serious had happened, she was even more worried, suddenly she saw the dark-green sword in the ground - Ink Snow, the shock was even more.

When she was asked to ask more, suddenly hurried footsteps from the rear hall sounded, Xiao YiCai like a whirlwind swept in, a panic look rarely seen on his face.

"Something happened, something happened!..."

Everyone was shocked, SuRu like being struck by thunderbolt, felt a [hong]

sound in her mind, spinning her around, that worry which had been eating at her, almost felt like bursting but she felt blackness before her eyes, almost fainted.

ShuiYue Master caught hold of the pale-faced SuRu, turned to Xiao YiCai and shouted, "What is it, say it clearly!"

， ， ， ， ，

Publisher:

Support On Bitcoin :

1EQWkgnjcxRm4jDTLyZ3y4wobUJaZHxVBF

From TooLate

From [Doswap](#)